

**ASSESSMENT OF PREVENTION AND CONTROL OF  
SQUATTERS IN MWANZA CITY, TANZANIA THROUGH  
SOCIAL RESPONSIBILITY APPROACH**

**By**

**Sakina Faru**

**A Thesis Submitted in Fulfilment of the Requirements for the Degree of Doctor  
of Philosophy of Vechta University**

**April, 2018**

**CERTIFICATION**

The undersigned certifies that she has read and hereby recommends for acceptance by the Vechta University thesis titled, “Assessment of Prevention and Control of Squatters in Mwanza City, Tanzania through Social Responsibility Approach,” in fulfilment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, Vechta University.

.....

(Supervisor)

Date: .....

.....

**DECLARATION  
AND  
COPYRIGHT**

I, Sakina Faru, declare that this is my own original work and that it has not been presented and will not be presented to any other University for a similar or any other degree award.

Signature.....

This thesis is copyright material protected under the Berne Convention, the Copyright Act of 1999 and other international and national enactments in that behalf, on intellectual property. It may not be produced by any means, in full or in part, except for short extracts in fair dealings, for research or private study, critical scholarly review or discourse with an acknowledgment, without the written permission of the Director of Postgraduate Studies, on behalf of both the author and the Vechta University.

### ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Many individuals and institutions made this study possible through their material support and assistance. However, it is difficult to make an individual acknowledgement to all those, who in one way or another, facilitated accomplishment of this task. To all of them, I say, ‘thank you very much and remain blessed by the Almighty God.’

In addition, I give my deep thanks and appreciation to Prof. Dr. Corinna Onnen for supervising this work and for her guidance including constructive criticisms during analysis as well as write-up of this thesis that culminated to its successful completion.

I greatly extend my sincere gratitude for assistance offered by all respondents in the study area including Mwanza City officials, municipal officials from departments of Land and Survey, Social Welfare, Planning, Public Relations including local government authority leaders at ward and street levels for their hard work and tolerance during data collection period. I am also grateful to all respondents at both study areas for sharing their experience, which made this study a reality.

Institutionally, my deepest gratitude goes to Saint Augustine University of Tanzania (SAUT) and Vechta University for providing sponsorship for my studies and SAUT for granting study leave during my studies. Sincere thanks go to all co-workers at the Department of Journalism and Mass Communication for willingly accepting to take heavier workloads while I was on my study leave.

In addition, special thanks should go to the Government and Local Government officials, in particular, those of Mwanza City Council for providing permission to conduct the study in their areas. Furthermore, I specifically convey my sincere gratitude to Dr. Charles Saanane for his innumerable pieces of advice and constructive ideas at diverse capacities that facilitated successful completion of this thesis. In pursuit of academics from the earliest phases to this highest academic level, I am greatly indebted to my lovely parents, Dr. and Mrs. Faru, my sibling and relatives for their help at diverse capacities as well as prayers including well wishes for my studies from very early phases of academics to this highest academic level. I only say, “May Almighty God bless all of you.”

While several people assisted me for this study at diverse capacities, I declare that I am personally responsible for the final version of this thesis and its shortcomings.

**DEDICATION**

This thesis is dedicated to my lovely parents, Dr. and Mrs. Faru, Master Hudson, Collins and my sibling.

## LIST OF ACRONYMS

ARIs	Acute Respiratory Infections
CSOs	Civil Society Organizations
°C	Degrees Celsius
DANIDA	Danish International Development Agency (DANIDA)
DAS	District Administrative Secretary
DRC	Democratic Republic of the Congo (formerly Zaire)
FBOs	Faith-Based Organizations
HIV	Human Immunodeficiency Virus
ISEDEO	Ibungilo Settlement Development Organization
ISI	Import Substitution Industrialization
km <sup>2</sup>	kilometre squares
LAC	Latin America and the Caribbean
MDGs	Millennium Development Goals
MDEA	Mkudi Development Association (MDEA)
mm	Millimetre(s)
MWAUWASA	Mwanza Urban Water and Sanitation Authority
NGOs	Non-Governmental Organizations
RAS	Regional Administrative Secretary
SACCOS	Savings and Cooperative Credit Societies
SDP	Sustainable Dar es Salaam Project
TANESCO	Tanzania Electric Supply Company
TB	Tuberculosis mycobacterium
UDASEDA	Ubungo Darajani Community Development Association
UNEGM	United Nations Expert Group Meeting
UNFPA	United Nations Population Fund
UTI	Urinary Tract Infections

## ABSTRACT

This study assessed prevention and control of squatters in Nyamagana as well as Illemela municipalities in Mwanza city, Tanzania through social responsibility approach. The major research question was, “How can social responsibility approach help to prevent and control the increase of squatters in Mwanza City?” Also, sub-research questions guided the study. This study employed both qualitative and quantitative research approaches through a case study strategy. The study involved 390 respondents that included municipal officials, local government leaders at grass root level, local residents, Civil Society Organizations, Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs) and Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs).

Purposive sampling procedure was employed to get Mwanza City Council officials as well as municipal officials and civil society organization leaders. Furthermore, convenience as well as snow ball and simple random sampling procedures were employed to get respondents from squatters. Interviews, questionnaire, focus group discussion and observation yielded primary data, while documentary review provided secondary data for this study. Qualitative data were subjected to content analysis, while statistical analyses were employed for quantitative data that furnished summary presented in form of tables and histograms.

Findings revealed that more females than males migrated to Mwanza city squatter areas. Moreover, results from this study disclosed that more youth aged between 18 and 35 years migrated as well as settled in squatter areas than those 55 and above years old. Results from this study further revealed that respondents for this study had varied education levels with a higher illiteracy level among female respondents than male respondents in the study area. Several pull factors that accounted for people to migrate from rural areas to Mwanza city in squatter settlements were disclosed.

In addition, it was exposed that besides some initiatives already instituted, the government had future plans in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Moreover, individuals and entities are participating minimally in curbing identified deviant behaviours in the study areas. For example, to some extent, an international NGO, Railway Children Africa in collaboration with local partners are dealing with rehabilitation of street children who mostly originate from squatter settlements. By employing Concentric Zone Theory, results from this study led the researcher postulate the following Mwanza city five concentric zones: the Central Business District (CBD); zone of transition between residential and commercial areas; a low-class residential area; a commuter zone; a middle and high-class residential area. Besides, results from this study paved the way for providing salient recommendations.

Among such recommendations, the most important includes that accrued from analysis guided through Conceptual Framework whereby it is suggested that there is need for all persons, as individuals, civil society organizations that include Faith-Based Organizations together with the government machineries (central government, local government authorities including public entities), to control and prevent squatter settlements plus institute a fight to curb prevailing deviant behaviours in Mwanza city areas that include squatter settlements.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

CERTIFICATION.....	i
DECLARATION AND COPYRIGHT.....	ii
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS .....	iii
DEDICATION .....	iv
LIST OF ACRONYMS.....	v
ABSTRACT .....	vi
TABLE OF CONTENTS.....	vii
LIST OF TABLES .....	xviii
LIST OF FIGURES.....	xx
CHAPTER ONE .....	1
THE PROBLEM AND ITS CONTEXT.....	1
1 Introduction .....	1
1.1.1 Genesis of Squatters .....	1
1.1.1 Genesis of Squatters in the World.....	1
1.1.2 Growth of Squatters in Africa .....	10
1.1.3 Genesis of Squatters in Tanzania .....	12
1.1.4 Pattern of Squatters in Mwanza .....	15
1.1.4.1 The Situation of Squatters in Mwanza .....	15
Table 1.1 Population Growth of Mwanza City .....	16
1.1.4.2 Tanzanian Policies and Weaknesses on Squatter Settlements of Mwanza City.....	16
1.2 Statement of the Problem .....	17
1.3 Research Questions .....	19
1.3.1 Main Research Question: How Can Social Responsibility Approach Help to Prevent and Control the Increase of Squatters in Mwanza City?.....	19
1.3.2 Sub-Research Questions:.....	19
1.3.2.1 What are Features and Causes of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City?.....	19
1.3.2.2 How Effective is Social Responsibility Approach Pertinent in Preventing and Controlling Squatter Settlements and Bad Human Behaviours in Such Settlements in Mwanza City?.....	20

1.3.2.3	What are Problems and Challenges in Using Social Responsibility Approach in Preventing and Controlling Increase in Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City? .....	21
1.3.2.4	How Can Social Responsibility Approach be Applied in Preventing and Controlling the Increase in Squatters in Mwanza City?.....	21
1.4	Significance of the Study .....	22
1.5	Scope of the Study.....	22
1.6	Limitations of the Study.....	22
1.7	Definition of Key Terms and Concepts.....	22
1.8	Conceptual Framework .....	25
	Figure 1.1 Conceptual Framework.....	25
1.9	Structure of the Thesis.....	27
	CHAPTER TWO .....	29
	LITERATURE REVIEW.....	29
2	Introduction .....	29
2.1	Neo-Marxist Classic Theories.....	29
2.1.1	Rural-Urban Continuum.....	29
	Figure 2.1 Lee’s Push-Pull Factors .....	32
2.1.2	Concentric Zone Theory.....	33
	Figure 2.2 Concentric Zone Theory .....	34
2.1.3	Anomie Theory .....	35
2.1.4	Social Responsibility Theory .....	36
2.2	Empirical Evidence .....	39
2.2.1	Migration motivations .....	40
2.2.2	Squatter formation.....	40
2.2.3	Effects of Squatters’ Urban Growth.....	41
2.2.4	Social Values and Cultural Values.....	41
2.2.5	Prevention and Control of Squatters .....	41
2.2.5.1	Slum Clearance .....	41
2.2.5.2	Slum Upgrading .....	42
2.2.5.3	Sites and Services Scheme .....	42
2.2.6	The World Context.....	42
2.2.6.1	Studies in Latin America.....	43

2.2.6.2 Studies in Asia.....	44
2.2.6.3 Studies in the Middle East.....	44
2.2.7 African Context.....	45
2.2.7.1 Studies in North and West Africa .....	45
2.2.7.2 Studies in South Africa .....	46
2.2.7.3 Studies in Zimbabwe.....	46
2.2.7.4 Studies in Nigeria.....	47
2.2.7.5 Studies in Kenya .....	47
2.2.8 Tanzanian Context.....	48
2.3 Synthesis and Research Gap .....	51
CHAPTER THREE.....	53
RESEARCH METHODOLOGY.....	53
3 Introduction .....	53
3.1 Research Design.....	53
3.2 Study Area.....	54
3.2.2 Climatic Conditions of Mwanza City.....	54
Figure 3.1 Map of Mwanza City Showing Distribution of Wards.....	55
3.2.3 Organizational Structure of Mwanza City .....	55
Figure 3.2 Organizational Structure of Mwanza City.....	56
3.2.4 Population Growth of Mwanza City .....	57
Table 3.1 Population projections by districts, Mwanza City (2007, 2009 and 2011)	57
3.2.5 Social Services in Mwanza City.....	57
3.2.5.1 Health Services and Education Institutions.....	57
3.2.5.2 Some Disease Patterns .....	58
Table 3.2 Availability of Health Facilities by Ownership and by District, Mwanza Region 2009 .....	58
3.2.5.3 Water Supply.....	58
Figure 3.3 United Republic of Tanzania, Administrative Boundaries.....	59
3.3 Sample and Sample Size .....	60
3.4 Sampling Procedures.....	60
3.5 Data Collection Methods.....	61
3.5.1 Questionnaire .....	61
Table 3.3 Questionnaire Distribution to Studied Wards .....	62

3.5.2	Interviews .....	62
3.5.3	Observation .....	62
3.5.4	Focus Group Discussion (FGD).....	62
3.5.4.1	Preparation .....	63
3.5.4.2	Physical arrangements.....	63
3.5.4.3	Preparation of a Discussion Guide.....	63
3.5.4.4	Conducting the session.....	64
3.5.4.5	Functions of the Facilitator .....	64
3.5.4.6	Functions of the Recorders.....	64
3.5.4.7	Duration.....	65
3.5.4.8	Analysis of Results.....	65
3.5.5	Documentary Review .....	65
3.6	Validity and Reliability .....	66
3.7	Data Analysis Plan .....	68
3.8	Ethical Considerations.....	68
CHAPTER FOUR.....		70
RESULTS I: ANALYSIS OF SOCIAL STRUCTURE .....		70
4	Introduction .....	70
4.1	Respondents' Distribution by Gender .....	70
	Table 4.1 Respondents' distribution by gender.....	71
	Figure 4.1 Respondents' distribution by gender .....	72
4.2	Respondents' Distribution by Age Groups .....	72
	Table 4.2 Respondents' distribution by age group.....	73
	Figure 4.2 Respondents' Distribution by Age Group .....	74
4.3	Respondents' Education Levels .....	74
	Table 4.3 Respondents' Education Levels.....	75
	Figure 4.3 Respondents' Education Levels.....	76
4.4	Religious Affiliations .....	76
	Table 4.4 Respondents' Distribution by Religious Affiliation .....	77
	Figure 4.4 Respondents' Distribution by Religious Affiliation.....	78
4.5	Distribution of Respondents by their Ethnic Origins.....	78
	Table 4.5 Respondents' Distribution by Ethnic Groups (N=195) .....	79
	Figure 4.5 Respondents' Distribution by Ethnic Groups.....	80

Further analysed respondents' demographic profile involved marital status. This is presented in the subsequent sub-section.....	81
4.6 Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status .....	82
Table 4.6 Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status .....	83
Figure 4.6 Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status.....	84
4.7 Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership .....	84
Table 4.7 Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership.....	85
Figure 4.7 Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership .....	85
4.8 Respondents' Employment Status.....	86
Table 4.8 Respondents' Employment Status .....	86
Figure 4.8 Respondents' Employment Status .....	87
4.9 Synthesis.....	87
CHAPTER FIVE.....	89
RESULTS II: FEATURES AND CAUSES OF SQUATTER SETTLEMENTS IN MWANZA CITY .....	89
5 Introduction .....	89
5.1 Features of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City .....	92
5.1.1 Respondents' Definition of the Term Squatter .....	92
Table 5.1 Definition of Squatter According to Respondents (N – 195).....	92
Figure 5.1 Respondents' Definition of Squatter .....	93
5.1.2 Trend Analysis of Rural to Urban Migration Periods.....	93
Table 5.2 Migration Patterns from 1970 to 2010 (N- 195).....	94
Figure 5.2 Migration Patterns from 1970 to 2010.....	95
5.1.3 Households' Source of Energy for Cooking .....	95
Table 5.3 Households' Sources of Energy for Cooking (N- 195).....	96
Figure 5.3 Households' Sources of Energy for Cooking .....	96
5.1.4 Households' Use of Sources of Energy for Lighting .....	97
Table 5.4 Households' Sources of Energy for Lighting (N – 195).....	97
Figure 5.4 Percentage Households' Sources of Energy for Lighting.....	98
5.1.5 Households' Access to Clean and Safe Water .....	98
Table 5.5 Households' Access to Clean and Safe Water (N – 195) .....	99
Figure 5.5 Households' Access to Clean and Safe Water (N – 195).....	99
5.2 Causes of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City .....	100

Table 5.6 Push-Pull factors that accounted for rural-urban migration to Mwanza city	100
Figure 5.6 Push-Pull factors that accounted for rural-urban migration to Mwanza city	101
Table 5.7 Push-pull factors revealed from Kirumba Kabuhoro Ward FGD	104
Table 5.8 Push-pull factors revealed from Isamilo Nyakabungo Ward FGD	105
Table 5.9 Push-pull factors revealed from Igogo Ward FGD	106
Table 5.10 Push-pull factors revealed from Mabatini Ward FGD	107
Table 5.11 Push-pull factors revealed from MECCO Ward FGD	108
5.3 Synthesis	108
CHAPTER SIX	115
RESULTS III: KEY PLAYERS' INITIATIVES IN PREVENTION AND CONTROL OF SQUATTER SETTLEMENTS	115
6 Introduction	115
6.1 Key Players' Initiatives in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements	115
6.1.1 The Role of Media in Dealing with Squatter Settlements	116
6.1.2 Local Government leaders' use of media in their general daily executions	116
6.1.3 The Role of Civil Society in Dealing with Squatter Settlements	118
6.1.3.1 Types and Area(S) Of Concentration by Civil Society Organizations in Dealing with Squatter Problems in Mwanza City	118
6.1.3.2 Local Government Leaders' Interaction with Civil Society Entities	119
6.1.4 Local Government Leaders' Interaction with Business Persons in Dealing with Squatters	120
6.1.5 The Role of Religious Denominations (Organizations/Institutions) in Dealing with Squatter Settlements	121
6.1.6 Contribution of International Organizations in Dealing with Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City	121
6.2 Provided Social Services in Squatter Areas	122
Table 6.1 Provided Social Services to Squatter Areas (N-195)	122
Figure 6.1 Waste Collection Point with Big Bin in one of Squatter areas	123
Figure 6.2 Provided Social Services to Squatter Areas	123
Figure 6.3 Provision of Electricity in Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City	124
Figure 6.4 Footpaths in Squatter Settlements, Mwanza City	124
6.3 People's Life Ways Regarding Provided Social Services	125

Table 6.2 The Manner People’s Life Ways Have Changed Regarding Social Services Provision.....	126
Figure 6.5 The Manner People’s Life Ways Have Changed Regarding Social Services Provision.....	127
6.4 Approaches in Dealing with Bad Behaviours .....	128
6.4.1 Identified Behaviour Patterns.....	128
6.4.2 Unruly Behaviours: Robbery/Burglary .....	129
6.4.3 Unruly Behaviours: Prostitution.....	130
6.4.4 Unruly Behaviours: Drug Abuse and Illicit Alcohol Use .....	131
6.4.5 Law Enforcement in Curbing Prostitution, Burglary/Robbery Drug Abuse and Prostitution .....	131
6.4.6 Street Children.....	132
6.4.7 Person(s)/Group(s) in Dealing with Deviant Behaviours .....	133
6.5 Synthesis.....	133
CHAPTER SEVEN.....	139
RESULTS IV: PROBLEMS AND CHALLENGES IN PREVENTION AS WELL AS CONTROL OF SQUATTER SETTLEMENTS.....	139
7 Introduction .....	139
7.1 Unscrupulous House Construction in Unplanned (Illegal) Areas.....	139
7.2 Provision of Utilities .....	140
7.3 Comments on Provided Social Services.....	141
Table 7.1 Comments on Provided Social Services (N-195) .....	142
Figure 7.1 Comments on Provided Social Services .....	143
7.4 Synthesis.....	144
CHAPTER EIGHT.....	150
RESULTS V: CURRENT INITIATIVES IN DEALING WITH PREVENTION AND CONTROL OF SQUATTER SETTLEMENTS IN MWANZA CITY .....	150
8 Introduction .....	150
8.1 Central Government as well as Local Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements.....	150
Table 8.1 Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements (N-195)...	151
Figure 8.1 Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements .....	151

8.2	Synthesis.....	153
CHAPTER NINE .....		157
DISCUSSION OF RESULTS.....		157
9	Introduction .....	157
9.1	Respondents' Social Characteristics .....	158
9.1.1	Respondents' Distribution by Gender and Age.....	158
9.1.1.1	Respondents' Distribution by Gender .....	158
9.1.1.2	Respondents' Distribution by Age .....	160
9.1.2	Respondents' Education Levels .....	161
9.1.3	Religious Affiliations .....	162
9.1.4	Distribution of Respondents by their Ethnic Origins .....	162
9.1.5	Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status .....	164
9.1.6	Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership .....	164
9.1.7	Employment Status .....	165
9.2	Features and Causes of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City .....	166
9.2.1	Features of Squatter Settlements of Mwanza City .....	166
9.2.2	Causes of Squatter Settlements .....	169
9.3	Key Players' Initiatives in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements .....	172
9.3.1	Key Players in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements.....	172
9.3.1.1	Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements .....	173
Table 9.1 Available Market Spaces for Petty Traders in Nyamagana and Ilemela Districts .....		176
9.3.1.2	The Role of Media in Dealing with Squatter Settlements.....	176
9.3.1.3	The Role of Civil Society in Dealing with Squatter Settlements.....	177
9.3.1.4	Benefits from Government Social Services .....	179
9.3.1.5	Assumption Test.....	180
9.4	Problems and Challenges in Dealing with Squatter Settlements .....	182
9.4.1	Unscrupulous House Construction in Unplanned Areas.....	182
9.4.2	Challenges in Provision of Social Services to Squatter Settlements.....	184
9.4.3	Assumption Test.....	186
9.5	Current initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city .....	187

9.5.1	Identified initiatives in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city.....	187
9.5.2	Assumption Test.....	189
9.6	Discussion Pertaining to Theoretical Stances in Dealing with Squatter Settlements .....	191
9.6.1	Rural-Urban Continuum.....	191
9.6.2	Concentric Zone Theory.....	193
	Figure 9.1 Map of Mwanza City Showing Interpreted Concentric Zones.....	194
9.6.3	Anomie Theory .....	195
9.6.4	Social Responsibility Approach.....	196
9.6.5	Assumption Test.....	200
	CHAPTER TEN.....	202
	SUMMARY OF RESULTS, CONCLUSION AND RECOMMENDATIONS.....	202
10	Introduction .....	202
10.1	Summary of Results .....	204
10.1.1	Respondents' Social Characteristics .....	204
10.1.1.1	Respondents' Distribution by Gender.....	204
10.1.1.2	Respondents' Distribution by Age.....	206
10.1.1.3	Respondents' Education Levels.....	206
10.1.1.4	Religious Affiliations.....	206
10.1.1.5	Distribution of Respondents by their Ethnic Origins.....	207
10.1.1.6	Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status.....	207
10.1.1.7	Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership.....	208
10.1.1.8	Employment Status .....	208
10.1.2	Features and Causes of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City.....	209
10.1.2.1	Features of squatter settlements of Mwanza city.....	209
10.1.2.2	Causes of Squatter Settlements .....	211
10.1.3	Key Players' Initiatives in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements .....	213
10.1.3.1	Key Players in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements.....	214
10.1.3.1.1	Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements.....	214
10.1.3.1.2	Role of Media in Dealing with Squatter Settlements.....	216
10.1.3.1.3	Role of Civil Society in Dealing with Squatter Settlements.....	217
10.1.3.1.4	Benefits from Government Social Services .....	218

10.1.4	Problems and Challenges in Dealing with Squatter Settlements .....	219
10.1.4.1	Unscrupulous House Construction in Unplanned Areas.....	219
10.1.4.2	Challenges in Provision of Social Services to Squatter Settlements.....	221
10.1.5	Current Initiatives in Dealing with Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City .....	223
10.1.6	Theoretical Stances in Dealing with Squatter Settlements .....	227
10.1.6.1	Rural-Urban Continuum.....	227
10.1.6.2	Concentric Zone Theory .....	228
10.1.6.3	Anomie Theory .....	229
10.1.6.4	Social Responsibility Approach.....	230
10.1.6.5	Assumption test.....	232
10.2	Conclusion and Implications from Results .....	233
10.2.1	Respondents' Social Characteristics .....	233
10.2.1.1	Respondents' Distribution by Gender.....	234
10.2.1.2	Respondents' Distribution by Age.....	235
10.2.1.3	Respondents' Education Levels.....	235
10.2.1.4	Respondents' Religious Affiliations .....	235
10.2.1.5	Distribution of Respondents by their Ethnic Origins.....	236
10.2.1.6	Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status.....	236
10.2.1.7	Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership.....	237
10.2.1.8	Employment Status .....	237
10.2.2	Features and Causes of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City.....	238
10.2.2.1	Features of squatter settlements of Mwanza city.....	238
10.2.2.2	Causes of Squatter Settlements .....	240
10.2.3	Key Players' Initiatives in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements .....	243
10.2.3.1	Key Players in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements.....	243
10.2.3.2	Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements.....	243
10.2.3.3	Role of Media in Dealing with Squatter Settlements.....	245
10.2.3.4	Role of Civil Society in Dealing with Squatter Settlements.....	246
10.2.3.5	Benefits from Government Social Services .....	246
10.2.4	Problems and Challenges in Dealing with Squatter Settlements .....	248
10.2.4.1	Unscrupulous house construction in unplanned areas .....	248

10.2.4.2 Challenges in Provision of Social Services to Squatter Settlements.....	250
10.2.5 Current Initiatives in Dealing with Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City .....	251
10.2.6 Theoretical Stances in Dealing with Squatter Settlements .....	255
10.2.6.1 Rural-Urban Continuum.....	255
10.2.6.2 Concentric Zone Theory .....	256
10.2.6.3 Anomie Theory .....	257
10.2.6.4 Social Responsibility Approach.....	259
10.2.6.5 Assumption test.....	261
10.3 Recommendations .....	262
BIBLIOGRAPHY .....	265
APPENDICES.....	272

## LIST OF TABLES

Table 1.1	Population Growth of Mwanza City .....	16
Table 3.1	Population projections by districts, Mwanza City (2007, 2009 and 2011).....	57
Table 3.2	Availability of Health Facilities by Ownership and by District, Mwanza Region 2009 .....	58
Table 3.3	Questionnaire Distribution to Studied Wards .....	62
Table 4.1	Respondents' distribution by gender.....	71
Table 4.2	Respondents' distribution by age group.....	73
Table 4.3	Respondents' Education Levels .....	75
Table 4.4	Respondents' Distribution by Religious Affiliation.....	77
Table 4.5	Respondents' Distribution by Ethnic Groups.....	79
Table 4.6	Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status .....	83
Table 4.7	Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership .....	85
Table 4.8	Respondents' Employment Status.....	86
Table 5.1	Definition of Squatter According to Respondents .....	92
Table 5.2	Migration Patterns from 1970 to 2010 .....	94
Table 5.3	Households' Sources of Energy for Cooking.....	96
Table 5.4	Households' Sources of Energy for Lighting.....	97
Table 5.5	Households' Access to Clean and Safe Water .....	99
Table 5.6	Push-Pull factors that accounted for rural-urban migration to Mwanza city.....	100
Table 5.7	Push-pull factors revealed from Kirumba Kabuhoro Ward FGD .....	104
Table 5.8	Push-pull factors revealed from Isamilo Nyakabungo Ward FGD.....	105
Table 5.9	Push-pull factors revealed from Igogo Ward FGD .....	106
Table 5.10	Push-pull factors revealed from Mabatini Ward FGD .....	107
Table 5.11	Push-pull factors revealed from MECCO Ward FGD .....	108
Table 6.1	Provided Social Services to Squatter Areas (N-195) .....	122
Table 6.2	The Manner People's Life Ways Have Changed Regarding Social Services Provision.....	126

Table 7.1	Comments on Provided Social Services.....	<a href="#">142</a>
Table 8.1	Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements .....	<a href="#">151</a>
Table 9.1	Available Market Spaces for Petty Traders in Nyamagana and Ilemela Districts .....	<a href="#">176</a>

hat gelös

hat gelös

hat gelös

## LISTOF FIGURES

Figure 1.1	Conceptual Framework .....	25
Figure 2.1	Lee’s Push-Pull Factors.....	32
Figure 2.2	Concentric Zone Theory.....	34
Figure 3.1	Map of Mwanza City Showing Distribution of Wards .....	55
Figure 3.2	Organizational Structure of Mwanza City .....	56
Figure 3.3	United Republic of Tanzania, Administrative Boundaries .....	59
Figure 4.1	Respondents’ distribution by gender.....	72
Figure 4.2	Respondents’ Distribution by Age Group.....	74
Figure 4.3	Respondents’ Education Levels .....	76
Figure 4.4	Respondents’ Distribution by Religious Affiliation.....	78
Figure 4.5	Respondents’ Distribution by Ethnic Groups.....	80
Figure 4.6	Respondents’ Distribution by Marital Status .....	84
Figure 4.7	Respondents’ Distribution by House Ownership .....	85
Figure 4.8	Respondents’ Employment Status.....	87
Figure 5.1	Respondents’ Definition of Squatter .....	93
Figure 5.2	Migration Patterns from 1970 to 2010 .....	95
Figure 5.3	Households’ Sources of Energy for Cooking.....	96
Figure 5.4	Percentage Households’ Sources of Energy for Lighting .....	98
Figure 5.5	Households’ Access to Clean and Safe Water (N – 195).....	99
Figure 5.6	Push-Pull factors that accounted for rural-urban migration to Mwanza city.....	101
Figure 6.1	Waste Collection Point with Big Bin in one of Squatter areas .....	123
Figure 6.2	Provided Social Services to Squatter Areas .....	123
Figure 6.3	Provision of Electricity in Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City.....	124
Figure 6.4	Footpaths in Squatter Settlements, Mwanza City .....	124
Figure 6.5	The Manner People’s Life Ways Have Changed Regarding Social Services Provision .....	127
Figure 7.1	Comments on Provided Social Services.....	143
Figure 8.1	Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements .....	151
Figure 9.1	Map of Mwanza City Showing Interpreted Concentric Zones .....	194

hat gelös

hat gelös

hat gelös

## CHAPTER ONE THE PROBLEM AND ITS CONTEXT

### 1 Introduction

The chapter provides a general overview about squatters by tracing the origin of squatters and their development in the world, Africa as well as Tanzania. The following sections are presented: statement of the problem; objectives of the study; and significance of the study. Others include scope of the study; limitations of the study; definition of key terms and concepts; and conceptual framework.

#### 1.1.1 Genesis of Squatters

##### 1.1.1 Genesis of Squatters in the World

Squatter settlement is a term regularly used to include low-quality housing, occupied by the poor, usually on periphery areas of cities in developing countries (see Alsayyad, 1993; Willis, 2009). The term is synonymously used with other terms like ‘shanty town’ and ‘informal settlement’ (Willis, 2009: 402). Many proponents use the terms interchangeably but the terms refer to different kinds of shelter, with distinctions by land occupancy, building type, construction method and legal status (Willis, 2009). Willis (2009: 402) provides a pertinent explanation pertaining to the term and development of squatter settlements by holding that,

“In fact, a squatter settlement is identified by land tenure, with residents occupying land illegally, or as it is known, squatting. This may be through an organized land invasion, but is more often through the gradual accretion of the settlement as people move in over time. In many parts of the Global South, squatters occupy public or communal land as it is often harder to remove them from such locations, rather than privately held terrain. In contrast, shanty towns are formally defined according to the quality of the buildings; shanties are usually flimsy constructions made out of materials such as cardboard, plastic, and corrugated iron. The buildings lack access to services such as water, electricity, and sanitation. Poor housing quality is also implied by the term ‘slum,’ but this term also encompasses rental housing and overcrowded conditions in buildings constructed from more permanent materials.

The more general term ‘informal settlement’ is used to encompass residential areas which may have dubious land tenure, for example, when settlers buy plots of land from landowners who have subdivided and sold their property without legal permission. Informal settlements are also those where housing regulations have not been followed and the houses have been built by the occupants (hence, the terms ‘self-built housing’ or ‘self-help housing’) or informally employed builders. Such settlements usually lack services early in their history due to their informal status, but this may change over time.”

Squatter settlements are known by a variety of local terms. For example, they are called *barriadas* in Peru, *gecekondu* in Turkey (Şenyapılı, 2004), *favelas* in Brazil

(Alsayyad, 1993), while in Egypt, they are known as *Ashwa'iyyat*, 'literally means 'disordered' or 'haphazard (Marwa, 2011) and many others (Willis, 2009: 404).

The UN-HABITAT (2003: 8) defines 'slum' in a general perspective as a wide range of low-income settlements and/or poor human living conditions. The report (*ibid.*) further highlights that such inadequate housing conditions illustrate a diversity of manifestations of poverty as defined in the Programme of Action adopted at the World Summit for Social Development. The slum is said to be "...a heavily populated urban area characterized by substandard housing and squalor" (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 8). Such definition, in a nutshell, provides the following essential characteristics of slums: high densities and low standards of housing (structure and services) and 'squalor' such that the first two features are physical as well as spatial, while the third is social and behavioural (UN-HABITAT, 2003:8). The UN-HABITAT (2003:8-9) report provides a background to the term slum in the manner it was defined and changed over time in the Anglophone world by holding that,

"This spread of associations is typical, not just meant 'a street, alley, court,' situated in a crowded district of a town or city and inhabited by people of a low class or by the very poor; a number of these streets or courts forming a thickly populated neighbourhood or district where the houses and the conditions of life are of a squalid and wretched character... a foul back street of a city, especially one filled with a poor, dirty, degraded and often vicious population; any low neighbourhood or dark retreat – usually in the plural, as Westminster *slums* are haunts for thieves..."

In the 1880s, The Housing Reform Movement in England changed the term slum that once connoted for an uncomfortable phenomenon to a general operational concept as a house unfit for human habitation and delimited slum areas on city maps for planning purposes (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 9). Slum as a term became a common word in the Anglophone world and, for example, it was used in India in order to designate without feature the *bustees*, *chawls* or *cheris* of Mumbai, Delhi or Chennai (UN-HABITAT, 2003:9).

Furthermore, the twentieth century made the word out of date in contexts requiring highly clear-cut and thorough terms like 'tenement house,' 'tenement district' and 'deteriorated neighborhood' due to legislation from the 1890s and 1930s thereby authorized abolition of the so-called slums and used technical as well as legal definitions together with standards for such actions (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 9). In addition, social movement provided new words such as 'neighbourhoods' or 'communities' to qualify the designated slums in order to 'rename' socially stigmatized slum areas (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 9). In due regard, alternative terms were included into the *lingua franca* and served to maintain instead of counteracting negative prejudices against slum dwellers (*ibid.*).

Currently, the term ‘slum’ has many connotations as well as meanings and is forbidden from many highly sensitive, politically correct as well as academically rigorous glossaries (*ibid.*). According to UN-HABITAT (2003:9) report, the term slum can also vary considerably in what it describes in different parts of the world or even in different parts of the same city. In developing countries, if the term ‘slum’ is used, it mostly lacks the derogatory and troublesome or bothersome original connotation such that it simply refers to lower-quality or informal housing (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 9). In another vein, huge, visible tracts of squatter or informal housing have become closely connected with perceptions of poverty, lack of access to basic services and insecurity (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 9). For example, terms like slum, shanty, squatter settlement, informal housing and low-income community are used, to some extent, interchangeably by agencies as well as authorities (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 9). In addition, coverage of settlement types is even highly complex when considering the variety of equivalent words in other languages as well as geographical regions, for example,

“French: *bidonvilles, taudis, habitat précaire, habitat spontané, quartiers irréguliers*; Spanish: *asentamientos irregulares, barrio marginal, barraca* (Barcelona), *conventillos* (Quito), *colonias populares* (Mexico) ... German: *Elendsviertel*; ... Portuguese: *bairros da lata* (Portugal), *quartos do slum, favela, morro, cortiço, comunidade, loteamento* (Brazil) ... American English: ‘hood’ (Los Angeles), ghetto; South Asia: *chawls/chalis* (Ahmedabad, Mumbai), *ahatas* (Kanpur), *katras* (Delhi)... Africa: *umjondolo* (Zulu, Durban), *mabanda* (Kiswahili, Tanzania)... The areas are not necessarily slums, although being informal / illegal, they tend to be the least well served in terms of infrastructure and public services, and they suffer from poor accessibility and high levels of overcrowding. ... Some authorities have attempted to address the damaging effect of prejudice against slums. In Peru and other Latin American countries, in an attempt to do away with the pejorative connotations associated with the word *tugurio*, official terminology has tried to popularize terms such as ‘young settlements’ [(*pueblos juvenes*)’ UN-HABITAT, 2003: 9-10].

In Egypt, the term *aashwa’i* is the only one used officially to indicate deteriorated or underserved urban areas whereby the term means ‘random’ on the basis that areas are unplanned as well as illegally constructed (*ibid.*). Furthermore, in Egypt, government officials and the local press attribute to *aashwa’i* settlements various social problems like crime, drugs and anti-social behaviour (*ibid.*). In Peru and other Latin American countries, in an endeavour to do away with negative connotations associated with the word *tugurio*, official terminology has strived to popularize terms like ‘young settlements’ or *pueblos juvenes* (*ibid.*). Thus, presented terms from various vernacular languages mean or connote the same (squatter or slums) based on geographical contexts around the world.

Furthermore, it is important to know about characteristics of slums. The UN-HABITAT (2003: 11) presents attributes of slums as a result of a review of definitions used by national governments, local governments, statisticians, institutions involved with slums and public perceptions. Attributes of slum include the following: lack of basic services; substandard housing or illegal and inadequate building structures; overcrowding as well as high density; unhealthy living conditions as well as hazardous locations; insecure tenure; irregular or informal settlements; poverty together with social exclusion; and finally, minimum settlement size (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11-12). Further elaboration on features provides a clear understanding to features of slums.

Thus, lack of basic services is a world-wide characteristic of slum definitions that encompass lack of access to sanitation facilities together with lack of safe water at times supplemented by lack or absence of waste collection systems, electricity supply, surface roads including footpaths, street lighting as well as rain water (storm water) drainage (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). Another feature of slums mentioned in the UN-HABITAT report of 2003 is substandard housing or illegal and inadequate building structures as evidenced in many cities whereby they are against city set standards and thus, they include structures of earthen floors, mud-and-wattle walls or straw roofs. Overcrowding and high density are other mentioned features of slums, a pattern associated with a low space per person, high occupancy rates, living together by different family members plus a high number of single-room units (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). It was further reported that many slum dwelling units had five or more persons sharing a single room for cooking, sleeping as well as living (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). Also, slums are prone with unhealthy living conditions together with hazardous locations as a result of lack of basic services exhibited with visible, open sewers, lack of pathways, uncontrolled dumping of wastes, polluted environments and so on (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). It was further revealed that houses are built on risky or hazardous locations or land parcels unsuitable for settlement, for example, floodplains, proximity to industrial plants that are typical of toxic emissions or waste disposal places together with areas of landslip (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). Moreover, it was reported that layout of such slum settlements may be risky due to lack of access ways as well as high densities of dilapidated or debilitated structures (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11).

Other characteristics of slum include insecure tenure, irregular or informal settlements whereby such settlements are considered by city fathers to lack any formal document entitling the occupant or occupancy land or structure as first view evidence of illegality and slum occupation (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). In due regard, such settlements are considered synonymous with slums and that many definitions put much emphasis on both informality of occupation and non-compliance of settlements with desired land-use plans (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). Poverty and social exclusion are other features of slum whereby some consider income or

incapability poverty, with some exceptions, as a central feature of a slum and, it is seen as a cause of slum conditions not an inherent characteristic of a slum (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). It was held that slums create barriers to human as well as social development and that they are areas of social exclusion, often perceived to have high levels of crime and they are prone with other measures of social dislocation whereby some definitions like areas associated with certain vulnerable population groups like recent migrants, internally displaced people or ethnic minorities are provided (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11).

Minimum settlement size is another feature of the slum in their definitions, for example, municipal slum definition of Kolkata requires a minimum of 700 metre squares to be occupied by huts or an Indian census definition requires at least 300 persons or 600 households living in a settlement cluster (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). The UN-HABITAT (2003: 11, 12) shows living conditions in slums by presenting that,

“The experience of ‘living in a slum,’ according to slum dwellers, consists of a combination of these multiple dimensions, not only one. Many slum areas may show only a few of these negative attributes, while the worst may have them all. The ‘worst type of slum household’ is prone to all of the above disadvantages, which, to an extent, also constitute some of the main obstacles that have to be overcome in realizing the right to adequate housing: one that has no services, has poor-quality housing on fragile land, does not have secure tenure, and where the occupants are poor, marginalized and belong to a vulnerable group. Less badly affected households may carry one or more of these burdens.”

An operational definition recommended by a United Nations Expert Group Meeting (UNEGM) held in Nairobi in 2002 for future international usage provides a definition for the term slum (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 13). Thus, slum is defined as an area that combines, to various extents, the following attributes (restricted to physical as well as legal characteristics of the settlement and excludes highly difficult social dimensions): inadequate access to safe water; inadequate access to sanitation as well as other infrastructure; poor structural quality of housing; overcrowding; and insecure residential status (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 13; see also Arimah, 2010: 5-6).

What causes slums? The answer to this question is provided succinctly from the Global Report on Human Settlements by UN-HABITAT (2007). It is held that slums form due to a combination of poverty or low incomes amidst inadequacies in housing provision systems such that poor people are forced to seek for affordable accommodation as well as land that become more and more inadequate (UN-HABITAT, 2007: 17). Figures of urban persons in poverty are normally beyond the range of city governments (local government authorities) and are increased by a

blend of economic stagnation, increasing inequality together with population growth, especially growth through in-migration (UN-HABITAT, 2007: 17).

A remarkable feature of a city is its dynamic change reflected in building and rebuilding associated with succession as well as occupation of different population groups, relocation of entities like industries as well as commerce and accompanied processes of marginalization together with impoverishment (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 17). However, such situation differs markedly between developed countries and developing countries. In developed countries, the cities' dynamic change is controlled by the dire need for higher returns including optimal land use (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 17). Such pattern has led to an inequality in built form whereby slums are located at the lowest socio-economic level (*ibid.*). On the other hand, in developing countries, land use is still partially under control of traditional land uses or is controlled by governments such that slums tend to lie outside the formal market system of exchange as well as income generation instead of specialized formal urban distribution systems (*ibid.*).

There are variations in prevalence of slums across the world. Arimah (2010: 8) reports that Africa records the highest incidence of slums with over 70 percent of people in urban areas live in slums. There are 41 percent and 37 percent of people living in Asia and Latin America as well as the Caribbean (LAC) area, respectively (Arimah, 2010: 8). Such inter-country variation is ostensible, for example, the African continent has a very high incidence of slums in the following countries: Angola, Benin, Chad, Ethiopia, Mauritania, Niger, Rwanda, Sierra Leone, Sudan and Uganda with a record of slum dwellers reported to be between 83 percent and 99 percent (*ibid.*). Next are countries with a high incidence of slums that comprise Botswana, Burundi, Cameroon, Cape Verde, Côte d'Ivoire (Ivory Coast), Gabon, Ghana, Kenya, Nigeria, and Zambia with at least 60 percent of people in urban areas living in slums (*ibid.*). Furthermore, the following countries in Africa were recorded to be with a low incidence of slums: Algeria, Egypt, Libya, Morocco, South Africa and Tunisia (*ibid.*).

It was reckoned that people continue to migrate to urban areas even though there is abject poverty, unemployment, reduced availability of quality housing and the like (Limbumba, 2012). It is reported that there is motivation to migrate to urban areas not only due to need for greater opportunities in urban areas than rural areas but also due to need for survival in face of declining returns from agricultural activities in rural areas (*ibid.*). It has been argued by some proponents that despite such envisaged 'bright lights' of urban areas getting dim, migrants make choices based on their perceptions of what they will earn if they dwell in rural areas compared to income earning opportunities they hope to get when they shift to urban areas (Limbumba, 2012 citing Owusu, 2004; Devas and Rakodi, 1993). In a further extension of views, UN-HABITAT (2002: 9) holds that the following factors are strongly influencing the

pattern of urbanization in the twenty first century in the world: globalization; democratization; new information and communication technology; economic transformation; and socio-cultural changes. In due regard, it is projected that the scale of urban growth, almost a billion new urban residents in 15 years is changing the nature of urban settlements in the world (UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9).

In justifying such new pattern of urbanization, the UN-HABITAT (2002: 9) reports that location including size of urban centres has responded to revolutionizing technology as well as costs for transport and transportation. Nevertheless, recent fast technological advances are facilitating cities, even in poor countries, to grow at relatively low densities further into the nearby countryside (UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9). In due regard, as cities grow in size, metropolitanization becomes a gradually highly dominant mode of urbanization such that it assumes various forms in different places (UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9). Such pattern may translate into a densely settled city area whereby villagers commute to work in the close city but many production including service activities are located in villages (see UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9). Then another pattern ensues whereby intensive agricultural activities continue along interstices between urban settlements (UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9). In due regard, such pattern, on one hand, may refer to a dormant or declining population and economic base of a core city when demographic and economic growth shifts to close secondary cities due to diseconomies of congestion experienced in the core, for example, in some metropolises of Latin America (UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9). On the other hand, it may refer to development of interlinked systems of cities, for example, manufacturing assembly and other activities seek out lower cost locations, like in the Hong Kong/Pearl River Delta region of China (UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9).

In addition, such patterns of urbanization bring about changes in organization of economic activities together with changes in transport and telecommunications as well as expectations of an improved quality of life thereby leading to diverse pressures on the urban built environment (UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9). In full-grown cities of the North, facing little cumulative growth, the need for regeneration and renewal takes priority and changing family as well as social structures creates changing demands for new dwellings and modernizing economic activities in search for a variety of specialized locations, often outside congested city cores (UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9). The scenario in cities of transition economies is different because priority is tackling the legacy of underused central areas, industrial disregard, decaying infrastructure and a deteriorating public housing stock (UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9). For the pattern of cities of developing countries, the need to accommodate quick growth, offer essential infrastructure, deal with rapidly deteriorating physical environments and get better shelter opportunities, especially for the poor, is stated in the UN-HABITAT (2002: 9) to be urgent. Thus, in a nutshell, as stated in the UN-HABITAT (2002: 9) report,

“Whatever patterns of urbanization ensue, activities in urban settlements are linked to those in rural areas, while many people’s lives straddle both urban and rural areas. For instance, urban settlements provide markets for rural produce – food, industrial raw materials, construction materials, fuel etc – as well as many of the services needed by rural populations, such as financial services, farm inputs and health care. On the other hand, the extraction of resources and disposal of urban wastes can adversely affect rural areas both close to and far away from cities.”

A world assessment undertaken by UN-HABITAT (2003; Arimah, 2010; see also UN-HABITAT, 2009a) reported that by 2001, there were 924 million (32 %) of the urban population dwelling in slums and such settlements included squatters (see also Willis, 2009). It was further reported that developing countries accounted for 43 percent of slums (*ibid.*). For example, Patel and colleagues (2012) report that out of such population, 158 million (17%) of the world’s population live in Indian cities. The number of slum population in the world is projected to increase to 2 billion by 2030 if adequate actions are not taken (UN-HABITAT, 2003; Patel *et. al.*, 2012; Willis, 2009). Arimah (2010) further presented that most slum settlements have appalling living as well as environmental conditions that are characterized by the following patterns: inadequate water supply, filthy conditions of environmental sanitation, overcrowded together with dilapidated habitation, hazardous locations, insecure land tenure and socio-economic deprivation. The said settlements are also known for their ambience of fear as well as violence (Bloom *at. el.*, 2008 cited in Arimah, 2010).

In Latin America, the current urban condition is greatly a consequence of twentieth century developments such that in 1900, most Latin Americans lived in the countryside and only three cities had more than half a million inhabitants (Gilbert, 1994: 25 cited in Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011). Furthermore, industrialization together with introduction of capitalist modes of production in rural areas from the 1930s onwards triggered a process of concentrated urbanization such that seventy years later led to preponderance of societies in Latin America crossing the urban threshold (Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011) and there ensued emergence of over forty cities with more than one million inhabitants (Angotti, 1995: 14 cited in Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011).

Even though cities were an important feature of pre-Columbian societies in Latin America, the form as well as character of modern regional urbanization is indebted more to common history including strong cultural roots that were laid upon during almost three hundred years of Iberian rule (Gilbert, 1994: 21 cited in Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011). Colonizers, Spanish and to a much lesser extent, Portuguese, either destroyed or superimposed their own settlements over existing indigenous urban centers and rapidly built a network of new urban centres whereby they imposed their political control and administered territories they colonized (Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011). Goldstein (2004: 6-8 cited in Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011) reported that,

“Colonial cities were planned and constructed to reflect ...the hierarchical racial and political-economic organization of [colonial] society itself. These cities were to be highly ordered, regular, and governable, their streets uniform, and the functions assigned to particular areas of the city (for example, housing, commerce, government) predetermined and restricted to those areas. Thus, emerged the famous grid pattern of the Latin American city, which persists to this day: the ideal of rationality, of order reflected in the physical layout of the city...in symmetrical fashion with a series of straight streets emanating from a central plaza or square endowed with a church, a town hall, a prison, and the *picota*.”

Post-colonial period saw strengthening of efforts to rationalize and order Latin American urban landscapes such that cities were consolidated and, to a certain extent, reorganized as Latin America moved from a quasi-self-sufficient settler economy to gradual integration into the world market as a producer of primary goods (Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011). Consequently, urban development was principally connected to changing commercial functions of cities and towards the latter half of the nineteenth century, large scale international migration also began to play a major role in shaping patterns of urbanization in Latin America (*ibid.*). For, Latin America saw significant human inflows from all over the world and most immigrants were from impoverished areas of Europe, particularly Italy and Spain sought to start afresh in Latin America, a region that was highly viewed as a virgin land of opportunity (*ibid.*). A vivid example was that in Buenos Aires whereby the population grew from just under a quarter of a million in 1869 to over two million in 1914, mainly, a result of migration (*ibid.*).

However, Rodgers and colleagues (2011) remark that such international migratory flow reduced following the First World War, but internal rural to urban migratory flows soon took over as a new and even more consequent source of urban growth. Such pattern was due to implementation of import substitution industrialization (ISI) policies in most of Latin America from the 1930s onwards (*ibid.*). As a result, industrial clustering produced significant labour opportunities in cities, which together with transformation of traditional modes of production in the countryside, stimulated massive population movement from the countryside to urban settlements to the extent that Latin America became demographically urban within less than two generations (*ibid.*). In due regard, urban growth initially tended to be concentrated in one or two cities per country and led to a “primacy” effect such that populations of the said principal urban centres far exceeded those of secondary urban centres (*ibid.*). For example, Rodgers and colleagues (2011) noted that at the end of the eighteenth century, Arequipa, Peru’s second city, was two-thirds the size of Lima.

Urban dominance is a feature of most developing countries, but compared to other regions of the world, Latin America ostensibly stands out with several of its

countries displaying the highest primacy indices in the world (Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011). Currently, Latin America has two of the five largest “mega-cities” worldwide, despite concentrating less than 15 percent of the planet’s urban population (Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011). However, urban growth began to be less concentrated in large cities from the end of the 1970s onwards whereby Latin America witnessed a “broadening of the urban hierarchy” due to propagation of middle-sized cities with more than 50,000 but less than one million inhabitants (Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011). The trend is reported to be partly linked to the end of import substitution industrialization (ISI) policies together with widespread introduction of a new free-market model throughout Latin America that emphasized on deregulation as well as decentralization, including the end of industrial policy and other forms of state-sponsored macro-economic management endeavours (Rodgers *et. al.*, 2011). Rodgers and colleagues (2011) illustrate the aspect by quoting Alejandro Portes and Bryan Roberts (2005: 76) who reported that,

“Traditional urban primacy ...declined almost everywhere, giving rise to the rapid growth of secondary centers and to more complex urban systems whose future evolution remains uncertain. The relative decline of traditional primate cities has been due, among other factors, to their loss of attraction as a magnet for internal or international migrants, lower levels of fertility, and the economic attraction of new growth poles created by local or regional export booms promoted by the new model. Internal migration flows ...responded rapidly to these developments, leading to the growth of secondary cities in Brazil, Chile, and, in particular, along the Mexico-U.S. border.”

Şenyapılı (2004) reported that squatter (*gecekondu*) housing in Turkey has been subject to one of the most impressive transformations in metropolitan settlements during the second half of the twentieth century. Furthermore, in the last 50 years, the squatter or *gecekondu* phenomenon in Turkey has been effective on urban quality of life such that it has ‘floated’ among different spaces of the city, abstract and physical (*ibid.*).

### **1.1.2 Growth of Squatters in Africa**

In Africa, urbanization has a different genesis from the rest of the world. Limbumba (2012) reports that history, cultural diversity and poverty in rural areas as well as urban areas distinguish Africa from other parts of the developing world like Latin America and Asia. In Africa, colonial economic and administrative policies brought about the greatest of all influences on urbanization (*ibid.*). Cities and towns were built to serve economic requirements of colonies, for example, harbour towns were ports for export of cash crops such as sugar, cotton, coffee and groundnuts (Kironde, 1995 cited in Limbumba, 2012). Furthermore, building of infrastructure such as railways was undertaken to cash crop zones and as a result, such towns and settlements along lines of transportation developed into busy towns (Limbumba, 2012). In some countries, new urban areas with mineral deposits developed, for

example, Lubumbashi in Democratic Republic of the Congo and Ndola as well as Kitwe in Zambia (*ibid.*).

Thus, the following question arises, what motivated Africans to move to urban areas? Kironde (1995; see also Limbumba, 2012; UN-HABITAT, 1996: 87) reported that economic activities were major employment centres for many Africans who moved to urban areas. In the 1940s, urbanization was slow and highly controlled by colonial governments such that urban areas were considered to be only for non-natives and those formally employed (Kironde, 1995; Limbumba, 2012). However, from 1950s to 1960s, annual growth rates of some African cities were as high as from 5 percent to 7 percent, implying a doubled increase in population every ten to fifteen years (UN-HABITAT, 1996:87). As cities grew, people gathered to towns for work, administration, education and social services (Limbumba, 2012). People realized that they could 'sell' their labour for urban employment (market) in exchange for wages (UN-HABITAT, 1996:87). But Africans in such towns often lived in poor unsanitary conditions in designated areas, separate from Asians and Europeans (Limbumba, 2012).

In 1950, 14.5 percent of the population in the African continent resided in urban areas and by 2007, the level of urbanization increased to 38.7 percent (Arimah, 2001). Similarly, a notable scenario is that growth in urban population averaged 4.8 percent between 1950 and 1975 (Amirah, 2001). It is argued that a major consequence of such demographic shift is urbanization of poverty whereby the locus or concentration of poverty is moving from rural areas to urban centres (UN-HABITAT, 2003a).

Furthermore, the African continent continued to experience rapid population growth in the first half of the 1970s (UN-HABITAT, 1996:87-88). While cities in the developed world experienced urbanization coupled up with economic growth, many cities as well as towns in Sub-Saharan Africa, Latin America and parts of Asia have had urbanization without economic growth (Limbumba, 2012; see also Mhache and Mauma, 2013). Limbumba (2012) argues that in the first half of the 1970s, Africa's urban population growth exceeded that of Latin America and the Caribbean. Between 1980s and the early 1990s, they were periods of an 'urban crisis' because the increase in population was not matched by supply of basic infrastructure and social services (UN-HABITAT, 1996:89). As a result, the following patterns ensued: decline in formal employment and an increase in 'informal sector' activities; deterioration in services such as roads, waste management and water supply; deterioration in the built environment manifested in proliferation of unplanned settlements; overcrowding; and deterioration of the existing housing stock (UN-HABITAT, 1996). UN-HABITAT (2004) reports that population growth has not abated and currently, it is projected that in the next 25 years, the urban population of

Africa will increase by about 400 million people thereby putting more pressure on cities and services.

Indeed, the rapid pace of urbanization experienced by African countries over the last three decades plays an important role in prevalence of slums (see also Arimah, 2001). Most notably, there are other economic, social, political, institutional and historical factors, whose impacts are unknown with much degree of certainty because they have rarely been the focus of rigorous empirical investigation. Although the UN-HABITAT report on slums provides an excellent job of identifying other factors apart from urbanization that drive formation and expansion of slums in the developed world including Africa and Tanzania, in particular, the precise manner in which factors that affect slums remains to be investigated using further research.

In Africa, slums have been shown to be institutional failures in housing policy, housing finance, public utilities, local governance and secure tenure such that measures to address slums have evolved around such thinking (Arimah, 2001). Over several decades, authorities in African countries have adopted several strategies to tackle the problem of slums as well as informal settlements. Approaches include gentle neglect; options such as forced eviction as well as demolition; resettlement or relocation; slum upgrading programmes; and most recently, adoption of enabling strategies (Arimah, 2001). The approaches have ensued over time and many are still being implemented despite their failure to arrive at lasting solutions to formation as well as explosion of slums including informal settlements.

Marwa (2011: 40) reported that Egypt appeared to have 39.9 percent of its urban population with 11.8 million inhabitants living in slums. Cairo is located on the world map to have 4 out of 30 biggest “mega-slums” in the world that include Imbaba (1.0 million), Ezbet El-Haggana (1.0 million), City of the Dead [(cemeteries) 0.8 million] and Mansheiet Nasser [(0.5 million), Marwa, 2011: 40].

In Sub-Saharan Africa, 62 percent of the urban population resides in slum settlements (Arimah, 2001). Such large concentrations of slums in which people live in inequitable and life-threatening conditions thrust an enormous burden on city authorities that are often short of money and lack the institutional and technical capacity to provide even the most basic of urban services (*ibid.*). Furthermore, UN-HABITAT (2004) projects that the higher the rate of urbanization without economic growth, the higher the slum incidence.

### **1.1.3 Genesis of Squatters in Tanzania**

The genesis of squatters in Tanzania can best be presented based on land tenure system in the limelight of the legal framework from colonial times to-date (independence and post-independence time frames). Currently, the land tenure system in Tanzania is administered through the Land Ordinance of 1923 such that all

land in the country is publicly owned as well as vested in the President (Kironde, 1995). In due regard, persons can get land through a “right of occupancy” granted by the government (*ibid.*). The Ordinance stipulates that land occupied by native communities under customary tenure have a deemed granted right of occupancy (*ibid.*). However, the legal status of customary land tenure, especially at the peripheral (or suburb) urban areas, rights of customary tenure landholders are not quenched out merely upon the declaration of an area as a planning area (*ibid.*). Thus, some legal procedures (together with payment of compensation) have to be instituted so as to put off the rights of such landholders (*ibid.*). In due regard, it means that legally, squatting in urban Tanzania is restricted only to persons occupying government land without permission (*ibid.*).

Urban land has both planned or unplanned areas such that its access is either through formal or informal means (*ibid.*). In the latter land delivery system, land allocation including its transference is through government procedures whereby such land is firstly in government ownership or government control (*ibid.*). Such land is usually planned whereby its legal status is recognized by the government, whereas in the latter case, the informal land delivery system, the allocation or transference of land is outside government procedures (*ibid.*). It is held that land is privately “owned” and the implication is that such land is in control of people either due to earlier occupation or acquisition or customary tenure, institute recognized authority over such land, regardless of laws that may declare all land is publicly owned (*ibid.*). In due regard, such piece of land found in urban areas is normally unplanned (*ibid.*). Kironde (1995: 95) provided that,

“The informal land delivery system would also include access to planned land otherwise than through procedures laid down by the government, for example where government officials sell, or sanction the sale of, planned land in private dealings. It would also include “squatting”, i.e. the occupation of land without the owner’s permission.”

Tanzania is not excluded from problems associated with urbanization confronting other developing countries. In due regard, rapid urbanization has besieged the central government and local government authorities of developing countries as they strive to plan for their development (Mhache and Mauma, 2013). It is argued that for over forty years, the proportional change between population dwelling in rural areas and that living in urban areas has become the most of all-important trends in human settlement development patterns (Mhache and Mauma, 2013). Such pattern occurring in developing countries is characterized by an explosive urban population caused by rural to urban migration and high natural population increase due to improved nutrition and medical care facilities (*ibid.*).

In Tanzania like other countries in the developing world, shelter is a major problem, especially in fast growing urban centers. The impact of urbanization is obvious due

to issues of failure of urban government authorities to control urban growth resulting to unplanned settlements and lack of basic infrastructures in most areas (Komba, 2008). There are challenges that are very big for local government authorities to provide land for development of settlements for the urban poor (*ibid.*). Challenges are coupled up with long procedures including standards that one has to follow when he/she desires to have a house (settlement) in urban areas (*ibid.*).

There are problems in addressing settlement development in Tanzania. The major problem is lack of knowledge of urban poor on procedures and standards one has to follow on acquiring land together with other legal building documents when constructing houses in urban areas (Komba, 2008). In due regard, such patterns make urban poor victims of demolishes and become poor of the poorer in the cities (Komba, 2008). Inherited legal framework and policies on land tenure system in Tanzania, like other independent African countries, have hardly changed thereby letting majority of people live in poverty as well as unplanned areas (Kironde, 1995). Such areas either do not have infrastructure or if it exists, it is poor and the areas lack authentic land titles and people acquire land through informal means as already presented that are unappreciated by government machineries [(local as well as central) see Kironde, 1995].

However, to deal with the situation, African countries including Tanzania embarked on processes to evaluate land policies so as to get appropriate approaches to land tenure system including urban settlement patterns (see Kironde, 1995). But problems are still persistent for urban poor and their access to land together with the whole aspect of urban land markets (see Kironde, 1995).

The following statistics help to illustrate the problem of urbanization in some urban areas in Tanzania: In Dar es Salaam, 70 percent of the urban populations live in squatter areas (Ndezi, 2009); in Tanga, 60 percent of urban populations live in squatter areas; and in Mwanza, 60 percent of the urban populations live in squatter areas (Amani, 2006). Dar es Salaam region (also a city) has a higher population growth than other regions in the country (Mhache and Mauma, 2013). According to population census report (URT, 2013: 3),

“The average rates of growth for the period of 2002 to 2012 range from 5.6 percent recorded in Dar es Salaam region to 0.8 percent recorded in Njombe. Regions dominated by large urban populations recorded the highest growth rates. These are Dar es Salaam (5.6 percent) and Mjini Magharibi (4.2 percent).”

Most industries and socio-economic undertakings are concentrated in Dar es Salaam region plus the fact that most concentration of socio-economic and political activities are in Dar es Salaam city (*ibid.*). In due regard, the city is prone to several multi-dimensional and multi-sectoral problems of urbanization (*ibid.*).

There have been several government initiatives since independence on shelter development in both areas, urban and rural in Tanzania. The Tanzanian government carried out the following initiatives to solve settlements for its people: in 1964, Tanzania Housing Bank was established so as to support workers and farmers to be eligible to borrow funds for housing; from 1970 to 1980s, a World Bank project on Sites and Services was launched in Dar es Salaam city at Sinza; and there have been measures for slum clearance in Hana Nassif and Manzese in Dar es Salaam city (Komba, 2008). All presented programmes aimed at supporting habitable shelters to urban poor and the programmes focused on low-cost houses for low income earners in urban areas (*ibid.*). However, besides such government good will, the targeted group at an end was left out of occupancy due to several reasons (*ibid.*). For example, Sinza site and services remain, to date, a place for high- and middle-income groups such that since 1980s to date, land use patterns have changed completely to commercial cum residential areas (*ibid.*). Therefore, the urban poor are still left out in their appalling residential settlements, slums or squatters.

#### **1.1.4 Pattern of Squatters in Mwanza**

##### **1.1.4.1 The Situation of Squatters in Mwanza**

As stated in the preceding sub-sections, major reasons forcing people to migrate are search for better life in urban areas and employment opportunities (see also Komba, 2008). It is reported that in Mwanza region, lifetime out-migration was 270,142, while lifetime in-migration was 303,646 (Mwanza Regional Profile, 2006 cited in Komba, 2008). It implies that more people moved in Mwanza region than those who moved out the region, giving a net lifetime immigration of 33,504 (Komba, 2008). In Mwanza city, 60 percent of urban populations live in squatter areas (Amani, 2006).

Mwanza city is located in the North-Western part of Tanzania and is one of the major urban centers in the Lake Victoria Zone (Mwanza Regional Profile, 2006 cited in Komba, 2008). The city has experienced rapid spatial population growth in the last three decades expanding just below several hills dotted all over the city (*ibid.*). Mwanza is the second largest city in Tanzania and the city is growing fast (URT, 2013). For instance, the population has grown from 11,399 people in 1948 to 233,013 people in 1988 (Table 1.1). In 2010, it was estimated to be one million (Table 1.1). The annual population growth is 8 percent per year, which is one of the highest rates in the country and well higher than the country's average annual growth rate (see Table 1.1; Komba, 2008: 7).

**Table 1.1 Population Growth of Mwanza City**

YEAR	POPULATION	GROWTH RATE
1948	11,399	0%
1988	223,313	1.3%
2002	469,400	3%
2010	1,000,000 estimated	8%

Source: Mwanza City Profile (2002, see also Komba, 2008: 7).

Spatial growth has been dramatic, increasing from a radius of 5 kilometers from city center to an average of 20 kilometers from city center by 2010 (World Bank report on LVEMP, 2000). The pattern is attributed to in-migration and urbanization process whereby surrounding rural and peri-urban settlements have been incorporated into the city (*ibid.*). Other reasons for the growth include industrialization particularly fish processing industries (*ibid.*). Introduction of fish called Nile perch (*Lates niloticus*) has given employment to over 30,000 people thereby creating remarkable multiplier effects to the city's economy (*ibid.*) but at the same time creating squatter areas. There are also industries like the brewery plants (Tanzania Breweries Limited and Serengeti Breweries Limited), soft drinks plants (for example, Coca Cola plant) and numerous large commercial businesses (Mwanza City Profile, 2002). Mwanza city is a gateway to neighbouring countries of Kenya, Rwanda, Burundi, Uganda and Democratic Republic of the Congo [DRC (formerly Zaire)] and has attracted many business types especially hotel business thereby giving a boost to squatter settlement generation (*ibid.*). Both pull and push factors around Mwanza city have resulted into rural-urban migration, leading to urbanization problems like increase of informal activities, lack of proper sanitary facilities, lack of strategies to refuse collection and bad city's financial as well as human resource for infrastructure services (see also Mwanza Regional Profile, 2006 cited in Komba, 2008). The said problems plus an increase in spontaneous settlements on hilly slopes of Mwanza and squatters on un-surveyed lands around the city have posed major challenges to urban management.

#### **1.1.4.2 Tanzanian Policies and Weaknesses on Squatter Settlements of Mwanza City**

Efforts by Mwanza City Council to cope up with squatters in terms of cadastral surveys, cost-sharing strategies, squatter clearance as well as provision of housing loans to residents have failed to prevent and control the spread of squatters (see Komba, 2008). The city council is to blame for failing to institute a pertinent strategy for proper squatter control as well as resettlement into commensurate settlement patterns (*ibid.*). This study sought to propose social responsibility approach as a new strategy to cope up with squatter problems.

Recall, the impact of urbanization is obvious due to issues of failure of urban government authorities to control urban growth thereby leading to unplanned settlements and lack of basic infrastructures in most areas (see also Komba, 2008). For Mwanza city, the situation has elevated in the last two or so decades because challenges are too immense for city local government authorities to provide land units for development of houses for the urban poor whereby majority are living in slums or squatters. These are coupled up with long procedures and standards that one has to adhere to when he/she wants to have a house in urban areas and majority of the urban poor cannot afford (Komba, 2008). Thus, people are left living in squatter and hazardous areas. For example, in Mwanza city, poor urban dwellers have constructed their houses on top of big granite stones without caring for sanitation facilities such that their excreta are discharged in streets or pavements along with storm water when it rains (Komba, 2008).

Due to challenges posed by propagation of slums, Target 7.d of the Millennium Development Goals (MDGs) sought to significantly improve lives of at least 100 million slum dwellers by the year 2020 (UN-HABITAT, 2003). It was observed that despite the fact that there have been several policy actions in the past, slum-free cities have remained a dream to achieve in the developing world (Patel *et. al.*, 2012). Patel and colleagues (2012) argued that part of the problem is due to lack of analytical tools to conduct slum research as well as evaluation of policies in the context of developing countries. Such stance does not exclude Tanzania, including Mwanza city. Therefore, it is vital to enhance knowledge and generate a holistic understanding about slum formation process in order to develop useful as well as effective slum policies (Amis, 1995; Pugh, 2001; Sietchiping, 2008). In due regard, in addition to substantially improving lives of slum dwellers, concerted efforts should be instituted to provide adequate alternatives to new slum formation by prioritizing slum prevention programmes and proactive planning (UN Millennium Project, 2005). Thus, it calls for many interested parties including the academics to besides tackling other worldly life issues, slums or squatters have to be dealt with appropriately.

## **1.2 Statement of the Problem**

The impact of urbanization is ostensible due to issues of failure of urban government authorities to control urban growth, resulting to unplanned settlements and lack of basic infrastructures in most areas (see Komba, 2008). Such pattern does not preclude Mwanza city in Tanzania. In Mwanza city, the situation has been prominent in the last two or more decades because challenges are highly big for city's local government authorities to provide land units for development of houses for the urban poor whereby majority are living in slums or squatters. As already stated, challenges are tied up with long measures and standards that one has to abide by when he/she desires to have a house in Mwanza city and majority of Mwanza city dwellers are poor and cannot afford (see Komba, 2008). Thus, such people are left living in squatter and hazardous areas. Recall, in Mwanza city, poor urban dwellers have

constructed their houses on top of big granite rocks without caring for sanitation facilities such that their waste materials including excreta are discharged in streets and pavements along with storm water when it rains (see Komba, 2008). The said patterns and many others are improper for human habitation.

In addition, in realization of challenges posed by an increase in slums around the world including Tanzania, Target 7.d of the Millennium Development Goals (MDGs) sought to significantly improve lives of at least 100 million slum world dwellers by the year 2020 (UN-HABITAT, 2003). Given that the target was very modest and hardly made a dent on magnitude of slums in that it addressed only 12 percent of current slum dwellers in developing countries, a revision of the slum target was proposed whereby in addition to substantially improving the lives of slum dwellers, concerted efforts should be made to provide adequate alternatives to new slum formation by instituting priority slum prevention programmes including proactive planning (UN Millennium Project, 2005).

Currently, there is an apparent lack of understanding of forces driving proliferation of slums in developing countries. In this respect, UN-HABITAT (2003: 195 cited in Arimah, 2001) notes that, "... the phenomenon of slums and related problems are generally little understood, and that public interventions more often than not address the symptoms rather than the underlying causes." Thus, it is in recognition of such initiatives plus prevailing ostensible state of affairs for squatters in Mwanza city, this study strived to address the squatter problem through Social Responsibility Approach as a measure to help accountable authorities and other stakeholders prevent as well control proliferation of squatters.

Therefore, this study sought to examine public-private partnership or social responsibility as an alternative strategy to prevent and control the increase in squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Nobody knows reasons for people's tolerance to live in such squalid conditions. Furthermore, nobody knows reasons government efforts to rectify the situation are failing appreciation of factors that underlie formation and proliferation of slums. Arimah (2010: 1) puts it openly that,

"Currently, there is an apparent lack of understanding of the forces driving the proliferation of slums in developing countries. This state of affairs can partly be attributed to the absence of studies that empirically link the prevalence of slums with the possible driving forces at either the national or city level; which, in turn, can be explained by the fact that, until recently, data on the incidence of slums at various levels of spatial resolution were either non-existent or, at best, fragmentary."

### **1.3 Research Questions**

#### **1.3.1 Main Research Question: How Can Social Responsibility Approach Help to Prevent and Control the Increase of Squatters in Mwanza City?**

This study through Social Responsibility Approach sought to examine obligations among inhabitants (the squatters), the local government authorities (Nyamagana Municipal Council as well as Ilemela Municipal Council), the central government and civil society organizations in regard to impacts (negative or positive) upon the environment (squatter environment). Moreover, the study sought to underpin whether or not their actions created equilibrium [benefit(s) to society] or disequilibrium to the environment by being irresponsible or responsible. In due regard, the following assumption was proposed for the main research question:

“Social responsibility approach is useful for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania.”

The researcher tested the assumption by expecting that participation by the central government (public sector) in terms of proper legal framework pertaining to settlements/resettlements in urban areas, Mwanza city council’s concerted efforts in urban planning together with the private sector in regard to community, Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), Faith-Based Organisations (FBOs), Community-Based Organizations (CBOs) as well as business people will help in control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Such desired achievement can be realized through pertinent strategies/action plans, meetings and decision-making for creating commensurate urban settlements thereby controlling and preventing squatters in terms of provision of social services. Social responsibility is an independent variable that can facilitate prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza in linkage with dependent variables mediated by public and private sectors’ joint efforts together with instituting proper strategic plans, action plans, meetings plus ensuring that there would be joint implementation of selected action plans/strategies.

#### **1.3.2 Sub-Research Questions:**

##### **1.3.2.1 What are Features and Causes of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City?**

In answering this question, this study strived to obtain data pertaining to some intrinsic aspects that could help discern from squatter settlers’ understanding of features of squatter settlements together with push-pull factors that enhanced people’s migration from rural areas to squatter areas of Mwanza city. Other aspects sought for included the following: definition of the term squatter; trend analysis of rural to urban migration (migration periods); households’ source of energy for cooking; households’ source of energy for lighting; and households’ access to safe as well as clean water. In order to properly unravel truth to the desired question, it was assumed as follows:

“Features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city are brought about by push factors driving people from rural areas and pull factors attracting people in urban areas.”

In testing the stated assumption, the researcher expected to uncover features as well as causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city together with push and pull factors that enhance or facilitate people’s movement or migration from rural to Mwanza city areas. Such people create an urban sprawl in unplanned settlements, either through room/house rent or construct houses in unplanned settlements.

### **1.3.2.2 How Effective is Social Responsibility Approach Pertinent in Preventing and Controlling Squatter Settlements and Bad Human Behaviours in Such Settlements in Mwanza City?**

In tackling the posited sub-research question, it was assumed that through Social Responsibility, the central government, urban authorities and stakeholders (private sector including individuals, civil society entities and the like) must be at the forefront in executing or discharging their social services delivery. Such partnership will pave the way for effective prevention and control of squatter settlements together with deviant human behavior patterns in Mwanza city. It was envisaged that data will be obtained to discern the manner the mentioned key parties undertake measures that enhance control and limit squatter growth in Mwanza city. The private sector is represented by civil organizations such as Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs), Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), business persons and individuals all were expected to work together with the government (local and central) in dealing with squatter settlements at diverse capacities.

The following assumption was proposed

“Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania.”

The researcher tested the assumption in anticipation that participation of the central government (public sector) in terms of proper legal framework pertaining to settlements/resettlements in urban areas, Mwanza city council’s concerted efforts in urban planning together with the private sector in regard to community, Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), Community-Based Organizations (CBOs) as well as business people will help in control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Such desired achievement can be realized through pertinent strategies/action (pathways) plans, meetings and decision-making for creating commensurate urban settlements thereby controlling and preventing squatters in terms of provision of social services. Social responsibility is an independent variable

that can facilitate prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza in linkage with dependent variables mediated by public and private sectors' joint efforts together with instituting proper strategic plans, action plans, meetings plus ensuring that there would be joint implementation of selected action plans/strategies.

### **1.3.2.3 What are Problems and Challenges in Using Social Responsibility Approach in Preventing and Controlling Increase in Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City?**

This sub-research question sought to uncover problems and challenges in prevention and control of squatter settlements by various key players. Such key players include the central government, local government authorities (studied municipal councils) and the private sector. The question sought to assess problems and challenges through the following limelight: unscrupulous house construction in unplanned (illegal) areas; provision of utilities; and status of provided social services.

Thus, it was assumed that, "There are problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City."

In testing the proposed assumption, the researcher desired to accrue data that ostensibly show that through proper participation of key partners that include the central government, local government authorities and the private sector prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city have limited if not very few manageable challenges and problems to that cause.

### **1.3.2.4 How Can Social Responsibility Approach be Applied in Preventing and Controlling the Increase in Squatters in Mwanza City?**

In responding to the posited sub-research question, the researcher strived to gather data on current initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements facilitated through application of social responsibility approach. The researcher assessed the following: central government as well as local government initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements; civil society organizations' role in prevention and control of squatter settlements; individuals' role in dealing with prevention as well as control of squatter settlements; and the role of media in prevention and control of squatter settlements.

Accordingly, it was assumed as follows:

"Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city."

In testing the formulated assumption, the researcher expected to obtain data that had to uncover the fact that instituted initiatives in applying social responsibility approach are pertinent in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Such sought for data were deemed to be obtained from the following key actors:

central government as well as local government; civil society organizations; individuals; and the media.

#### **1.4 Significance of the Study**

This study will not only help Mwanza City Council to identify solutions to tackle squatter problems but also it will help them to give priorities in funding for urban planning at diverse capacities. Results accrued from the study through the applied Social Responsibility Approach would help to guide other local government authorities in the country and elsewhere to strive to tackle the sprawl of squatters in urban areas. In addition, results from the thesis will be useful to academicians because they will contribute to the body of existing knowledge.

#### **1.5 Scope of the Study**

This study was carried out in Nyamagana and Ilemela Districts in Mwanza City, Tanzania. The study was confined to assess prevention and control of squatters through Social Responsibility Approach.

#### **1.6 Limitations of the Study**

The study encountered several limitations but they were resolved by the researcher. At some instances, respondents were not easy to get due to their activities that included informal businesses such as food vending whereby they were busy selling foods to their customers. Others were employed in small industries like Mwanza Textile Mills (MWATEX). The researcher got respondents at their off-duty routines for those working at MWATEX and those involved in food vending such that they participated when there were no customers. All in all, the researcher got a satisfactory number of participants for the study. In addition, the researcher encountered the problem of getting permission to photograph from the two municipal authorities, Nyamagana and Ilemela plus getting introduction to lower level local government officials, the street chairpersons. Concerned municipal officials had a lot of out of office duties such that it took a long time, almost a year and a half to get the desired permissions to undertake photographs that encompassed the only gap from the thesis. Finally, permission was granted in July, 2017 and the researcher managed to get and track street chairpersons and at some places, was able to be assisted by their alternates. Thus, the researcher managed to get all necessary photographs that sufficed the requirements for this study.

#### **1.7 Definition of Key Terms and Concepts**

**Deviance** means literally to go astray (Nalah and Ishaya, 2013). In sociology, social deviance refers to behaviour patterns or characteristics that violate noteworthy social norms including expectations that are negatively valued by a large number of people (*ibid.*). Deviance encompasses behaviour patterns that breach commonly held norms, values as well as expectations of society such that they depart from conventional norms called deviants (*ibid.*). The word is important for this study as already

submitted that most squatters include persons with deviant behaviours and thus, the study used a high level of cognitive approach to identify such patterns through sociological stance, Anomie Theory.

**Informal settlement:** Based on the UN Habitat (2003) definition, informal settlements include spontaneous, irregular, unplanned, marginal and squatter settlements where a group of housing units has been constructed on land to which occupants have no legal claim or which they occupy illegally. Housing in such areas does not comply with existing urban planning and building regulations (*ibid.*). Such houses are constructed always with materials as well as building standards that are not in line with set criteria of local authority building code and some refer to such settlements as a shanty and can be even along road reserve areas, hazardous areas like flood plains or in close proximity to landfill areas (*ibid.*).

**Push-Pull Theory, posited by Lee (1966)** holds that there are factors, which make people undecided whether or not to migrate. The theory assumes that in order for migration to take place, both positive and negative factors at both places have to be examined (Lee, 1966). Also, Lee (1966) argued that on reaching the area of destination, migrants face many problems that include unemployment, assimilation and rejection. When positives increase to destination, migration ensues (see Lee, 1966). This study utilized the formulated theory to assess factors that led to drive people away from rural areas as push factors and pull factors that attracted people to move as well as stay (as increased positive factors) in squatter settlements of Mwanza city.

**Slum:** This term is also used interchangeably as an informal settlement and also includes rental housing and overcrowded conditions in buildings constructed from highly permanent materials (Willis, 2009). In addition, poor housing quality is also implied by the term 'slum' (*ibid.*). Moreover, the word slum or its equivalent always refers to inner-city residential areas built several decades before according to then existing urban planning, zoning standards, construction principles, but through time progressively became physically worn out as well as overcrowded to an extent they became almost exclusive residential zones for the lowest income population groups (UN-NABITAT, 2003).

**Squatter Area:** An area, which has developed without legal permission from the concerned authorities (*ibid.*). Also, the area can be sometimes called a slum or an informal settlement as already submitted in this section and it is shown the manner people use the terms squatter area, informal settlement or squatter interchangeably.

**Squatter:** A person who settles on public land without legal permission (Burton, 2005; Fabrizio, 2006; Francesco, 2002). The provided definition also helps to situate

the reader not only to base on pieces of land but also to persons settled in such pieces of land known as squatter settlements.

**Urban:** An urban area is an area that significantly has a higher population density than surrounding areas (see Panu, 2010). The urban area is a place in which agricultural activities no longer dominate the economy and there is a transformation process from rural to urban area (*ibid.*). Thus, the urban area can be cities, towns or an urban sprawl, but not in rural area like villages as well as hamlets and it is the area that changes over time in multi-dimensions (*ibid.*). In due regard, this study was carried out in urban areas, Mwanza squatter settlements found in Mwanza city.

**Urbanization** refers to the process of further population increase in urban areas (see also Limbumba, 2010). For example, in Tanzania, such process was scaled down by colonial government in 1940s but after independence, to date, like other African cities, annual growth rates have been recorded to be high between 5 to 7 percent (*ibid.*). As long as cities grew, people flocked for employment, education, social services and many other needs or wants (*ibid.*). With such unchecked urban growth, many people inhabit unplanned areas or informal settlements or squatter areas. Thus, in Tanzania, a similar trend has been recorded whereby urban population increased from independence, to date, thereby creating many cities from one to five, namely, Dar es Salaam, Mwanza, Mbeya, Tanga and Arusha.

For the terms **urban sociology**, an old definition seems suitable because of many dichotomous and disagreements among sociologists from two generations and possibly to the next. Thus, Bergel (1955: 1) disclosed that urban sociology deals with the impact of city life on the following aspects: "...social actions, social relationships, social institutions, and the types of civilizations derived from and based on urban modes of living..." Bergel (1955: 1) held that urban sociology is a special study of influence of environment on humans. This study was guided by urban sociology theories formulated from Neo-classic Marxist stances. They were deemed extremely helpful in data analysis for this study.

**Rural-Urban Continuum:** Several sociologists used the concept of rural-urban continuum to stress the idea that there are no sharp distinct points to be established in regard to extent or magnitude of rural-urban differences. For example, Robert Redfield (1941) gave the concept of rural-urban continuum on the basis of his study of Mexican peasants of Tepoztlain and argued that the speedy process of urbanization through establishment of industries, urban characters and amenities reduced distinctions between villages and cities.

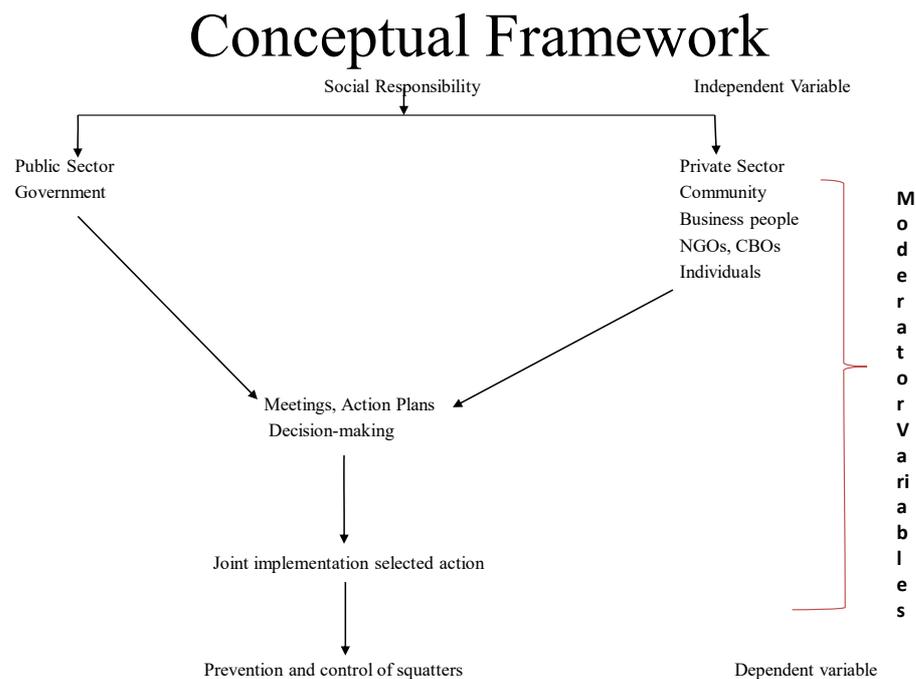
Moreover, it was supposed that both village and city are elements of the same civilization neither rural urban dichotomy nor continuum is meaningful (Manjunatha and Kote, 2012). Although both village and town formed part of the same civilization

characterized by institution of kinship and caste system in pre-British India, for example, there were definite specific institutional forms including organizational ways distinguishing socio-cultural life in towns from that in village (*ibid.*). Thus, Rural-Urban continuum as a theoretical stance was employed by this study to unravel whether or not squatter settlements of Mwanza city portrayed a similar posited trend of rural-urban continuum associated with negative and/or positive impacts.

### 1.8 Conceptual Framework

Social responsibility approach is concerned with linkages between public sector and private sector groups and activities they undertake. According to the UN HABITAT (2006) report, social responsibility interventions include concerted efforts by all stakeholders such as community leaders, business people, religious organizations, individuals, academicians and so on. Diagrammatically, the linkages are shown in Figure 1.

**Figure 1.1 Conceptual Framework**



The Hutchins Commission, whose official name was the Commission on Freedom of the Press, was formed during the Second World War when Henry Luce, the then publisher of Time and Life magazines, asked Robert Hutchins, the then President of the University of Chicago to engage a commission so as to inquire into proper function of the media in a modern democracy (see Nerone, 1995: 80).

In 1947, after working for four years, the Commission concluded that the press played an important role in development as well as stability of modern society such

that it was imperative that a commitment of social responsibility had to be imposed on mass media (Nerone, 1995: 80-81). By then, the University of Chicago had developed a strong school of thought in sociology whereby many classical sociologists propounded many paradigms, for example, Robert Merton as well as Burgess and Park, to mention a few (Nerone, 1995: 80-91). Thus, Social Responsibility emanated from the University of Chicago propounded by sociologists under Hutchins (*ibid.*). According to Social Responsibility Theory, the press has a moral obligation to consider overall needs of society when making journalistic decisions in order to produce the greatest good (*ibid.*). Though there had been journalism "codes of ethics" for many decades, the Commission's report was considered a landmark by some scholars who believed it was a pivotal reassertion of modern media role in a democratic society (*ibid.*).

Social-responsibility theory was born when large as well as powerful publishers were unpopular with the public and the public had a high degree of suspicions about motivations and objectives of the press (Nerone, 1995: 80-81). The press had flourished into an unwieldy and powerful body such that criticism of the Fourth Estate was widespread (*ibid.*). Critics argued that the media had monopolistic tendencies whereby corporate owners were unconcerned with rights or interests of those unlike themselves and that commercialization produced a debased culture as well as dangerously selfish politics (*ibid.*).

The idea of social responsibility of the media is derived from the social responsibility theory of press, which arose as a result of the media ability to influence people's beliefs, ideas and behaviour on very important issues (*ibid.*). That came about as a result of the view that since the press (newspapers) was influential, it had social responsibilities (*ibid.*). Hence, every media ought to deliver accurate and unbiased news to meet the divergent needs of the heterogeneous public, without confining their role to being the "mouthpiece of those with special interests or political agendas" (*ibid.*).

The impact of the media in society is tremendous (Herdís, 2003). Social responsibility of the media is fostered when the media engage in what is referred to as "committed journalism" whereby priority is placed on values like "democracy, free choice, openness, morality and serving the common good" thereby informing the public "about political, social, economic, and cultural affairs" (*ibid.*). Committed journalism would best manifest when the media undertake to be the public watch dog (see also Lusgarten and Debrix, 2005:365). In regard to human rights promotion or protection, concepts of media social responsibility, "committed journalism" or "watchdog journalism" (*ibid.*) are probably relevant fragmentations of the role expected of the media as long as the media make genuine efforts in staying to their professional codes of ethics. Nevertheless, all are useful to the media in averting human rights abuses as well as revealing the abuses, especially through investigative

journalism (*ibid.*). It is the role of investigative journalists to search and uncover truth such that exposure of truth is in harmony with the public interest, which, when effectively carried out, may be productive in bringing about change (see also Hugo de Burgh, 2000). Thus, roles performed by the media in society (Wasserman, 2009) are instrumental to promotion of human rights.

It was assumed that through Social Responsibility, an independent variable at the top should be priority by urban authorities and stakeholders (Figure 1.1) in executing or discharging their social services delivery. The dependent variables include prevention of squatters and control of squatters such that through moderator variables (public in form of central government and local government authorities or Nyamagana as well as Ilemela Municipal Councils) in the limelight of social responsibility, they will undertake measures that will enhance control and limit squatter growth in Mwanza city (See Figure 1.1). Such measures or actions are moderator variables (Figure 1.1). Also, the private sector represented by civil organizations such as Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs), Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), business persons and individuals play together with the government (local and central) as moderator variables in dealing with squatter settlements at various capacities (see Figure 1.1).

The social responsibility framework operates on the following five principles: first, it is people-centered whereby it aims at involving people whom it is designed for and builds on their strength for solving their societal problems (see also Nerone, 1995). Second, partnership such that social responsibility takes all stakeholders on board, for example, academicians, business people, activists, government agencies, Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs) and individuals as well as acknowledge for their support and influence towards helping urban population to access assets, social, finance including physical capital in order to bring about positive change on their life ways (*ibid.*). Third, dynamic whereby it seeks to support positive changes by steering away from negative changes; and fourth, strategies such that it identifies at pertinent alleys people can adopt so as to achieve their desired livelihood outcomes (*ibid.*). Finally, vulnerability whereby social responsibility aims at cautioning partners against elements that might sabotage their efforts like shocks, disasters, gender inequality in relation to land ownership including human rights and power dynamics in strive for their livelihoods (*ibid.*).

## **1.9 Structure of the Thesis**

This thesis is organized in ten chapters. Chapter one presents the problem and its context, while chapter two provides literature review related to the study. Chapter three is about research methodology. Chapter four gives analysis of social structure. Chapter five provides results on features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Chapter six presents results on key players' initiatives in prevention

and control of squatter settlements. Chapter seven is about results on problems and challenges in prevention and control of squatter settlements. Chapter eight presents results on current initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Chapter nine is about discussion of results. Finally, chapter ten presents summary of results, conclusion and recommendations. Literature review is presented next as chapter two.

## CHAPTER TWO LITERATURE REVIEW

### 2 Introduction

The chapter furnishes literature review related to the study. The chapter has the following sections: Neo-Marxist Classic Theories; Empirical Evidence; and Synthesis and Research Gap.

#### 2.1 Neo-Marxist Classic Theories

This section presents four Neo-Marxist classic theories borrowed from Sociology because they were deemed fit to be applied for this study. Selected theories for this study were foreseen pertinent to apply due to the fact that they helped to analyse human behaviour patterns in the studied squatters and identify aspects like push-pull factors for their migration to the studied areas and contiguous areas based on sociological stances. They were envisioned to be the best interconnected analytical pathways or the best interconnected formulations for the same cause. Moreover, such multiple theoretical underpinnings in this study's analyses were felt appropriate because they were singled out to be helpful in easy identification of human behaviours in squatter settlements. The theories include the following: Rural Urban Continuum, Concentric Zone Theory, Anomie Theory and Social Responsibility Theory. Classical theories of Urban Sociology embrace works of European sociologists such as Karl Marx, Ferdinand Tönnies, Georg Simmel, Max Weber and American sociologists, for example, Park Burgess, Louis Wirth and Robert Redfield.

##### 2.1.1 Rural-Urban Continuum

Normally, rural-urban continuum proposes a linear depiction of contrasting nature of social relationships characteristic of rural and urban settlements. Rural-urban continuum was a popular conceptual tool to classify different types of communities and transition between them. It arose from early twentieth century sociology in attempts to comprehend social changes resulting upon rapid urbanization.

An important aspect is to consider some perspectives developed from sociological inquiry in pursuit of developing Rural-Urban theoretical stances. For example, in the late nineteenth century, Ferdinand Tönnies (1955) used 'community,' a sociological term, which has a long history in comprehension of societal dynamism between urban and rural communities. In his (Tönnies, 1955) book 'Community and Association (*Gemeinschaft und Gesellschaft*),' Tönnies drew a demarcation *Gemeinschaft* or community and *Gesellschaft* normally translated as society. According to him (*ibid.*), the former denoted relationships characterized by their closeness and durability whereby status was recognized rather than achieved. On the other hand, the latter (*Gesellschaft*) was interpreted to give rise to relationships that were impersonal, short-lived and contractual such that status was based on merit and thus, it was achieved (*ibid.*). Tönnies (1955) was primarily interested in loss breakdown of traditional society. For Tönnies (1955), *Gemeinschaft* was a symbol of

the past and a better age (see also Manjunatha and Kote, 2012). Although Tönnies (1955: 265-266) was mostly concerned with change over time and also made a point of locating *Gemeinschaft* in village including small town life as well as *Gesellschaft* in cities and metropolitan areas, such spatial dimension of the concept of community has remained a source of contention ever since.

Furthermore, in 1963, a book *Community (Gemeinschaft) and Society (Gesellschaft)* by Tönnies on the impact of market economy on traditional forms of social association, implications of urbanization and development of the state for ways of social life including means of social cohesion in an individualized society is explained. The distinction drawn by Tönnies (1963) between the two forms of human association, namely, *Gemeinschaft* (community) and *Gesellschaft* (association) has become the basis for a succession of typologies of which the best known are patterns formulated by proponents like folk-urban typology drawn by Redfield's (1941) book, "The Folk Culture of Yucatan" and an article "Urbanism as a Way of Life" by Wirth (1938). It was conceded that life in the countryside occurred in small, geographically isolated settlements that were socially homogeneous, with high levels of mutual communication and social solidarity, which changed very slowly. Urban communities were attributed the opposite characteristics, for example, Louis Wirth (1938) of the Chicago School, in his highly articulated essay 'Urbanism as a Way of Life' argued that cities were distinctive because they were large, dense as well as heterogeneous such that a pattern like that produced transient, disorderly, anonymous and formal associational relationships of urban living.

In another vein, some sociologists used the concept of rural-urban continuum to stress the idea that there are no sharp breaking points to be established in extent or magnitude of rural-urban differences. For example, Robert Redfield (1941) gave the concept of rural-urban continuum on the basis of his study of Mexican peasants of Tepoztlain. Redfield (1941) argued that the rapid process of urbanization through establishment of industries, urban characters and amenities decreased differences between villages and cities.

In addition, regarding rural and urban communities, it was believed that both village and city are elements of the same civilization whereby neither rural urban dichotomy nor continuum is meaningful (Manjunatha and Kote, 2012). Although both village and town formed part of the same civilization characterized by institution of kinship and caste system in pre-British India, there were certain specific institutional forms as well as organizational ways distinguishing socio-cultural life in towns from that in village (Manjunatha and Kote, 2012). Thus, Rural-Urban continuum makes more sense (see Manjunatha and Kote, 2012). Manjunatha and Kote (2012) hold that urbanization is migration of people from village to city together with the impact it has on migrants and their families.

In due regard, the presented scholarly works were the springboard for this study to adapt the Rural-Urban Continuum Theory. That holds true, for example, scholarly undertakings by Indian sociologists in regard to rural-urban communities analyzed them at diverse capacities using Rural-Urban Continuum Theory (for an extended view please see presentations by Manjunatha and Kote, 2012). Furthermore, India is a developing country like Tanzania such that careful application of the Rural-Urban Continuum Theory in the Tanzanian context was deemed pertinent by the researcher (see also Manjunatha and Kote, 2012). In due regard, the study examined push-pull factors for migration from rural areas to Mwanza city.

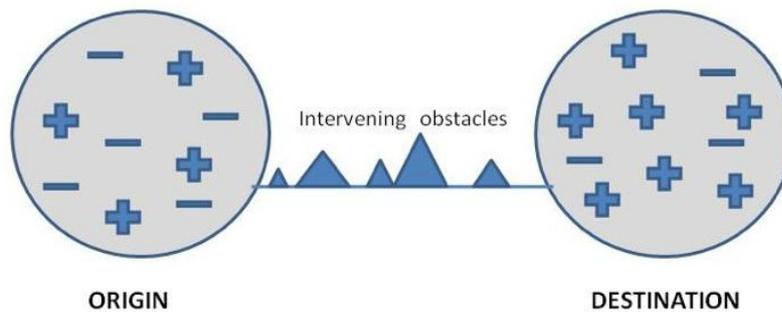
In another vein, this study used Ravenstein's Theory as modified/formulated by Lee (1966) and provides great emphasis on internal (or push) factors. Also, Lee (1966) outlined the impact on the migration process caused by intervening obstacles. Lee (1966) categorically stated that variables such as distance, physical barriers, political barriers and dependants can impede or even prevent migration. Furthermore, Lee (1966) held that the migration process is selective because of differentials like age, gender and social class such that they affect the manner persons respond to push-pull factors thereby such conditions also shape their ability to overcome intervening obstacles. In addition, personal factors such as a person's education level, knowledge of a potential receiver population, family ties and so forth can facilitate or retard migration (please see Figure 2.1).

In general, the theory analyzed the relationship between places of origin and place of destination in migration (Lee, 1966). The model assumes that in every area, there are positive as well as negative factors that encourage or discourage people to live in or to leave the area (Lee, 1966). On one hand, it was postulated by Lee (1966) that push factors are negative thereby tend to force migrants to leave their places of origin and such push factors include diseases, wars, bad climates, shortage of land and the like. On the other hand, pull factors were reported to be positive factors that attract migrants to move to the area of destination with an expectation of better lives than in the place(s) of origin (Lee, 1966). Such pull factors include the following: property; and ownership of assets like land, houses as well as physical conditions, for example, good climate, soil and others (Lee, 1966).

In addition, the theory stipulates that there are intervening obstacles that are factors, which make people undecided whether or not to migrate (Lee, 1966, see Figure 2). Intervening factors include low educational attainment, distance, transport cost(s) and physical barriers like mountains, which may hinder the migration process (Lee, 1966). Thus, the theory assumes that in order for migration to take place, both positive and negative factors at both places have to be examined (Lee, 1966). Also, Lee (1966) found out that on reaching the area of destination, migrants face many problems that include unemployment, assimilation and rejection. When positives increase to destination, migration ensues (see Lee, 1966).

Figure 2.1 Lee's Push-Pull Factors

## Lee's Push-Pull Theory



Source: Adapted from Lee (1966: 50).

Note: Attracting factors are shown with a positive sign (+)

Repelling factors are depicted with a negative sign (-)

In another extension, the “push-pull” model of migration is one of simple migration models, which attempted to provide reasons for people to move and introduced the issue of obstacles that were not taken seriously in classical models (see, for example, Mabogunje, 1970). However, the model is criticized for not presenting factors of migration and intervening obstacles explicitly (for example, Todaro, 1976). Furthermore, the model was criticized based on the ground that not all migrants decide to migrate themselves, for example, wives and children normally follow their husbands or fathers, as the case may be (Todaro, 1976). In addition, barriers like mountains are no longer applicable in the current world situation where transport systems are highly improved. Also, human beings are not always rational (*ibid.*). They can migrate irrespective of positive and negative factors that exist in both places of origin and those of destination (*ibid.*).

Further encapsulation of push and pull-factors has been clearly presented in the UN-HABITAT (2003: 25) report in explaining the concept of rural-urban migration. Such push-pull factors for rural-urban migration are clearly reported that,

“Urbanization is perhaps the only enduring trend in human history. The high rate of urbanization that is now occurring throughout the developing world parallels that which occurred in England and some other European countries during their industrial revolutions in the 18th and 19<sup>th</sup> centuries. What is different now is that urbanization is not being accompanied by adequate economic growth in many developing countries. The main features of contemporary urbanization have been determined by: *political factors*:

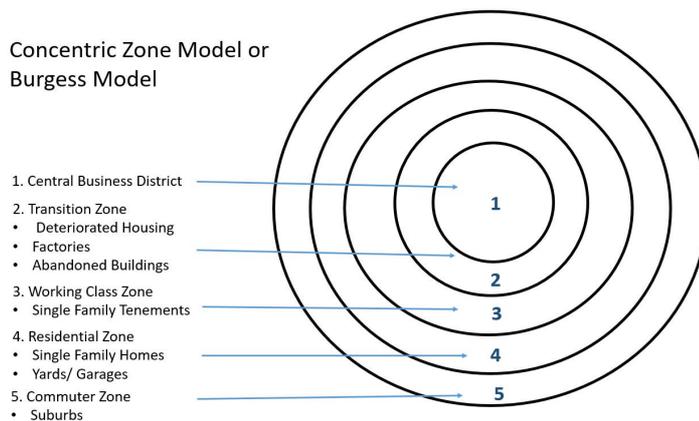
instability, civil war and repression; *economic, environmental and social factors*: – *pushing*, environmental degradation and declining productivity of cropland; low rural incomes from agriculture; lack of new lands for farming; move to export rather than subsistence farming; enclosure and consolidation of farm holdings; limited off-farm employment; – *pulling*: higher incomes in urban areas; greater employment opportunities; economic safety nets; availability of social services, education and health care; improved water supply and other environmental services and infrastructure” (UN-HBAITAT, 2003: 25).

Thus, validity of pull-push factors for examining migration to cities like Mwanza with limited job opportunities and industries was used. Rural-Urban Continuum Theory was used to assess aspects like habits, behaviours and attitudes of migrants. McGee (1971: 63) argued that movements of rural people bring people, whose values, habits and attitudes as well as political, economic and social organization contrast sharply with the urban society. McGee (1971) argued that a rapid urban growth rate and a high level of dominance created a disordered mixture of urban and rural land use that resulted in certain environmental as well as social problems. For instance, a high urban population growth compared to a city development causes a slum problem (Yap and Wandeler, 2010 cited in Panu, 2010). McGee (1971) concluded that such aspects of rural society do not necessarily disappear in the urban environment, especially when the number of rural migrants is large.

In further submission of interlocked theoretical stances for this study’s analysis of human behaviours, Concentric Zone Theory is presented next. As already stipulated, such disposition was mandatory due to their closeness in making sense of analysis of human behaviour patterns in squatters of Mwanza city.

### **2.1.2 Concentric Zone Theory**

The Concentric Zone Theory is subsumed under Sociology Ecological Theory. The concept of Concentric Zone Theory was first developed by Friedrich Engels in the nineteenth century who observed urbanization of Manchester city in England, which used to be a centre of textile manufacturers in the Industrial Revolution (Fanning, 2005 cited in Panu, 2010: 9). Engels postulated that the business area including offices, retails and wholesales were at the center of the city (Panu, 2010: 9). Then, as exhibited in Figure 2.2, the city kept expanding to an outer and a larger circle in all directions (*ibid.*). Engels further postulated that the more outward circle from the center, the higher income and upper-class residents lived (*ibid.*). In due regard, the first ring closest to the center was the place for factory workers (*ibid.*).

**Figure 2.2 Concentric Zone Theory**

Source: Adapted from Panu (2010: 9).

It has to be brought to attention that Engels was the first person to present the idea, but E.W. Burgess is the person who developed as well as disseminated the Concentric Zone Theory to the public (Panu, 2010: 9). In due regard, Burgess is considered a founder of Concentric Zone Theory (*ibid.*). In fact, one of the first sociological studies on the way people are distributed in cities was carried out by Sociologists at the Chicago University in United States of America (USA) and came to be known as the Chicago School (see also Panu, 2010: 9). Burgess and Park (1921) introduced the notion of human ecology under Sociological Ecology whereby consideration was on a spatial study of humans and their environment. From his observation of Chicago, Burgess (1923) suggested that modern cities were arranged in a pattern of concentric rings or zones each with distinctive function. The issue at stake is that ‘how was the conceptualization?’ Panu (2010: 9) discloses that in the Concentric Zone Theory by Burgess, city growth was interpreted to have resulted from a radial expansion from the business center or currently referred to Central Business District (CBD) and then it led to concentric rings. In Sociological Ecology stance, the process of forming concentric rings was called invasion and succession (*ibid.*). It was further propounded that firstly, people residing in an inner ring try to invade to a next outer zone (*ibid.*). Secondly, there is distribution of land use between residential and commercial areas (*ibid.*). Thus, further critical analysis led Burgess to classify the city area into the following five zones: first, the Central Business District (CBD); second, zone of transition between residential and commercial use; third, a low-class residential area; fourth, a middle and high-class residential area; and finally, a commuter zone, which includes suburbs as well as remote communities (see also Brunn, Williams and Zeigler, 2003: 34 cited in Panu, 2010: 9).

In regard to this, it was envisaged that the structure of Mwanza city may assist to discern the squatter areas in consideration to their behaviour patterns to their environment spatially demarcated by Burgess classified zones, the concentric rings. Thus, such an analysis helped further to unravel reasons for people in Mwanza city to

squat. This theory was also necessary in using Anomie Theory presented in the next sub-section in discerning human behaviour, deviant as positive or negative and the like, across squatter settlements of Mwanza city. It is obvious that although there are structural boundaries in terms of socio-economic status across urban settlements, humans do not live in isolation pertaining to their behaviours and/or activities in their close vicinities. Therefore, Anomie Theory was used as a built-up pathway for distinguishing human behaviour patterns in squatter settlements in conjunction with those of their neighbourhoods demarcated as concentric zones.

### **2.1.3 Anomie Theory**

Anomie Theory, under social structure in Sociology, is a theory that was first propounded by sociologist, Robert Merton that he first presented in 1938 (see Featherstone and Deflem, 2003). The paradigm has been useful for later research undertakings and theoretical debates, for example, proponents such as Adler and Laufer (1995) as well as Passas and Agnew (1997).

However, Merton's paper under the title, "Social Structure and Anomie" in its various appearances (for example, Merton 1938, 1949a, b, 1957a, 1968a cited in Featherstone and Deflem, 2003: 1) is the most quoted of all contributions in sociology. Although Merton's work on social structure and anomie is an undisputed classic piece of work in sociology, there has continued to be much confusion and debate over the years in regard to meaning and status of Merton's conceptualizations. In fact, Merton's contribution has been heralded to be among the most significant of all major sociological theories ever propounded but it has also been criticized as fundamentally faulty (see Featherstone and Deflem, 2003).

Much of Merton's propositions, had and still continue, to polarize scientists. However, some proponents, for example, Featherstone and Deflem (2003) argue that in his contributions on social structure and anomie, Merton forwarded the following two discrete theories, which he did not always clearly distinguish: first, a theory of Anomie refers to a de-institutionalization of norms that occurs when there is a disjunction between emphasis on cultural goals and institutional means (Merton, 1938:673, 1968a:189 cited in Featherstone and Deflem, 2003: 2); and second, the Strain Theory of deviant behaviour, which holds that people are more likely to pursue illegitimate means to attaining culturally prescribed goals when they are blocked from accessing institutionalized means to these goals (Merton 1938:679, 1968a:211 cited in Featherstone and Deflem, 2003: 2).

Besides polarized views in regard to Merton's paradigm, Featherstone and Deflem's (2003: 2) analysis paved the way for the researcher to adapt Merton's Anomie Theory for assessment of people living in squatter areas in Mwanza city because they stipulate that,

“While it was beyond the scope of our paper to determine which sociological theory of deviant behavior might best fit the Mertonian paradigm, we made the argument that Merton’s social-structure-and-anomie paradigm remains a valuable perspective for the study of deviance in society. Merton’s proposition that there is a disjunction in American society between cultural goals and institutionalized means may still be fruitful in building a sociological framework for understanding crime and deviance, today as much as some six decades ago.”

In due regard, this study, like Featherstone and Deflem’s (2003) position pertaining to Merton’s social-structures-and-anomie paradigm was a valuable perspective for analysis of deviant behaviour patterns by people living in squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Accordingly, the researcher held a proposition that there is a disjunction between cultural goals and institutionalized means for understanding crime as well as deviance in squatter study areas of Mwanza city. Analysis of deviant behaviour through Anomie Theory was further augmented examination of variables in their linkage through Social Responsibility Theory presented first, as the Conceptual Framework (Figure 1.1) in Chapter One of this thesis and then cast wide as a theoretical submission in the next sub-section. It was felt important to further boost Anomie Theory by employing Social Responsibility Theory so as to get true picture of human behaviour in squatter settlements in Mwanza city.

#### **2.1.4 Social Responsibility Theory**

Recall, the Hutchins Commission (whose official name was the Commission on Freedom of the Press) was formed during the Second World War when Henry Luce, the then publisher of Time and Life magazines, asked Robert Maynard Hutchins, the then president of the University of Chicago to involve a commission so as to inquire into the proper function of the media in a modern democracy (Nerone, 1995: 80).

After deliberating for four years, the Commission came to the conclusion in 1947 that the press plays an important role in development as well as stability of modern society such that it was of essence that a commitment of social responsibility be imposed on mass media (Nerone, 1995: 80-81). The University of Chicago had developed a strong school of thought in sociology by then whereby many classical sociologists propounded many paradigms, for example, Robert Merton as well as Burgess and Park, to mention a few. Thus, Social Responsibility emanated from the University of Chicago propounded by sociologists under Hutchins. According to Social Responsibility Theory, the press has a moral obligation to consider overall needs of society when making journalistic decisions in order to produce the greatest good (see also Nerone, 1995: 80-81). Though there had been journalism ‘codes of ethics’ for many decades, the Commission’s report was considered a landmark by

some scholars who believed it was a pivotal reassertion of modern media role in a democratic society (Nerone, 1995: 80-81).

Social Responsibility Theory was born at a time (just after the then United States of America president, Franklin Roosevelt's death) large and powerful publishers were unpopular with the public and when the public had a high degree of suspicions about motivations including objectives of the press (Nerone, 1995: 80-81). The press had mushroomed into an unwieldy and powerful body thereby criticism of the Fourth Estate was widespread (*ibid.*). Critics contended that the media had self-centered tendencies such that corporate owners were unconcerned with rights or interests of those unlike themselves and that commercialization produced a dishonoured culture as well as dangerously selfish politics (*ibid.*).

The notion of social responsibility of the media is derivative of Social Responsibility Theory of the press, which arose as a result of the media ability to influence people's beliefs, ideas and behaviour on very important issues (Nerone, 1995: 80-81). It came about as a result of vision that since the press (newspapers) was influential, it had social responsibilities (*ibid.*). Hence, every media ought to deliver accurate and unbiased news so as to meet divergent needs of the heterogeneous public, without confining their role to being the spokesperson(s) of those with special interests or political schema (*ibid.*).

It is an undeniable fact that the impact of media on society is tremendous (Herdís, 2003). Social responsibility of media is fostered when the media involve in what is referred to as "committed journalism" whereby priority is placed on values like "democracy, free choice, openness, morality, and serving the common good" thereby informing the public "about political, social, economic, and cultural affairs" (*ibid.*). Committed journalism would best manifest when the media assume to be the public watch dog (see also Lusgarten and Debrix, 2005: 365). In terms of human rights promotion or protection, concepts of media social responsibility, "committed journalism" or "watchdog journalism" (*ibid.*) are perhaps relevant fragmentations of the role expected of the media as long as the media make sincere efforts in adherence to their professional codes of ethics. Nevertheless, all are useful to the media in anticipating human rights abuses as well as uncovering the abuses, especially through investigative journalism (*ibid.*). Thus, it is the role of investigative journalists to search and uncover truth such that exposure of truth would be in harmony with public interest, which, when effectively carried out, may be productive in bringing about change (see also Hugo de Burgh, 2000). In due regard, roles performed by the media in society (Wasserman, 2009) are instrumental to promotion of human rights. The media provide most of the information about human rights and in the event of failure they still have to perform that role (*ibid.*).

Social Responsibility Theory permits free press without any censorship but content of the press should be discussed in public panel and media should accept any obligation from public interference or professional self-regulations or both (Nerone, 1995: 80-81). On one hand, the theory lies between both authoritarian theory and libertarian theory because it gives total media freedom but, on the other hand, there are external controls (Nerone, 1995: 94-96). In due regard, social responsibility theory goes beyond the simple 'Objective' reporting or facts reporting to 'Interpretative' reporting or investigative reporting (Nerone, 1995: 94-96). The aspect of total news is complete facts and truthful but Hutchins Commission stated that "No longer giving facts truthfully rather than give a necessary analysed or interpretative report on facts with clear explanations" (Nerone, 1995: 80-81).

Hutchins Commission included the following tasks based on social responsibility of media: to formulate the code of conduct for the press; to improve standards of journalism; to safeguard interests of journalism as well as journalists; and to criticize as well as make some penalty for violating the code of conduct (*ibid.*). In another vein, Social Responsibility Theory permits everyone to say something or express opinion about the media; community opinion, consumer action including professional ethics; it permits recognition of private rights together with vital social interests; it permits private ownership in media that may give better public service unless the government can take over to assure that the public would be provided with better media services; and the media should take care of social responsibility and if they do not, the government or other organization(s) would do (*ibid.*).

In casting the net wide, Social Responsibility is an ethical framework, which holds that an entity, whether an organization or an individual, has an obligation to act for the benefit of society at large (Nerone, 1995: 80-81). Social Responsibility is an obliged duty such that every individual has to perform to strike a balance between economy and ecosystems (Nerone, 1995: 80-81). However, there may be a negotiation between economic development, in material sense and welfare of society as well as environment (Nerone, 1995). In due regard, Social Responsibility equates to sustaining equilibrium between the said two aspects (Nerone, 1995). Social Responsibility pertains not only to business entities but also to everyone, whose action impacts upon the environment (Nerone, 1995). Such responsibility can be passive, by avoiding involvement in socially harmful acts or active, by performing activities that directly advance social goals (Nerone, 1995).

Thus, this study, through Social Responsibility, examined key players' obligations [the squatters, local government authorities (Nyamagana Municipal Council as well as Ilemela Municipal Council), the central government and civil society organizations] concerning impacts (negative or positive) on the environment (squatter environment). In other words, the study sought to identify if their actions created equilibrium [benefit(s) or advantages to society] or

disequilibrium/disadvantages to the environment by being irresponsible or responsible.

## 2.2 Empirical Evidence

Scholarly works concerning squatters in global context, African context and Tanzanian context are presented in this section. The section starts by submission of salient concepts concerning squatter settlements across the world. Such concepts include the following: migration motivations as studied by several scholars, for example, McGee (1971) examined urbanization process; studies on squatter formation; effects of squatter under the rubric of ‘urban growth;’ instituted efforts on prevention as well as control of squatter settlements through slum clearance as well as slum upgrading in some parts of the world; and in the same inventiveness concerning squatter settlements, undertaken sites and scheme measures to some squatters around the world. The final part of the section provides scholarly works on squatter settlements undertaken at some selected areas around the world.

Former research works on slums embraced the following four major approaches: policy advocacy based on philosophical ideology; evaluation of slum policies and programmes; descriptive studies using qualitative as well as quantitative methods; and spatial studies using remote sensing and Global Information System [(GIS) see also Patel *et. al.*, 2012]. With respect to advocating policy ideas based on philosophical ideals, the most prominent is self-help policy based on capitalist philosophy, first proposed by Turner in 1972 and later on advocated by de Soto in his 1989 as well as 2003 publications (Patel *et. al.*, 2012). Patel and colleagues (2012) report that Turner and de Soto criticized some proponents such as Burgess in his works of 1978 as well as 1985 and Gilbert in 2002. The second type of slum research pertains to post-implementation policy evaluation studies like that on self-help policies appraised by workers such as Harms in 1982, Abelson in 1996, Harris in 1998, while slum redevelopment policies were evaluated by Laquian in 1977 and Materu in his 1986 publication (see Patel *et. al.*, 2012). The third type of slum research work relates to a descriptive analysis of urban poverty and slum growth carried out either under an anthropological approach or a statistical approach (see Patel *et. al.*, 2012). The former provides a detailed account of a specific slum in a specific time period but lacks generality, for example, Liebow (2003), Roberts (2005) as well as Lapierre (1992), while the next allows to draw general conclusions but usually remains limited in their focus [(for example, Mitra and Tsujita 2006; Lall *et. al.*, 2008; Gulyani and Talukdar, 2008; Beguy *et. al.*, 2010; Mata *et. al.*, 2005; Martinez and King 2010; Kombe and Kreibich, 2000; Sheuya 2004) Patel *et. al.*, 2012]. The final type permits developments within fields of remote sensing and geographic information system, which allows to map, enumerate as well as spatially analyze slums [(for instance, Weeks *et. al.*, 2007; Sen *et. al.*, 2003; Thomson and Hardin, 2000; Sliuzas *et. al.*, 2004; Baud *et. al.*, 2009) Patel *et. al.*, 2012].

Patel and colleagues (2012) concisely hold that,

“Most slum research has revolved around advocating theories into large-scale policy experiments and at the most, post-implementation evaluation of them. Empirical studies have either focused on policy evaluation or studying the descriptive characteristics of slums and slum-dwellers. Previous research has used descriptive speculation about underlying forces of slum formation and expansion, but they have not generated sufficient understanding to develop useful and effective slum policies” (Pugh, 2001; World Bank, 2006; Gulyani and Bassett, 2007; Gulyani and Talukdar, 2008).

In due regard, this study strived to help key players (government and local government including stakeholders) on using pertinent pathways in prevention and control of squatters through Social Responsibility Approach.

### **2.2.1 Migration motivations**

The first serious study was undoubtedly one carried out by McGee (1971) who researched on urbanization process. McGee (1971) showed that migrants moved by steps (from village to small towns before venturing to bigger cities). He (*ibid.*) showed principal factors on which a decision is made to migrate, contacts a migrant had to make before moving and how such migrant eventually is assimilated into the city.

Several studies emphasize on the following two factors of motivation for migrating: push and pull factors (see Lee, 1966; McGee, 1971; Mabogunje, 1972). Studies from Asia put importance on push factors (see also Majunatha and Kote, 2012) and they show unemployment as the main push for migrants to leave their rural areas. The studies established that rural-urban migration is largely male dominated whereby they move short distances and by steps from village to small towns to large cities (*ibid.*). In Africa, the picture is slightly different (for example, Mabogunje, 1972; Fabrizio, 2006; Burton, 2005; Francesco *et. al.*, 2002). Many African countries are urbanizing because they are experiencing high level of both female and male migrants motivated by both pull and push factors including personal factors (*ibid.*).

### **2.2.2 Squatter formation**

Studies on the subject of squatter formation or reasons for squatting are fewer than those on migration motivations. The United Nations Conference on Economic and Development report of 2002 estimates that 850 million people currently live in urban slums. It is projected to reach 1.5 billion by 2021 (UN-HABITAT, 2003). The Millennium Development Goal called for improving lives of at least 100 million slum dwellers by 2020 (*ibid.*).

An effective approach starts with understanding reasons squatter neighborhoods form in the first place. There are studies, which show that migration and urban growth are

strongly interlinked because majority of people on the move do so for bright lights of the city (Roman Rollnick, 2006).

Experience from Latin America shows that fundamental reasons include lack of housing affordability due to low income, high interest rates on home loans, high standards and burdensome process for obtaining building permits (Ferguson and Navaprete, 2003). Other reasons include insecure land tenure systems (*ibid.*). Some authors are concerned with housing markets in third world countries (*ibid.*). Housing markets operate in informal markets (*ibid.*). Families sell their houses usually by transferring documents and leave to squat elsewhere within the city (*ibid.*).

In Africa, squatter areas are formed by in-migration (see Kironde, 1995 cited in Limbumba, 2012). People move from rural areas and go to live on plots, which do not belong to them (*ibid.*). Other authors blame lack of local government's enforcement practices by waiting until the problem has grown beyond repair and it is time, they should start instituting unworkable measures (see Komba, 2008).

### **2.2.3 Effects of Squatters' Urban Growth**

Cities are centers of much national production and consumption - economic and social processes - that generate wealth and opportunities. But UN-HABITAT report (2006) establishes that cities create diseases, crime, pollution, poverty and social unrest. The report (*ibid.*) holds that the number of slum dwellers will top 1 billion in 2025. In addition, the third Session of the World Urban Forum in Vancouver in 2006 predicted that the urban population of developing countries will double from 2 to 4 billion in the next 30 years (*ibid.*).

### **2.2.4 Social Values and Cultural Values**

Some studies show fragmentation and break down of cultural values in cities. Ethnic riots in streets of Kangemi in Nairobi, Kenya are examples of problems of social values (Father Gerald Whelan, 2006). The problems involve ethnic divisions among internal rural-urban migrants within Kenya (*ibid.*). In Nairobi, Kenya, squatters live in neighbourhoods by ethnic identity (*ibid.*). Living in harmony among different ethnic groups becomes difficult because of differences in socio-cultural values (*ibid.*). Similar problems were echoed by Bodewes (2005) in his research on squatter settlements in Kibera area in Nairobi, Kenya.

### **2.2.5 Prevention and Control of Squatters**

#### **2.2.5.1 Slum Clearance**

Studies on slum clearance are many. Arputham and Patel (2010) established that slum clearance policies are top-down, expensive and do not involve squatters. The authors (*ibid.*) pointed out that in Mumbai, for example, 1 million squatters spread over 175 hectares refused to have their shacks demolished. The squatters, activists and community organizations wanted to have dialogue with authorities on several

issues (*ibid.*). They wanted to be involved in decision-making (*ibid.*). Some wanted to stay on sites they occupied by then and upgrade their homes, while others wanted compensation of incomes as well as livelihoods (*ibid.*).

The presented general studies clearly show that the underlying issue here is that governments are bent on pleasing commercial developers by clearing sites rather than addressing squatters' needs.

#### **2.2.5.2 Slum Upgrading**

Studies presenting slum upgrading in third world countries can mean many things. In Latin America, slum upgrading includes interventions by providing water, sanitation, drainage, roads, land plots, public parks, health clinic and income generating activities. Similar interventions were experienced in Kurasini, Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania (Ndezi, 2009).

In Thailand, slum upgrading process takes a more social responsibility approach than in many other cases. The Baan Makong slum upgrading program involved Savings groups, Civil Society Organizations (CSOs), local government agencies, development institutions, universities, local NGOs and architects (Manoj, 2003; Sanisock, 2009). The program supported partners to find solutions for squatter settlements (see also Srinivas, Hari, 1991; Manoj, 2003; Sanisock, 2009).

#### **2.2.5.3 Sites and Services Scheme**

This is an idea the World Bank developed to help developing countries deal with slum problems (for example, Dar es Salaam city in Tanzania, see Komba, 2008). The government upgrades a site as well as provides road infrastructure, plot demarcation, water lines and storm water drainage (*ibid.*). Plots measuring 150 metre squares are regarded as high-density plots and affordable to low income people (*ibid.*).

#### **2.2.6 The World Context**

The world context is presented in this sub-section. The aim of presenting studies conducted on slums from different parts of the world is to show the manner different environmental contexts and human behavioural patterns have similar squatter settlements possibly with differences at varying degrees including their terminologies as submitted in chapter one of this thesis. In addition, such submission provides a good orientation concerning the studied problem at various localized parts of the globe. Moreover, it is anticipated that readers will have good grasp on features as well as causes of squatter settlements and the manner the said settlements have been studied around the world in order to deal with them in terms of control and possible prevention of their sprawl in urban areas. Furthermore, such survey of slums around the world helps to show the manner they have been involving authorities, such as central governments, local governments, private individuals, civil society

organizations and international agencies like UN-HABITAT in resolving problems associated with squatter settlements across the world for better human habitation.

### 2.2.6.1 Studies in Latin America

In their work, Grajeda and Ward (2012) present various legal codes that prevail in Mexico relating to marriage and acquisition as well as assigning of property upon death. The authors (*ibid.*) offer several case scenarios of interfamilial and intra-generational conflict, especially insofar as they relate to gender and social constructions of inheritance rights among the urban poor squatters. However, their (*ibid.*) results are preliminary, requiring further research works to deal with the said problems.

Rivadulla (2011) combined statistical analysis as well as qualitative research to understand evolution and dynamics of urban land squatting by poor people in Montevideo, Uruguay. With an original data set of 257 land occupations over a period of 58 years (from 1947 to 2004) together with 80 interviews with squatters' leaders, state officials and politicians among other sources, explored influence of electoral politics on appearance of new land invasions that challenged the assumption that socio-economic factors or grievances are the only causes triggering land squatting (*ibid.*). For that, it first unveils heterogeneity behind the commonly used term of land squatting. Results led Rivadulla (2011) to argue that in Uruguay, like in other places in Latin America, there is a strong relationship of squatters as well as politics and has made it possible for many squatters to get state attention in form of public services through brokerage squatter leaders entrenched in political networks. Rivadulla (2011) had this to report in his results,

“Political parties have been the brokers between society and the state in Uruguay throughout its history (Panizza and Pérez Piera, 1988). Yet, the relationship and the types of intermediation vary depending on the actors and have also varied over time. It is likely that without this statist tradition, squatters, at least some of them, would not expect so much from the state. According to Alsayyad (1993), making claims to the state and being politicized is part of the ‘squatting culture’ in Latin America, not only of Uruguay. By contrast, in the Middle East squatters tend to resort to strategies outside politics such as, depending on the particular context, complete political invisibility, tribal networks, or religious law to legalize land.”

Alsayyad (1993) carried out a comparative analysis of informal developments in Latin America and the Middle East. Alsayyad (1993) reported that claims to the state and being politicized were part of ‘squatting culture’ in Latin America and Uruguay but in the Middle East, squatters tended to opt to strategies outside politics, for example, depending on a particular context, complete political invisibility, ethnic networks or religious law to legalize land ownership.

### 2.2.6.2 Studies in Asia

Ishtiaque (2003), through multivariate analyses, sought to uncover factors responsible for rural-urban migration in Dhaka, Bangladesh. A total of 263 face-to-face interviews, open-ended as well as close-ended questionnaires together with five Focus Group Discussions were conducted in the study (*ibid.*). Then the subjected data through multivariate analyses revealed that both push and pull factors influenced on migration status of migrants (*ibid.*). Ishtiaque (2013) remarked that social factors, except occupation at rural origin, did not have any considerable influences for rural-urban migration.

Patel and colleagues (2012) developed an analytical framework, named, *Slumulation*, capable of exploring spatial and temporal dynamics of slum formation in developing world cities. The study was carried out in Ahmedabad, India (*ibid.*). The said framework integrated Discrete Event Simulation (DES), Agent-based Modeling (ABM) and Geographic Information System (GIS) to explore the manner slums form as well as expand; place and time slums develop; and finally, types of structural changes and/or policy interventions that could improve housing conditions for urban poor (Patel *et. al.*, 2012). Patel and colleagues (2012) argue that *Slumulation* is designed to serve as a decision support tool for urban planners and policymakers that could be used to evaluate policy ideas *ex-ante* in a simulated environment with minimal data requirements. According to the research team (*ibid.*),

“... model is still under development but the early results for Ahmedabad seem promising. Once calibrated and validated for Ahmedabad, we hope that it can be used to generate *what-if* scenarios and test policy ideas in a simulated environment. The process is made completely transparent and user-friendly so that *Slumulation* could be used not only for other cities in India but for cities in other developing countries as well, albeit with local adaptation and customization. The model is made available in public domain via a dedicated website to facilitate replication and validation in other cities.”

### 2.2.6.3 Studies in the Middle East

Marwa (2011) carried out a study titled, “Redefining slums in Egypt: Unplanned versus unsafe areas” whereby he addressed the crucial need to re-examine criteria for defining ‘slums’ in order to present a highly precise image of existing slums and categorize them according to severity of risk they pose to human life and to property as means for prioritizing interventions. Marwa’s (2011) work reflects on the Egyptian initiative, started at the outset of 2009, to solve the problematic issue of defining what are called ‘slums’ or ‘informal settlements’ or *Ashwa’iyyat*, by replacing them with two distinctive terms, namely, ‘unplanned areas’ and ‘unsafe areas.’ Marwa (2011) considered the approach to underpin identification of priorities for intervention and drawing up policies including strategies for improving slums’ conditions and lives of their inhabitants. Results from the study shed light from a survey carried out by the Informal Settlement Development Facility (ISDF) from

February to May 2009 (Marwa, 2011). The study strived for the first time to identify unsafe and unplanned areas spatially in all urban centres in Egypt and classified the former according to degrees of risk based on certain criteria set by the ISDF (Marwa, 2011). Results from the study revealed substantial discrepancies between previous statistics concerning size of slums and the then highly produced statistics (Marwa, 2011). Results from the survey conducted by the ISDF to identify unsafe and unplanned areas in all urban centres of Egypt identified 404 unsafe urban areas with approximately 1.1 million inhabitants (Marwa, 2011). In due regard, Marwa (2011) argued that areas considered unsafe were estimated to contain 1.1 million inhabitants, representing the number of people in great need for an immediate action to improve their living conditions. Marwa (2011) argued further that the new approach employed by the ISDF alongside with survey results can be considered to add value, which should change the position of Egypt on the world map of slums.

In Turkey, Şenyapılı (2004) examined the ‘*voyage*’ of two components of squatter housing phenomena, namely, the shelter and its builders/inhabitants in time because both were envisaged to have gone through radical transformations in a period of half a century. The study included one such attempt. The proponent’s (Şenyapılı, 2004) basic assumption was that of the two components, the shelter was the variable, dependent on the builders/inhabitants’ position, role and function in the labour market constituted independent variables. The assumption was discussed in an urban spatial quadruped, namely, three abstract, relation-based, *economic*, *political* and *social* spaces, and the *physical* urban space, displaying chronological ‘*refractions*’ with reference to different development models adopted in Turkey (*ibid.*). Results from the study reflected the fact that a lot was needed to be undertaken as asserted by the proponent (*ibid.*) that, “Whether reorganization of the informal sector in economic space and/or changes of policy, then introduction of new opportunities and hope in political space will be able to reduce and redirect internal tensions, is to be seen.”

## **2.2.7 African Context**

### **2.2.7.1 Studies in North and West Africa**

Tsekpo’s (2010) main objective of the study was to identify ways to maximize contribution of labour migration to development in selected countries in North and West Africa, namely, Algeria, Mauritania, Morocco, Tunisia and Senegal. Emphasis was on interactions and complementarities among labour migration, employment, social protection, macro-economic policies and development (*ibid.*). The author (*ibid.*) argues that although there are clear gains to be realized from migration as individuals and families migrate from study countries to the North, much need to be done so as to maximize benefits of migration at household level and macro-economic level. Tsekpo’s (2010) work provides details to the discussion of migration from North and West Africa by covering relevant models of outward migration as well as push and pull factors in the North and West African sub-region. Further

details are based on migration of different grades of labour including highly skilled as well as low skilled, irregular migration, migration policy in sending and recipient countries, remittances and the best practice lessons from other regions inside as well as outside Africa (Tsekopo, 2010).

Results from the study, among others, reveal that statistical evidence point to significant push and pull factors that lead to stimulated legal migration in North and West Africa as well as emergence of clear routes of irregular (illegal) migration from North and West Africa to Europe (Tsekpo, 2010). But it was unclear whether or not gains from out migration from the studied countries were sufficient to outweigh cost including associated brain drain (Tsekpo, 2010).

#### **2.2.7.2 Studies in South Africa**

There are several works concerning squatters or informal settlements in South Africa. The country underwent a lot of political and legal upheavals such that squatting in South Africa is a big problem on the African continent. In a legal perspective, Huchzermeyer (2003) discussed two cases that revealed an uncertain position of the judiciary in relation to access to urban land by the poor in South Africa. The study further revealed that courts on their own cannot ensure changes in policy such that consistent political activism was required (*ibid.*). In due regard, results from the study led to an argument that there was need to engage with lawyers and judges so as to ensure a consistent as well as democratic interpretation of rights that were secured in the South African 1996 Constitution (*ibid.*). The author (*ibid.*) further informed that,

“In the case of Bredell, the government’s tough position on land invasions, and its support for forceful evictions, was broadcast through prime media coverage to every inadequately housed resident: the route to adequate housing in South Africa is not through the courts.”

Napier (1993) examined some salient features to a serious housing problem in South Africa by comparing three ideological positions that viewed historical causes and current reasons for perpetuation of the problem from different angles. By then, South Africa was still under minority apartheid rule. Napier (1993) concluded that dialogue was necessary between groups in order to realize a highly balanced set of strategies rather than any one group capable of generating pertinent solution(s) to the housing problem.

#### **2.2.7.3 Studies in Zimbabwe**

A study by Mpofo (2012) focused on Bulawayo, the second largest city in Zimbabwe and used interviews, archival research, Council minutes and newspapers as data collection methods. In the submission, Mpofo (2012) provided critiques on the state’s urban development policy against squatters and informality. Mpofo (2012) argued that persistence of an outstanding perception by government officials that all

Africans belong to rural areas and have access to land serves as a vital mechanism to the state's action of forcibly sending squatters to rural areas. Such measure ignores the historical pattern of rapid urbanization together with growth of informal economies supporting livelihoods of thousands of people (Mpofu, 2012). Mpofu (2012) sought to unravel aspects on low-cost housing shortages, urban squatters and peri-urbanism in Zimbabwe. Mpofu's (2012: 61) findings are important at diverse capacities such that,

“Squatters remain condemned to be perpetual ‘outcasts.’ Officials (both from the national government and the local authority), have been evading responsibility to address the squatter situation. It was only in 2012 that the Bulawayo Council, in conjunction with World Vision and the IMO embarked on concerted efforts to resettle the Killarney squatters at Hyde Park. The stance of the national government is bound to continue because of its salient perception that all ‘authentic’ Zimbabweans belong to rural areas and have access to land they can fall back on in hard times.”

#### **2.2.7.4 Studies in Nigeria**

Mabogunje and Kates (2004) through their research on, “Sustainable Development in Ijebu-Ode, Nigeria: The Role of Social Capital, Participation, and Science and Technology” for the urban poor (including squatters), urged scientists and technologists to use their skills and knowledge to act locally in the service of global aspirations so as to meet human needs, reduce hunger as well as reduce poverty.

Bello's (2009) study focused on the urban poor in regard to connection between their socio-economic characteristics and access to land. Based on results from the study, it was recommended that there should be land reform that will not put the urban poor at a disadvantageous position with regard to access to land (*ibid.*). Also, to ensure availability of funds for upgrading existing squatter settlements, the author (*ibid.*) recommended for instituting Public-Private-Partnership. Finally, it was suggested that in order to sustain and make sure the urban poor would be able to afford provision and payment for some of mentioned facilities, which will be provided under the proposed arrangement, there was the need to empower squatters economically (*ibid.*).

#### **2.2.7.5 Studies in Kenya**

In Kenya, squatters have a long history from colonial times in rural farmland areas, for example, in Kikuyu areas in colonial rural times (see Kanogo, 1987). Wakikuyu were displaced by European settlers such that from early 1900s to independence in Kenya, they had formed a movement under the rubric, *Mau Mau*, in protest of being displaced in their land parcels for crop cultivation and grazing (Kanogo, 1987). Thus, Wakikuyu were made squatters in rural areas and to fight such pattern, they had to protest with a lot of conflicts/uprisings (see Kanogo, 1987). Later on, like other

independent African countries, urban areas in Kenya have squatter settlements, a pattern that is presented next with obvious problems like elsewhere in the world (*ibid.*).

Kanyinga's (2000) study on "Re-distribution from above: The Politics of Land Rights and Squatting in Coastal Kenya" demonstrated the complexity of the problem by discussing interrelations between privatization of land and politics; land, the state and political patronage in the local ground; and land as well as popular politics. Results from the study led to suggest land tenure reform centres not only on issues of land productivity but also on issues of social restructuring, polarization and exclusion (Kayinga, 2000). Kayinga (2000) remarked that the 'Land Question complex' must be understood as an issue woven around the entire constitutive socio-economic relations of a social formation. For any attempt at resolving political and economic crises around land rights to be meaningful, Kayinga (2000) suggested that it must first begin with a thorough appreciation of the said complex. In their study on "Factors leading to squatter problem in Rift Valley Province in Kenya," Messah and Gachaba (2014) recommended for a re-engineering of higher breed of old African customary land law where land was owned communally and current statutory law on land where there is individual ownership to be adopted as a way of obtaining a check on landlessness, squatters, in Kenya.

### **2.2.8 Tanzanian Context**

Several proponents have provided results from their studies that range from legal aspects to formalization of unplanned settlements in urban areas. For example, Kyessi (2008) in his study in Dar es Salaam city, the biggest of all urban areas in Tanzania, examined formalization process of property rights in informal settlements together with their impacts in Dar es Salaam. In his submission, Kyessi (2008) argued that as long as owners of regularized properties were using their licenses or certificates to access credit for improving their homes or establishing small businesses, such pattern is borne with challenges. In due regard, measures may help scaling up the regularization process in other unplanned settlements in most urban areas in Tanzania so as to achieve one of the Millennium Development Goals, Goal Number 7, Target 11 (Kyessi, 2008).

In addition, Burra (2004) carried out a study of an informal settlement on outskirts (Makongo) of Dar es Salaam city by reporting the manner residents had gradually occupied as well as subdivided state-owned agricultural land and developed a middle-income community with mechanisms as well as management of services and conflict resolution. However, Burra (2004: 153) further informed that the government prepared a land development plan that totally ignored land allocations together with investments in housing and shared facilities that had already been instituted. In due regard, such state motivated measure was strongly resisted by local residents whereby a committee composed of land-owners, Community-Based

Organization leaders, initiated negotiations with planning authorities for permission to prepare a mitigation plan (*ibid.*). The team plus consultants from the University of Lands and Architectural Studies together with local people's financial contributions, at hard last, yielded approval of the mitigation plan (*ibid.*). The study by Burra (2004) exhibits the manner it is important to resolve problems including settlement problems by using a bottom-up approach rather than a top-down approach usually cherished by authorities (*ibid.*). Thus, the study revealed the manner concerted efforts and participatory approach (see also Burra, 2004: 151, 152, 155) from local people and civil organization, like the Social Responsibility Theory holds together with the presented Conceptual Framework (Figure 1 in Chapter One) are key to resolve some burning socio-cultural issues that include squatter or informal settlements.

Using qualitative research approach on socio-cultural aspects facing Dar es Salaam city's informal residents, Limbumba (2010) explored the manner they made residential location decisions based on the hunch that faced with urban life challenges like income limitations as well as residents relied on many resources, both economic and non-economic to facilitate their residential location decisions. The study attempted to show socio-cultural patterns that play a role in decision-making of households (*ibid.*). That was illustrated in form of informal channels for accommodation as well as residential plots, accommodation rent-free by a relative, short-distance movement to a location within proximity of a relative or seeking people of the same socio-economic status (*ibid.*). The study revealed that problems experienced by informal settlers in urban areas have to be dealt with on a daily basis through networks and relations as a vital resource for survival (*ibid.*). It was suggested that urban planning practice has to be learnt from social processes (*ibid.*).

There are several other reports pertaining to studies on squatter/informal settlements in Tanzania at diverse capacities. They include some of the following studies: Hozefa (2011) assessed factors that pose health risks to urban dwellers in slum areas of Dar-es-Salaam city. The study assessed urban environmental aspects including housing water supply, solid waste, drainage, road access and waste water sewage (*ibid.*). Data were collected through semi-structured interviews, focus group discussions, observations and documentary review (*ibid.*).

Results from the study revealed the following to be predominant in Mnazi Mmoja and Midizini sub-wards in Dar es Salaam city: malaria, cholera, diarrhoea and typhoid were common disease epidemics (*ibid.*). The following factors that presented health risk included: use of unsafe water because of limited access to safe water supply, piling up of solid waste due to inadequate waste handling as well as collection, poor housing condition as well as overcrowding (*ibid.*). Additional health risks included indoor smoke from cooking together with filthy external surroundings and stagnant water on storm drains due to waste accumulation that led to blockage, narrow as well as inaccessible

parts during emergency services (*ibid.*). The study revealed further that such factors were driven mainly due to absence of proper urban planning that led to proliferation of informal settlements following rapid urban population growth, but unmatched and slow expansion of infrastructure as well as housing (*ibid.*). It was recommended that the government should take measures in planning and advocate upgrading of informal settlements through a highly participatory approach by including residents of the settlements (*ibid.*).

It was recommended in a study by Kironde (2000) on the question of land markets in Dar es Salaam city areas that the government should help land markets to come out in an open and operate efficiently since land buying was found to be a common practice. Kironde (2000) further suggested that poor people stood a better chance of gaining access to urban land if efforts of all various key players in land delivery, particularly informal land market operators, would be brought together and helped to work more efficiently than before in solving land tenure/allocation problem.

In their study, Mhache and Mauma (2013) argued that for approximately forty years, proportional change between population dwelling in urban areas, for example, Dar es Salaam city (where the study was carried out) and that living in rural areas has become the most of all-important trends in human settlement development patterns. The authors (*ibid.*) held that such pattern is occurring in developing countries characterized by an explosive urban population caused by rural to urban migration and high natural population increase due to improved nutrition as well as medical care facilities. In a nutshell, the proponents (*ibid.*) found problems in such settlements that included unmanaged solid wastes, electricity problems, traffic jam, water shortage, housing shortage, unemployment and underemployment. They (*ibid.*) argued that the mentioned problems had root causes on social, economic and political dimensions such that concerted efforts involving all stakeholders were suggested to be instituted with political commitment in having priority in terms of actions as well as sources for curbing urbanization that paves the way for squatter settlements.

Shaidi's (2012) study, "Intimate Partner Violence among Women Living in Informal Settlements: A Case Study of Manzese in Dar es Salaam, Tanzania" indicated that prevalence of intimate partner violence in Manzese (a squatter area) was high whereby majority of women who experienced intimate partner violence did not take any action. The study revealed several reasons associated with their silence that included affection, limited financial options and fearing the husband (*ibid.*). For respondents who had tendency of reporting incidences of violence most of them reported to family and religious leaders (*ibid.*).

Lugalla (1997) on "Economic Reforms and Health Conditions of the Urban Poor in Tanzania" concluded that Structural Adjustment Programmes (SAPs) have had detrimental effects on living conditions of the urban poor. Lugalla (1997) remarked

that SAPs were contributing to deterioration of health conditions among poor people rather than improving them in many ways.

Komba (2008) in his study of Mwanza city revealed that the impact of urbanization was obvious due to issues of failure of urban government authorities to control urban growth thereby resulting to unplanned settlements and lack of basic infrastructures in most areas. Komba (2008) disclosed several challenges that are very big for local government authorities to provide land for development of settlements for the urban poor. Such challenges are coupled up with long procedures together with standards one has to abide by when he/she wants to have a house (settlement) in urban areas (*ibid.*). In addition, it was revealed that there were problems in addressing settlement development in Tanzania (*ibid.*). The major problem is lack of knowledge of urban poor on procedures and standards one has to follow on acquiring land including other legal building documents when constructing houses in urban areas (Komba, 2008). In due regard, such patterns made urban poor victims of demolishes and became poor of the poorer in cities like Mwanza (see also Komba, 2008).

### **2.3 Synthesis and Research Gap**

Recall, prior research works on slums or informal settlements in urban areas encompassed the following four major approaches: i) policy advocacy based on philosophical ideology; ii) evaluation of slum policies and programs; iii) descriptive studies using qualitative as well as quantitative methods; and iv) finally, spatial studies using remote sensing and Global Information System [(GIS) see also Patel *et al.*, 2012]. The presented literature review illustrates some former works that revolve around such four major research approaches in regard to slums or informal settlements.

Presented empirical evidence from Tanzania falls under some if not all research approaches as postulated by Patel and his team (2012). For example, studies by Limbumba (2010), Kyessi (2004), Komba (2008), Mhache and Mauma (2013) and Kironde (2000) dealt with aspects that revolve around evaluation of slum policies and programmes in urban areas of Tanzania. Hozefa (2011), Shaidi (2012) and Lugalla (1997) studied social services (health problems) in urban areas like Dar es Salaam city in squatter or informal settlements as evaluative aspects towards efforts to solve such problems by all key players, the government and other stakeholders.

From the presented literature review, the following questions helped to unravel the aspect of prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city: Who are the squatters? What are features and magnitude as well as causes of squatters in Mwanza? What social, economic, cultural and environmental impact does squatting has on Mwanza city? With the exception of a few social responsibility studies cited in the review, social responsibility approach was not taken into consideration by Tanzanian scholars. Thus, this study sought to fill in the gap so as to see to it that

results from the study would be helpful in resolving the squatter problem in Mwanza, in particular, and the country in general, through sociological stance, particularly the presented Neo-Marxist classical theories with Social Responsibility Theory as the hallmark for the study approach. Research Methodology is presented in the next chapter so as to illuminate pertinent scientific pathways for this thesis.

## **CHAPTER THREE RESEARCH METHODOLOGY**

### **3 Introduction**

Research methodology is furnished in this chapter under the following sections: research design; study area; sample and sample size; and sampling procedures. Other sections include the following: sampling procedures; data collection methods; validity and reliability; data analysis plan; and ethical considerations.

#### **3.1 Research Design**

Research Design is a comprehensive description of plan that indicates the manner systematically a scientific study is going to be conducted (Creswell, 2009). Thus, research design describes the real problem to be addressed by the intended scientific study; aims and purposes the research is intended for it including approaches (qualitative and/or quantitative); and research strategies such as survey, descriptive, case study, ethnographic, longitudinal, cross-sectional, correlational and so on (*ibid.*).

##### **3.1.1 Research Approaches**

This study employed both qualitative and quantitative research approaches to solicit information from respondents. However, quantitative research approach was minimally employed basically, for quantitative data were obtained for aspects like respondents' profile compared to qualitative research approach.

##### **3.1.2 Research Strategy**

Furthermore, a case study strategy was suitable because it has much more focus than other study strategies in unraveling answers for in-depth inquiries like this one. Therefore, the case study strategy was chosen over other research strategies for the purpose of answering the main research agenda. Such choice was found necessary as submitted by proponents like Gillham (2010) as well as Mills and colleagues (2010) in resolving problems such as this one utilized to study on control and prevention of squatters of Mwanza city.

According to Gillham (2010), the case study strategy refers to an inquiry with focus to describe, understand, predict and/or control the individual case, which can be a person, household, village, group, process, organization, culture, nationality and so forth. Mills and colleagues (2010) hold that case study research design is characterized by focus on interrelationships constituting circumstance of a specific entity (a case); analysis of the relationship between contextual factors together with the entity being studied; and the explicit purpose of using insights (of interactions between contextual relationships and the relevant entity) to generate theory and/or contribute to existing theory. Gillham (2010) further reveals that one other key feature of the case study research design is utilization of multiple sources of evidence, each with its strengths and weaknesses because no one kind or source of evidence is likely to be sufficient on its own.

## **3.2 Study Area**

### **3.2.1 General Profile**

The study was conducted in Mwanza city at the following five wards: Mwananchi Engineering Company Limited (MECCO), Isamilo, Kirumba, Igogo and Mabatini. In addition, the study followed topographical features to locate squatters along lakeshore areas whereby residents are mainly fishers and those residing along hill slopes.

Historically, Mwanza town was founded in 1892 as a regional administration and commercial centre to control mainly export production of cotton growing areas in the Lake Victoria Zone (Mwanza City Council, 2014). In 1978, Mwanza obtained the status of Municipality in line with the local government structure established in 1972 (*ibid.*). Later on, in 2000, Mwanza was further promoted to a city status (*ibid.*).

In terms of location, Mwanza City is located on the Southern shores of Lake Victoria in Northwest Tanzania (Mwanza City Council, 2014). On the North it is bordered by Lake Victoria and Ukerewe District, Misungwi District to the South, Sengerema District to the West, and Magu District to the East (Mwanza City Council, 2014). It is situated between latitudes 20 15 South – 20 45 just South of the Equator and between longitudes 32 45' – 33.000 East (Mwanza City Council, 2014). The city lies at an altitude of 1,140 metres above sea level (Mwanza City Council, 2014). It covers an area of 1324 kilometre squares (km<sup>2</sup>) out of these, 424 km<sup>2</sup> (32%) comprise dry land and 900 km<sup>2</sup> (68%) are covered by water (Mwanza City Council, 2014).

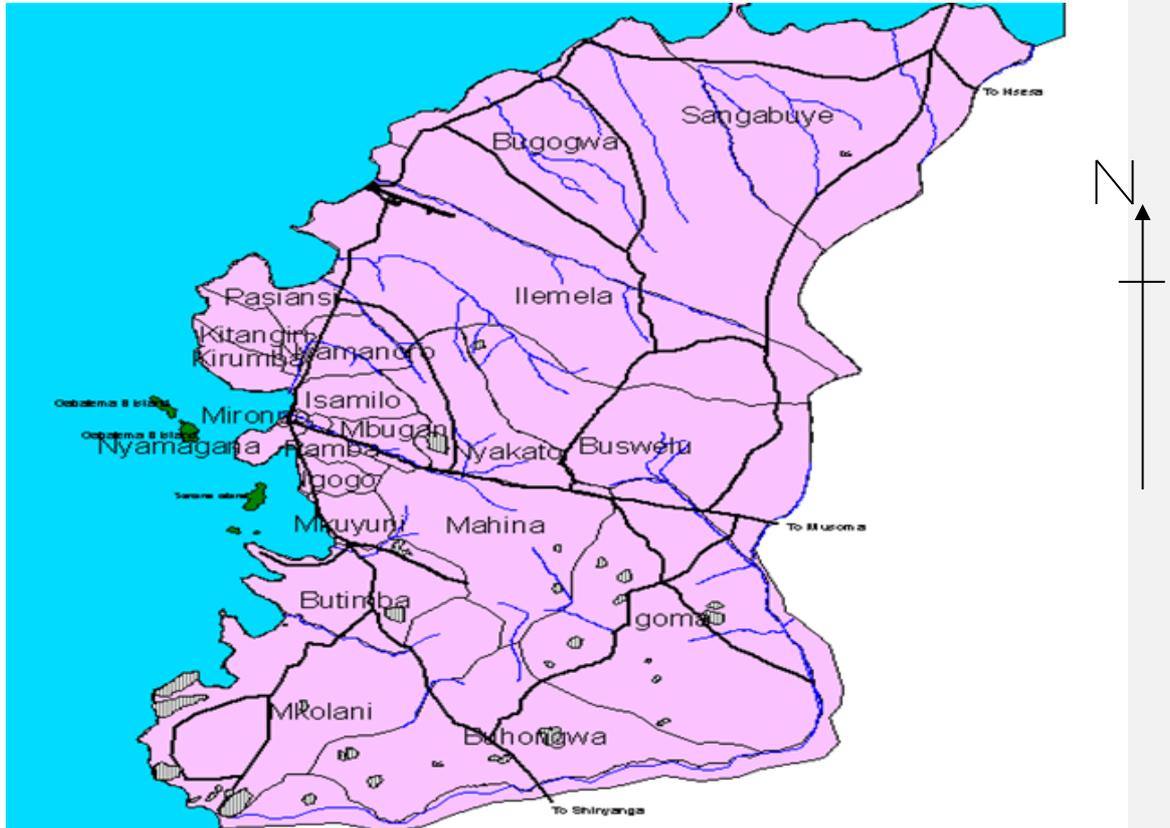
In both Nyamagana and Ilemela districts (also designated as Municipal Councils) of Mwanza city, the major ethnic groups are Wasukuma, Wazinza and Wakerewe (Mwanza Region Profile, 2012). According to Mwanza regional socio-economic profile (2010), there are 17 ethnic groups in the two districts. Nyamagana municipality takes the larger share with a total number of 9, while Ilemela municipality has only 8 ethnic groups (*ibid.*). Due to intermarriages especially in the last two decades, enculturation has taken place with merging culture and beliefs (*ibid.*). The outcome of this process is that ethnic distinctions have been broken and cultures have been blended into large beliefs as well as customs, even though a few ethnic groups still follow their respective customary beliefs diligently, especially in urban areas (*ibid.*).

### **3.2.2 Climatic Conditions of Mwanza City**

In terms of climatic conditions, Mwanza city receives between 700 millimetres (mm) and 1000 mm of rainfall per year, falling in two fairly distinct seasons, between October and December, and between February and May (Mwanza City Council, 2014). Temperature variations are minimal but they are influenced by altitude and

proximity to Lake Victoria among other factors (Mwanza City Council, 2014). The mean temperature of Mwanza city ranges between 25.7 degrees Celsius (°C) and 30.2 °C in hot season and 15.4 °C as well as 18.6 °C in cooler months (Mwanza City Council, 2014).

**Figure 3.1 Map of Mwanza City Showing Distribution of Wards**

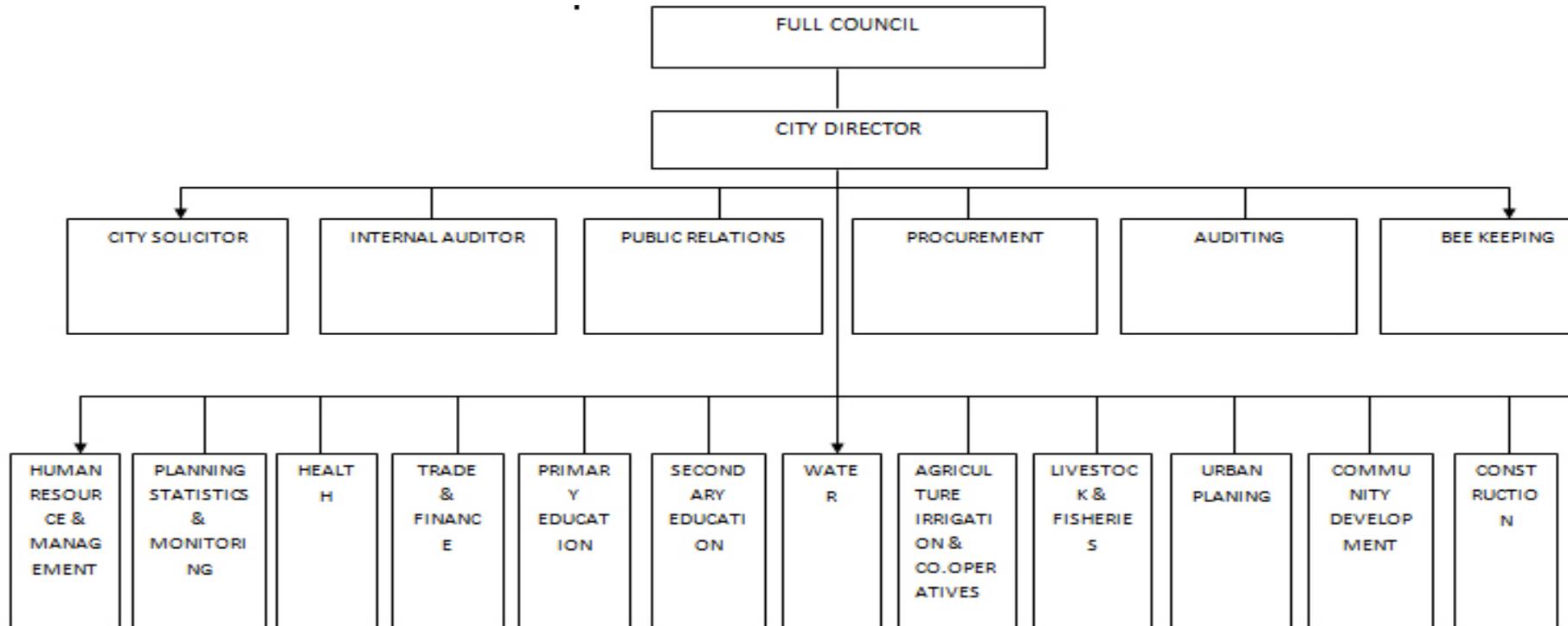


Source: Mwanza City Council (2014).

### 3.2.3 Organizational Structure of Mwanza City

Figure 3.2 presents the Organizational Structure of Mwanza City Council as follows: the city has councilors (Figure 3.2). The councilors are under the leadership of Lord Mayor who executes the City Council (Figure 3.2). However, the City Director who is assisted by heads of departments and sections does the daily administration of the city (Figure 3.2). At Ward level, there are Ward Executive Officers who are under the City Director (Figure 3.2). The City has the following 10 departments: Community Development; Co-operative, Agricultural, and Livestock; Education and Culture; Engineering; Finance and Business; Health Departments; Human Resource Development; Planning Economics, and Data Collection; Urban Planning; and Environment and Tourism (Figure 3.2). Also, there are two advisory units to the City Director, namely, Internal Auditing and Legal Services (Figure 3.2).

Figure 3.2 Organizational Structure of Mwanza City



Source: Mwanza City Council (2014).

### 3.2.4 Population Growth of Mwanza City

Mwanza has grown rapidly over the past 57 years, from a population of 11,300 in 1948, 19,900 in 1957, 223,013 in 1988 to 476,646 in 2002 (National Census Report, 2002). The current total population of Mwanza is estimated to be just above half a million people (NBS, 2012), with an annual natural growth rate of 3.2 percent, internal migrations of people from rural to urban areas of 8 percent and the birth rate of 4.6 percent (National Census Report, 2002). The population density is 134 people per kilometre square, being the second in the country after Dar es Salaam city (National Census Report, 2002). Population projections were provided for Mwanza city as follows: from 247,300 in 2007 to 281,069 in 2011 for Nyamagana district, while Ilemela was thought to have 312,049 people for 2007 and 354,661 people for 2011 (Table 3.1). Total projection for the city was 559,349 people for 2007 and 635,730 for 2011 (Table 3.1). According to population census report by National Bureau of Statistics (2012), Ilemela had 343,001 people and Nyamagana had 363,452 people.

**Table 3.1 Population projections by districts, Mwanza City (2007, 2009 and 2011)**

District	Population projection		
	2007	2009	2011
Nyamagana	247,300	263,644	281,069
Ilemela	312,049	332,674	354,661
Total	559,349	596,318	635,730

**Source:** Mwanza Regional Socio–Economic Profile (2012).

### 3.2.5 Social Services in Mwanza City

#### 3.2.5.1 Health Services and Education Institutions

Mwanza city has nursery, primary and secondary schools together with vocational training, colleges and universities (Mwanza City Council, 2014). The enrolment is increasing as the number of schools increases (*ibid.*). Data show that number of students enrolled in primary and secondary schools and universities is increasing each year (*ibid.*). Almost boys and girls are equally enrolled in public and private schools (*ibid.*). Number of students enrolled is twice like the target of enrolment (*ibid.*). However, available facilities are half of the demand (*ibid.*).

Mwanza City has six hospitals led by Bugando Medical Centre, a referral hospital, 12 health centers and 52 dispensaries (Mwanza City Council, 2014; see Table 3.2). At both Ilemela and Nyamagana Districts, the trend shows that the population is increasing while the number of doctors does not cater for such a population increase (*ibid.*).

### 3.2.5.2 Some Disease Patterns

On the other hand, malaria, Acute Respiratory Infections (A.R.I) and Urinary Tract Infections (U.T.I) are the most common epidemic diseases, which affect majority of people in Mwanza City (*ibid.*). In addition, Human Immunodeficiency Virus (HIV) infection among family members is 5.6 percent (*ibid.*). Out of 16474 people screened, 13 percent had HIV+ (*ibid.*). Furthermore, the number of *Tuberculosis mycobacterium* (TB) cases showed that the number of people affected by TB accounted for 2119 and males were affected more than females (*ibid.*).

**Table 3.2 Availability of Health Facilities by Ownership and by District, Mwanza Region 2009**

District	Type of Facility									
	Hospitals		Health Centres		Dispensaries		Health Post		Mobile /Outreach clinics	
	Govt	Non Govt	Govt	Non Govt	Govt	Non Govt	Govt	Non Govt	Govt	Non Govt
Ilemela	1	0	3	2	17	24	0	0	0	0
Nyamagana	2	3	2	5	20	20	0	0	1	0
Total	3	3	5	7	8	44	0	0	1	0

Source: Mwanza regional socio- economic profile (2010).

Key: Govt – government, Non-Govt – Non-government

### 3.2.5.3 Water Supply

Mwanza City is, to a great extent, supplied with clean water in both districts (Mwanza City Council, 2014). Availability of clean piped water is mainly from Lake Victoria (*ibid.*). Water storage is at the following locations: Capri point, Luchelele, Chakula Barafu, Kawekamo and Nyashana (*ibid.*). The piped water network in Mwanza City is about 250 kilometre squares and designed to furnish more than 380,000 people, which is 78 percent total population (*ibid.*).

Most people in rural areas depend on shallow wells, rain water and bore holes (*ibid.*). Urban dwellers depend more on lake water (*ibid.*). Almost half of the area is covered by water supply (*ibid.*). Areas coverage is increasing currently due to building new water tanks and buying new machine pumps, for example, at Nyashana, Kawekamo and Bugando areas (*ibid.*). A great part of Nyamagana District is served with tap water (*ibid.*). However, water availability varies from ward to ward (*ibid.*). Some wards are getting smooth flow of water at all times, for example, Nyamagana, Mirongo, Isamilo, Mbugani, Pamba, Igogo and Mkuyuni, while others are not yet

connected with the main tap water system (*ibid.*). Besides provision of piped tap water in most of the districts, there are also 24 shallow wells, 4 borehole wells and 23 indigenous wells serving people (*ibid.*).

**Figure 3.3 United Republic of Tanzania, Administrative Boundaries**



Source: National Bureau of Statistics (2012).

### **3.3 Sample and Sample Size**

Study population is defined as a group of individual persons, objects or items from which samples are taken for measurement (Creswell, 2003). The population is pertinent and of interest in a research context because it is a group to which the investigator hopes to generalize results from the study (ibid.).

Thus, the researcher decided to use a sample size of 390 respondents that were constituted through two research stints from 2013 to 2014 as the first stint, while the second turn was carried out from 2015 to August, 2017. The first involved 195 respondents from squatter settlements who were solely engaged in the questionnaire. The second time had 75 officials from municipal councils with 20 who comprised focus group discussions and the remaining (55) officials responded to questionnaire as justification for data collected from 2013 to 2014. In addition, 120 respondents were from squatter settlements who already participated in the second research round so as to authenticate data collected in the first research stint via focus group discussions.

In due regard, out of 390, 315 were local residents involved in questionnaires and some were involved in interviews and Focus Group Discussions. The latter included local residents plus women's groups, Civil Society Organizations (CSOs), Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs) and Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs). Moreover, the researcher administered open-ended questionnaires to Municipal officials from the following establishments/departments: Social Welfare, Culture, Community Development, Land, Environment and Urban Planning, Education and Health and an official from the Municipal Director, Ward Executive Officers and street Chairpersons.

### **3.4 Sampling Procedures**

This study employed purposive sampling procedure to obtain local government authority leaders from street, ward and municipal councils (Nyamagana and Ilemela Municipal Councils). For Municipal Council officials, the following were purposively involved in the study by virtue of their positions: Social Welfare, Culture, Community Development, Land, Environment and Urban Planning, Education and Health and an official from the Municipal Director's office. It is held that purposive sampling procedure is a criterion-based selection in which particular settings, persons or events and areas are selected deliberately in order to provide important information for the researcher (Patton, 2002). In addition, the study employed convenience sampling procedure to obtain respondents in squatter settlements due to the fact that it was hard to use simple random sampling procedure for people who were not fixed based on nature of their informal undertakings.

Moreover, simple random sampling procedure through lottery method was used to get spatial units of analysis, the wards and streets. The researcher used the existing listing of wards as well as streets and wrote them on pieces of paper. Then, the pieces of paper with names of first wards and then streets were written. Afterwards, the lot for pieces of paper with written names for wards was inserted in a box that was shaken vigorously and one of the research assistants was told to pick randomly one piece of paper after another until the required number with names for that matter was gained for each of the municipal councils under study. The same procedure was done to get streets in a particular ward in the study area.

Furthermore, at some point, the researcher employed snowball sampling procedure (non-probability sampling procedure) to obtain residents in the settlements in order to get the most maximum required number for the case study. Such measure was in conformity with an aspect suggested by Kothari (2004) that snowball sampling technique is regularly used in hidden populations, which are difficult for researchers to identify or access. In this case, some squatters seemed to be hiding due to nature of housing through tenancy and structures.

### **3.5 Data Collection Methods**

Primary data and secondary data were collected for this study. The following data collection methods were employed for the study: questionnaire, interview, observation and focus group discussion (FGD). Also, documentary review was undertaken so as to obtain secondary data.

#### **3.5.1 Questionnaire**

The questionnaire employed for data collection had open-ended questions in order to gather qualitative data from municipal council officials and ward executive officials (Appendix II). The questionnaire was deemed fit to be employed by the study for such officials due to their busy work schedules. To curb non-responses, the questionnaires were administered by the research team in person. They were not left for expected participants to respond on their own. A total of 87 questionnaires were returned from Ilemela district (Kirumba and MECCO wards) and a total of 108 questionnaires were returned from Nyamagana district [(Mabatini, Igogo and Isamilo/Nyakabungo) Table 3.3]. All other wards returned the questionnaire except Mabatini that returned 37(68.5%) thereby making a total of returned questionnaires from non-district officials account for 195 (92%) response (Table 3.3), which was sufficient enough for data analysis.

**Table 3.3 Questionnaire Distribution to Studied Wards**

Ward	Questionnaire distributed	Questionnaire returned	Questionnaire return rate
Kirumba-Kabuhoro	46	46	100%
Isamilo-Nyakabungo	31	31	100%
Igogo	40	40	100%
Mabatini	54	37	68.5%
MECCO	41	41	100%
Total	212	195	92%

Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

### 3.5.2 Interviews

In order to get first-hand in-depth data for the case study, the researcher employed semi-structured interview questions that were administered to squatter settlers and their local authority leaders, in particular, street leaders (see also Kothari, 2004). Interviews with semi-structured questions were used in order to get both qualitative data and quantitative data from squatting people (see Appendix I). The other important aspect for using such data collection method was to gather quantitative data from respondents that required their profiles like education level, age, sex, ethnic origin, religion and other attributes.

### 3.5.3 Observation

Furthermore, the study employed non-participant observation to gather data on aspects such as availability or non-availability of social services like school, health facility, availability or non-availability of clean as well as safe potable water, waste disposal/collection, sanitation, nature of household quality, landscape (lake shore or hill slope with attributes like flood zone, rocky areas) and many other attributes. Observation involved walk-over street areas and openings in different directions by the team members that comprised the principal researcher and two research assistants. That exercise was facilitated by walking through with street leaders so as to control doubts from inhabitants of the area. Physical inspection was done randomly by selecting some places because it was impossible to walk at all wards due to large sizes plus the terrain at some wards that included sloppy/hilly areas. An observation guide was prepared to capture desired attributes (see Appendix IV).

### 3.5.4 Focus Group Discussion (FGD)

Focus group discussion (FGD) is a good way to gather people from similar backgrounds or experiences so as to discuss a specific topic of interest (see also Kothari, 2004). For squatters, each Focus Group Discussion constituted twelve members separated according to sex and thus, there emerged sole groups for females and males only. For ethical considerations, each focus group was assigned a code like the following: ILFGD for Ilemela Municipal Council officials, NYFGD for

Nyamagana Municipal Council officials, MEFDG for MECCO ward focus group discussion, MBFGD for Mabatini ward Focus Group discussion (see Appendix III). Thus, each ward had two Focus Group Discussions, one for local residents (in squatter settlements) and another one for ward as well as street officials from each ward.

Selection of focus group discussion members for streets was done through purposive sampling procedure to get local authority leaders who also aided through snowball sampling procedure to get normal squatter residents for the same. Focus group discussion members were separated by sex, females from males. Information from the male groups was compared with those received from female respondents. Focus group discussions were conducted in open places but privacy was maintained. The principal researcher facilitated each discussion with assistance from two research assistants.

For municipal councils, each had a focus group discussion that comprised ten workers from purposively selected departments. The departments included the following: Social Welfare; Culture; Community Development; Land, Environment and Urban Planning; Education; Health and an official from the Municipal Director.

### **The manner the focus group discussions were conducted**

#### **3.5.4.1 Preparation**

*Recruitment of participants:* Participants were roughly of the same socio-economic group or had a similar background in relation to the issue under investigation, the problem on squatter settlement. Age and sexual composition of groups were considered so as to facilitate free discussion. As reported before, females were separated from males and adults aged beyond 35 years were considered for participation in focus group discussions. Participants were informed two days in advance and the general purpose of the focus group discussion was explained.

#### **3.5.4.2 Physical arrangements**

Communication and interaction during focus group discussions were encouraged in every way possible. Chairs were arranged in a circle. The researcher made sure that the areas were quiet, adequately lighted and there were no disturbances. The researcher tried to hold the focus group discussions in a neutral setting that encouraged participants to freely express their views (see Appendix III).

#### **3.5.4.3 Preparation of a Discussion Guide**

There was a written list of topics (themes) to be covered (see Appendix III). As already mentioned, they were formulated as a series of unstructured interview questions (see Appendix III).

#### **3.5.4.4 Conducting the session**

The research team comprised the researcher and two research assistants. One of the members of the research team (the researcher) acted as “facilitator” for the focus group discussions. The research assistants served as “recorders.”

#### **3.5.4.5 Functions of the Facilitator**

The facilitator carried out the following: introduced the sessions; introduced herself as facilitator and introduced the research assistants. Furthermore, participants were asked to introduce themselves by their names. Participants were put at ease and then the facilitator explained the purpose of the focus group discussion, the kind of information needed and the manner information had to be used (for example, provision of social services in squatter settlements, planning of a health programme, an education programme, a water sanitation programme, an environment conservation and protection programme and so on).

Then, the facilitator encouraged discussion with enthusiasm and sense of humor as well as showed interest in the groups’ ideas. The facilitator formulated questions and encouraged as many participants as possible to express their views. The facilitator reacted neutrally to both verbal and non-verbal responses.

Furthermore, the facilitator encouraged involvement by avoiding a question-and-answer session. Besides, the facilitator built rapport and emphasized on observation of non-verbal communication. In addition, the facilitator avoided being placed in the role of expert.

At the end of every focus group discussion, the research team took time to summarize, check for agreement and thanked the participants. Then, the researcher (who was facilitator) summarized the main issues brought up, checked whether or not all agreed and asked for additional comments. Then, the researcher thanked the participants and let them know that their ideas were a valuable contribution and would be used for academic purposes only, the desired doctoral degree. Besides, the researcher listened for additional comments made after the meeting (focus group discussion) was closed.

#### **3.5.4.6 Functions of the Recorders**

The recorders kept documentation of the content of discussion as well as emotional reactions and important aspects of group interaction. Assessment of the emotional tone of the meeting and the group process enabled the researcher to judge validity of information collected during the focus group discussion.

Recorded items included the following: date, time and place; names as well as characteristics of participants; general description of the group dynamics (level of participation, presence of a dominant participant, level of interest); participants’

opinions recorded as much as possible in their own words, especially for key statements; emotional aspects (for example, reluctance, strong feelings attached to certain opinions); and vocabulary used, especially definition of the term squatter. Moreover, a supplementary role of the recorder was to assist the facilitator by drawing her attention to missed comments from participants and missed topics (the recorder had a copy of the discussion guide during the focus group discussion).

For municipal officials, discussed issues included the following: general aspects in dealing with control and prevention of squatter settlements; provision of social services like water, health, education, waste collection and sanitation; deviant behaviours, plot allocation for planned areas; the plight of such settlements; and future prospects in dealing with sprawl of squatters in the city.

#### **3.5.4.7 Duration**

A focus group session lasted up to an hour and a half.

#### **3.5.4.8 Analysis of Results**

After each focus group session, the facilitator and recorders (research assistants) met to review and complete notes taken during the focus group discussions. Also it was the right moment to evaluate how the focus group discussion went so as to institute changes when facilitating future groups. Then, a full report of the discussion was prepared that reflected the discussion as completely as possible, using the participants' own words. Then, the researcher listed key statements, ideas and attitudes expressed for each topic of discussion. After the transcript of the discussion was prepared, statements were coded right away, using the left margin. Comments were written on the right margin. Furthermore, the researcher formulated additional questions for certain issues that were still unclear or controversial and included them in the next focus group discussions. Finally, the researcher summarized the data in a matrix as well as narrative form and interpreted the findings. The most useful quotations that emerged from the discussions to illustrate the main ideas were selected for presentation for this thesis.

#### **3.5.5 Documentary Review**

Documentary Review was carried out in order to obtain secondary data. Reviewed documents were obtained from Municipal Councils, Saint Augustine University of Tanzania (Malimbe campus) Main Library, Tanganyika Library Mwanza Regional Office, Zonal National Archives Office in Mwanza city and journal articles. The documents included published and unpublished materials. From Municipal Councils, documents pertaining to work reports, Urban Planning and Land policy were accessed. A check list sought for documents was prepared so as to capture all required documents. Likewise, the research permit was used where necessary for accessing resource rooms at establishments other than Saint Augustine University of Tanzania, Malimbe Campus main library.

### 3.6 Validity and Reliability

In order to realize quality of the study, the research ensured its utmost quality. The basic reason is that for quality of any research work, it is important for its results to be trusted and even be put into practical use by other users including scholars. In due regard, the aspect of the manner credible and trustworthy employed data collection methods in the research process had to be observed so as to justify reasons including extent they can yield results to be trustworthy, credible, precise and accurate for one to really believe (see also Neuman, 2006; Cohen *et. al.*, 2000; Babbie, 2010). Babbie (2010) holds that such measures mean that employed data collection methods in the process must yield the intended and expected data so as to lead the researcher to precisely answer his/her questions. Therefore, validity and reliability ought to receive an utmost treatment in both quantitative and qualitative research works (see also Bashir *et. al.*, 2008). According to Cohen and colleagues (2007), validity of the research is related to truthful conclusions, while Babbie (2010) holds the view that reliability is related to replicability of results from the study.

Reliability is defined by Babbie (2010) as quality part of a tool, which makes it possible to yield the same results each time it is used in different measurements of the same phenomenon. In a further extension, Cohen and colleagues (2007) argue that reliability is stability as well as consistency of the measurement used, which ensures that each time it is used it is capable of yielding the same results. Thus, for one to be sure that results are reliable, repeatability should be observed in his/her study (*ibid.*). However, it has to be noted that conception of reliability in quantitative research approach differs markedly from that in qualitative research approach (see also Cohen *et. al.*, 2007). Some scholars contend use of reliability in qualitative research approach (for example, Golafshani, 2003; Winter, 2000).

Cohen and co-workers (2007) argue that in quantitative research approach, normally, reliability focuses on consistency, accuracy, predictability, equivalence, replicability, concurrence, descriptive and causal potential. In regard to quantitative research approach, three types of reliability are identified, namely, reliability as stability to mean measurement of consistency over time and samples; reliability as equivalence, which refers to equivalent/alternative forms of the same instrument as well as inter-rater reliability; and reliability as internal consistency meaning the split-half reliability (*ibid.*). But, in qualitative research approach, besides accuracy, the following terminologies are proposed instead of reliability: fairness, dependability, comprehensiveness, respondent validation, checkability, empathy, uniqueness, explanatory and descriptive potential as well as confirmability (*ibid.*). There are various ways to ensure reliability in research. Babbie (2010) lists three common ones, namely, use of Test-retest method, use of Split-half method and use of established/tested questions/measures from either standardized formats or other questions applied in former research endeavours.

Cohen and colleagues (2007) report that former versions of explanations regarding validity were mostly based on the view that it is in essence a demonstration that a particular instrument measures what it is intended to measure, but as of recent, literature holds that there are different forms of validity, depending on the research tradition one decides to employ. Such forms are more appealing than the earlier understanding (Cohen *et. al.*, 2007). Thus, in qualitative data, validity could be addressed through honesty, depth, richness and scope of obtained data, the approached participants, the extent of triangulation and researcher's objectivity (Winter, 2000).

Kothari (2004) defines validity as the term connoting a measure that accurately reflects what exactly is intended to measure. It is whether the measure is truthful or indeed genuine (see also Jackson, 2009). Thus, it implies that if the plan is to measure influence of squatters in driving changes in places to squat, the researcher must be sure that the tool used is going to exactly measure the influence of squatting variables not otherwise. It was argued by Maxwell (1992) that qualitative research approach encompasses the following five types of validity: descriptive validity- the factual accuracy or truth of what happened (it can be related to objectivity of the account); interpretive validity-the extent to which the meanings, interpretations, terms, intentions that situations and events are captured in research and within the real situation context; theoretical validity, which means the extent to which abstract issues (constructs) are explained by the research, that is, whether the theory generated can be used to understand other similar conditions; and evaluative validity- this is validity involving an evaluative framework to the objects of study as to whether in an account, an action made was justifiable or not. Cohen and colleagues (2007) maintain that in both qualitative and quantitative research approaches, internal and external validity are addressed.

Furthermore, in refinement of data collection methods before applying them to the full-swing study, a pilot test of data collection methods is important such that it may be used for content validation (Bowden *et. al.*, 2002). Such measure is significant in order to identify and rectify shortcomings in the data collection methods and get them addressed well before they are fully used for data collection in the study (*ibid.*). Several benefits pilot tests help through a possibility of refining data collection methods as well as predicting as to whether or not results are really going to be meaningful and reflect the real context of the study (Ndenje, 2010). In addition, pre-testing helps to ensure validity and reliability of results (Babbie, 2010; Bowden *et. al.*, 2002).

Thus, in order to ensure validity and reliability of data collection methods, the researcher used triangulation through multiple data collection methods as already presented in section on data collection methods. Kothari (2004) as well as Cohen and

colleagues (2007) hold that no single data collection method is sufficient in research to warrant validity. In addition, the researcher carried out a pilot test at Mabatini squatter settlements in Nyamagana Municipal area, Mwanza city. Afterwards, results from the pilot test were presented at Saint Augustine University of Tanzania and then moderated by colleagues. Then the data collection methods were fine-tuned ready for actual full-fledged research endeavours.

### **3.7 Data Analysis Plan**

Both qualitative and quantitative data were analyzed. Data analysis in qualitative research provides ways of discerning, examining, comparing, contrasting and interpreting meaningful patterns or themes in research results (Kothari, 2004). In quantitative analysis, numbers and what they stand for are the material of analysis.

In this study, collected data especially from the survey were cleaned. They were initially spot-checked for errors, corrected and then edited. The process involved looking for wrong codes, omissions, logical inconsistencies and improbabilities. The collected qualitative data were sorted according to thematic areas and then were entered in a matrix. Then, such data in a matrix were subjected to content analysis. Results include transcribed data and narrative reports. For quantitative data analysis, the researcher sorted, coded and analyzed descriptively.

Quantitative data analysis started by proof reading characteristics of the sampled population according to demographic variables like age and marital status, their socio-economic background, which included education level, type of occupation, ethnicity, place of origin before migration to Mwanza city and duration of stay in the settlement. Results are presented using frequency distribution tables, histograms, maps and photographs. Cross-tabulations were carried out to find measures of association between variables.

### **3.8 Ethical Considerations**

The study was conducted after obtaining research clearance from the Vice Chancellor, Saint Augustine University of Tanzania. Then, with the research clearance, particular permission was sought from the Mwanza Regional Administrative Secretary (RAS) as well as District Administrative Secretaries (DAS) in both Nyamagana as well as Ilemela Municipal authorities. Before visiting respondents' areas at different wards, permission letters from RAS and DAS were presented to Ward Executive Officers of respective visited wards. The Ward Executive Officers then introduced the researchers to street chairpersons and Street Executive Officers. The team received maximum cooperation from all leaders at different levels in the two municipal areas. To maintain confidentiality and anonymity, focus group discussions were coded as follows: ILFGD for Ilemela Municipal Council officials, NYFGD for Nyamagana Municipal Council officials, MEFDG for MECCO ward focus group discussion, MBFGD for Mabatini ward Focus Group discussion. For respondents, names were not written and instead, codes

were used, for example, ME with a serial number MECCO for ward respondents and that followed sue for the rest of wards with prefixes denoting wards.

## CHAPTER FOUR

### RESULTS I: ANALYSIS OF SOCIAL STRUCTURE

#### 4 Introduction

Respondents' demographic characteristics is the description of population profile defined by characteristics such as sex, age, ethnic group, education level, religious affiliation, marital status and the like in that they are necessary for understanding social dynamics of the studied sample. For example, such description can be of aid in comprehending historical patterns and comparative aspects in research.

The said respondents' demographic characteristics are furnished in this chapter through the following sections: respondents' distribution by gender, age group, education levels, religious affiliation, ethnic group, marital status, house ownership or rent and employment status. Finally, a synthesis of the whole chapter is provided. The rationale behind presentation of analysis of social structure is that most demographers as well as other social scientists (for example, Hossain, 2001) have particular interest in age-sex composition of populations because most of socio-economic characteristics like dependency ratio, labour supply, marital status, migration and social services such as schools, dispensaries, housing and transport depend on demographic characteristics.

According to NBS and Maro (2005), age and sex are the most basic as well as important characteristics of a population because they are used for a wide range of planning and administrative purposes. For example, determination of population segments qualified for voting, school enrolments, pensions and so on (*ibid.*). Also they are major determinants in movement of people or migration, for example, proponents such as Adepoju (2001) argue that people of middle age have the tendency of migrating more than young children or elderly population. In addition, males tend to migrate more than women (*ibid.*). Adepoju (2001: 56) reinforced that, "All too often we tend to concentrate on economic and political aspects and policies, ignoring the equally (more) important demographic dimension." All respondents' demographic characteristics are used at appropriate parts in understanding squatter settlements of Mwanza city in discussion presented in chapter nine of this thesis. Thus, this chapter presents respondents' demographic characteristics that will be an opener/starter towards deciphering the issue of rural-urban migration in a proper socio-demographic perspective.

#### 4.1 Respondents' Distribution by Gender

Gender is an important variable among social factors such that as a major dimension of social difference as well as cultural norms, it was assessed so as to understand varying extents of status of women and men in squatter settlements in Mwanza city. The variable was used in discussion in chapter nine of this thesis in order to portray the situation of women and men in the studied areas measured against push-pull factors that enhanced them to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas. The analysed

push-pull factors also helped to distinguish presence or absence of women's vulnerability in places of origin, the rural areas and/or places of settlements, the squatter areas of Mwanza city. In order to understand respondents' distribution by gender in the study areas, the following characteristics were also analysed: age group, education levels, religious affiliation, ethnic group, marital status, house ownership or rent and employment status. Moreover, through employed theoretical grounding, gender analysis was used in showing men and women or girls' livelihoods in squatter settlements in Mwanza city.

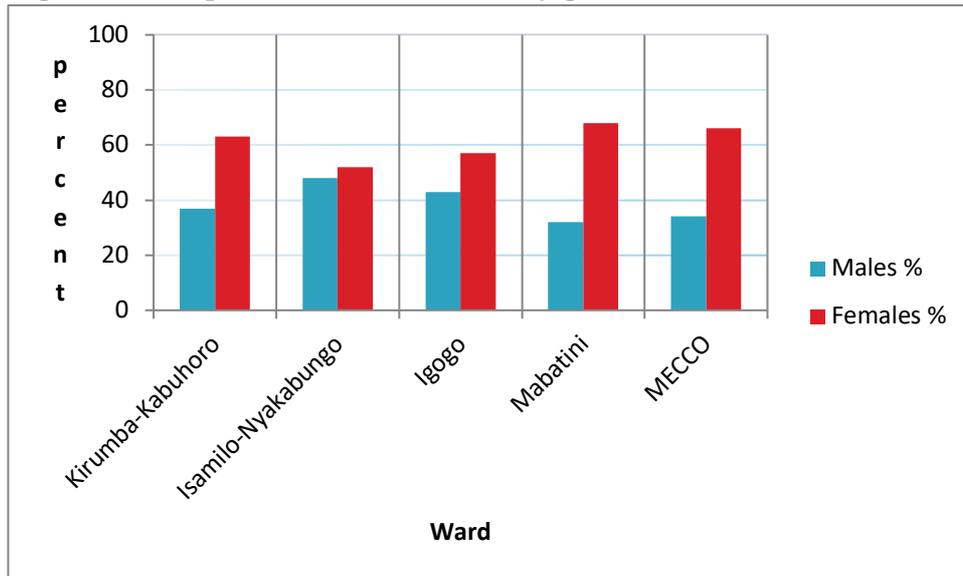
An obvious depiction pertaining to degree of those who migrated by gender was witnessed in the study areas. It was disclosed that out of 195 respondents, more females (61.2%) than males (38.8%) migrated to studied squatter areas in Mwanza city (see Table 4.1; Figure 4.1). The general population trends in sex ratio for the country was reported to be more females than men from 1988 to 2012 in the population census carried out in 2012 (NBS, 2013: 10). Going over reported population distribution by gender for Mwanza city based on population census of 2012, the city had more females, accounting for a total of 363,923 than males who were recorded to be 342, 530 (NBS, 2013).

**Table 4.1 Respondents' distribution by gender**

District	Ward	Males %	Females %	Total %
ILEMELA	Kirumba-Kabuhoro	37	63	100
	Isamilo-Nyakabungo	48	52	100
NYAMAGANA	Igogo	43	57	100
	Mabatini	32	68	100
	MECCO	34	66	100
TOTAL		38.8	61.2	100

Source: Field Data (2013/2014)

At all studied wards, more women than men respondents were recorded to squatter areas in Mwanza shown as follows: Kirumba had 63 percent; Isamilo accounted for 52 percent; Igogo scored at 57 percent; Mabatini had 68 percent and MECCO had 66 percent (Table 4.1; Figure 4.1). Thus, a similar depiction was shown in the said population census of 2012 whereby there were more women than men in the country including Mwanza city as well as Mwanza region.

**Figure 4.1 Respondents' distribution by gender**

Source: Field Data (2013/2014)

Additional respondents' characteristics were analysed in the study whereby distribution by age group was measured as presented in the subsequent sub-section of this thesis.

#### 4.2 Respondents' Distribution by Age Groups

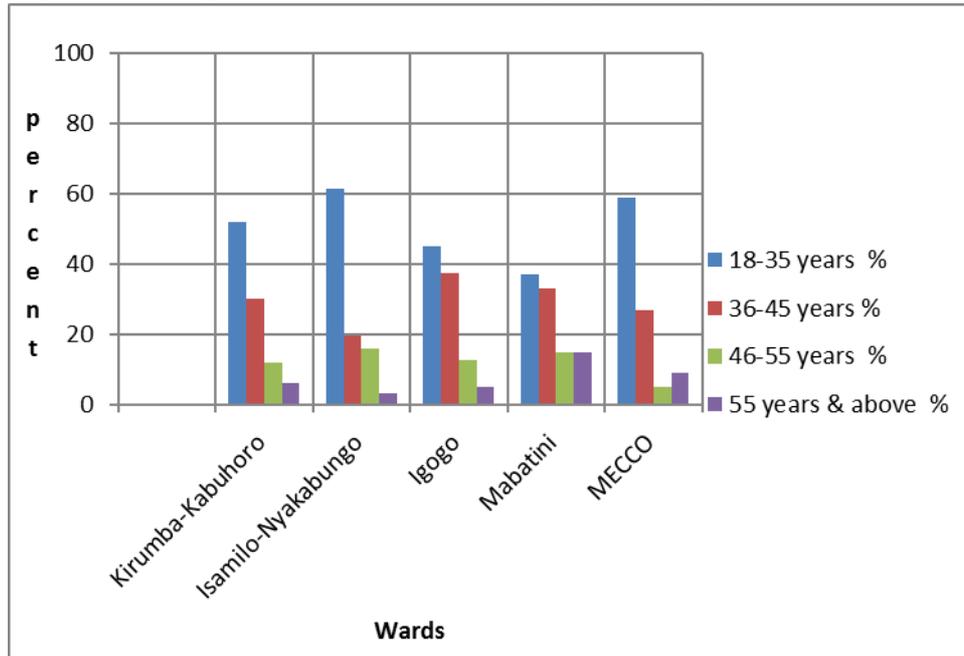
For further understanding demographic characteristics of study subjects in regard to squatting in Mwanza city, this study sought to analyze respondents' age groups. Age group was analysed in order to see the actual pattern or magnitude of population segment that left from villages and settled in city squatter areas. Such portrayal helped to distinguish various attributes subjected through employed analytical pathways, in particular, theoretical stances such as rural-urban continuum, push-pull factors, anomie theory pertaining to deviance or non-deviance behaviour patterns and formation of structural settlements through zoning (vide concentric theory). After all, distribution of age group was important to compare with the country's last census carried out in 2012 that depicted more youth than all other age groups living in the country (NBS, 2013). The analysis was undertaken by setting up age groups as follows: 18 to 35 years, 36 to 45 years, 46 to 55 years as well as 55 and above years (see Table 4.2; Figure 4.2).

**Table 4.2 Respondents' distribution by age group**

DISTRICT	WARD	18-35 years %	36-45 years %	46-55 years %	55 years & above %	Total %
ILEMELA	Kirumba-Kabuhoro	52	30	12	6	100
	Isamilo-Nyakabungo	61.3	19.4	16.1	3.2	100
NYAMAGANA	Igogo	45	37.5	12.5	5	100
	Mabatini	37	33	15	15	100
	MECCO	59	27	5	9	100
TOTAL		50	30	12	8	100

Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

Out of 43,625,354 people reported in census for 2012, computed counts for youth aged between 15 and 35 years of age in Tanzania accounted for almost 35 percent (URT, 2014). For Mwanza region, such population segment was reported to be 34.3 percent (URT, 2014). However, it has to be recalled that demographic characteristics for this study did not embrace population census. The submitted population data for Tanzania help to illuminate population counts for youth as defined in the country (URT, 2014). Thus, computed frequencies depict respondents who participated in the study. Results from the presented population census of 2012 serve to depict population counts in the country. For respondents who participated in this study, more (50%) youth aged between 18 and 35 years migrated and settled in squatter areas than those 55 and above years old who accounted for 6 percent followed by 30 percent aged between 36 and 45 years (Table 4.2; Figure 4.2).

**Figure 4.2 Respondents' Distribution by Age Group**

Source: Field Data (2013/2014)

Furthermore, education level as another respondents' characteristic was measured in this study and their submissions provided in the following sub-section.

### 4.3 Respondents' Education Levels

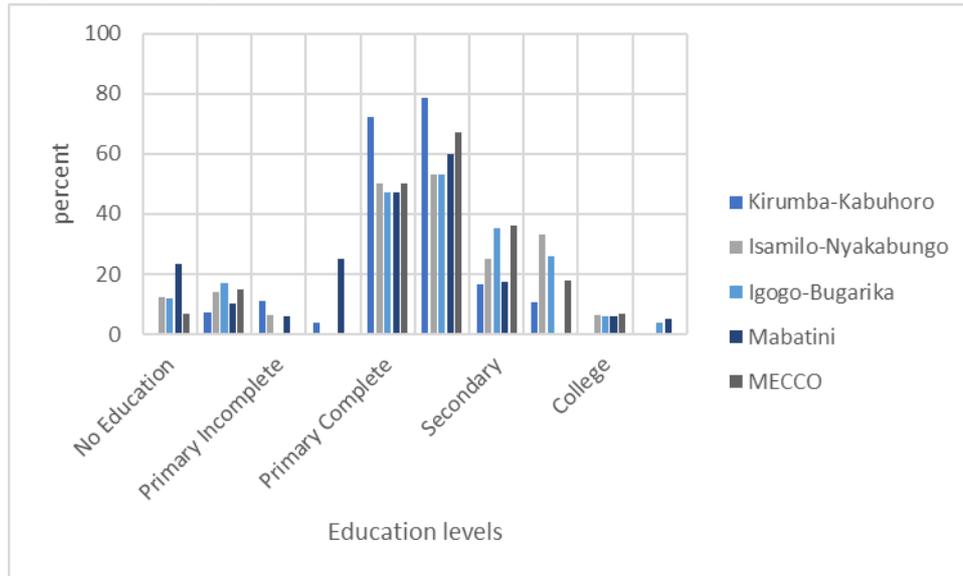
This study strived to analyse respondents' education levels so as to discern the most numerous and the least numerous population segments in that regard involved in squatting in Mwanza city. Due to diverse education levels, the data set for education levels was also big such that it necessitated for segregated presentation of the same together with their distribution by gender. Table 4.3 and Figure 4.3 provide results from the study pertaining to respondents' education levels. The variable was equally important for this study so as to understand education levels of people who migrated in the squatter areas. In addition, it was important to understand whether or not education was among push or pull factors for people to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas. In other words, the researcher wanted to identify whether some migrated to Mwanza city squatters in quest for education or not. After all, others migrate in urban areas in search for jobs based on their education levels.

It was exposed that majority of respondents involved in the study had no formal education and elementary (primary) education (Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). Results further exhibited more female than males to that category (see Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). Those with college education were the least in the studied areas and females were less than males (Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). Discussion on respondents' education levels is provided for in chapter nine of this thesis.

**Table 4.3 Respondents' Education Levels**

Ward	No Education %		Primary Incomplete %		Primary Complete %		Secondary %		College %		Total %	
	Male	Female	Male	Female	M	F	M	F	M	F	M	F
Kirumba-Kabuhoro	-	7.1	11.11	3.6	72.22	78.6	16.67	10.7	-	-	100	100
Isamilo-Nyakabungo	12.5	14	6.25	-	50	53	25	33	6.25	-	100	100
Igogo-Bugarika	11.7	17	-	-	47.1	53	35.3	26	5.9	4	100	100
Mabatini	23.5	10	5.9	25	47.1	60	17.6	-	5.9	5	100	100
MECCO	7	15	-	-	50	67	36	18	7	-	100	100
Total	11	12	5	5.7	53	62.3	26	18	5	2	100	100

Source: Field Data (2013/2014)

**Figure 4.3 Respondents' Education Levels**

Source: Field Data (2013/2014)

Key: M – Male, F – Female, No Educ – No Education, Primary Inc – Primary Education Incomplete  
 KEY: M-NEC, Male no education; F-NEC, Female- no education; M-PI Male primary education incomplete, F-PI female primary education incomplete, M-S Male secondary education, F-S female secondary education, M-C male college and F-C female college.

From an anthropological perspective, this study sought to further detect respondents involved in the study in regard to their religious affiliation.

#### 4.4 Religious Affiliations

Currently, Tanzania, like other countries in Africa, has the following three main religious affiliations: traditional or ethnic religions, Islam and Christianity. It is true that many adherents to the two religions, Islam and Christian, still observe syncretism with their traditional beliefs. In addition, African traditional religions offered new converts to Islam and later on, due to historical legends, Christian faithful. Presence of religious denominations was also examined through theoretical lenses employed in this study so as to determine the manner they dealt with prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city as an obligation in living with the faithful congregations. Such aspects are properly presented in chapter submitting discussion of this thesis.

This study examined respondents' religious affiliation so as to discern further demographic characteristics of squatter settlers in Mwanza city. Religious denominations were reported at a general pattern rather than segregated religious sects. They included Christians, Moslems and believers in African traditional religious sects (see Table 4.4; Figure 4.4).

**Table 4.4 Respondents' Distribution by Religious Affiliation**

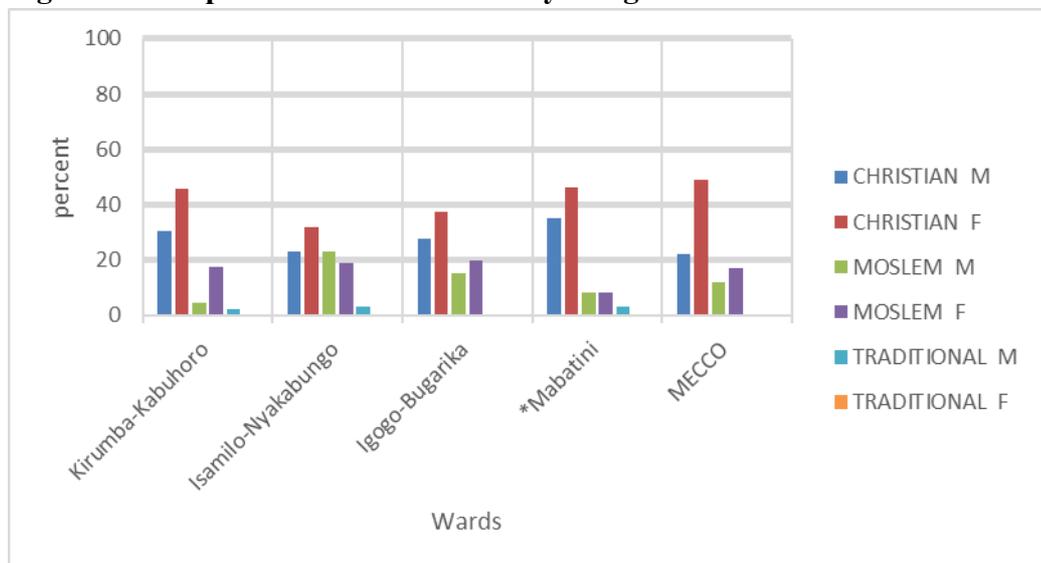
DISTRICT	WARD	CHRISTIAN %		MOSLEM %		TRADITIONAL %		SUB-TOTAL %		GRAND TOTAL %
		M	F	M	F	M	F	M	F	
ILEMELA	Kirumba-Kabuhoro	30.4	45.7	4.3	17.4	2.2	-	37	63	100
	Isamilo-Nyakabungo	23	32	23	19	3	-	49	51	100
NYAMAGANA	Igogo-Bugarika	27.5	37.5	15	20	-	-	42.5	57.5	100
	*Mabatini	35	46	8	8	3	-	46	54	100
	MECCO	22	49	12	17	-	-	34	66	100
Total		27.58	42.04	12.46	16.28	1.64		41.68	58.32	100

\*Mabatini ward had 17 non-response participants on religious affiliation

Source: Field Data (2013/2014)

It was revealed from this study that only three (1.64%) males believed/practiced African traditional religions (Table 4.4; Figure 4.4). Respondents in the study area constituted more Christian believers (27.58% males and 42.04% females) than Moslems who constituted 12.46 percent males and 16.28 percent females (Table 4.4; Figure 4.4). It has to be noted that such status does not necessarily imply that squatter areas in Mwanza city were constituted by more Christian believers than Moslem believers. It was a chance for having respondents but did not represent a count like a population census. Moreover, for reasons best known by government authorities, even the last country's census did not include the factor of religious denominations among other factors like ethnicity (see Census Country Report by NBS, 2012).

**Figure 4.4 Respondents' Distribution by Religious Affiliation**



Source: Filed Data (2013/2014)

Also, equally important to other examined participants' demographic characteristics included respondents' ethnic group origin. The character is succinctly presented in the following sub-section.

#### **4.5 Distribution of Respondents by their Ethnic Origins**

Tanzania as a country has over 120 ethnic groups dispersed all over in rural as well as urban settings (see NBS, 2012). This study sought to distinguish respondents in the studied squatter areas in Mwanza city by their ethnic group affiliations (Tables 4.5; Figure 4.5). As long as ethnic groups have known places of origin, such variable was useful to determine squatters' places of domicile and distance from such places to Mwanza city as a result of push and pull factors to squat in Mwanza city. In other words, the attribute helped to identify the manner migrants were distributed in the squatter areas by assessing whether or not there were specific areas denoting particular ethnic groups.

**Table 4.5 Respondents' Distribution by Ethnic Groups (N=195)**

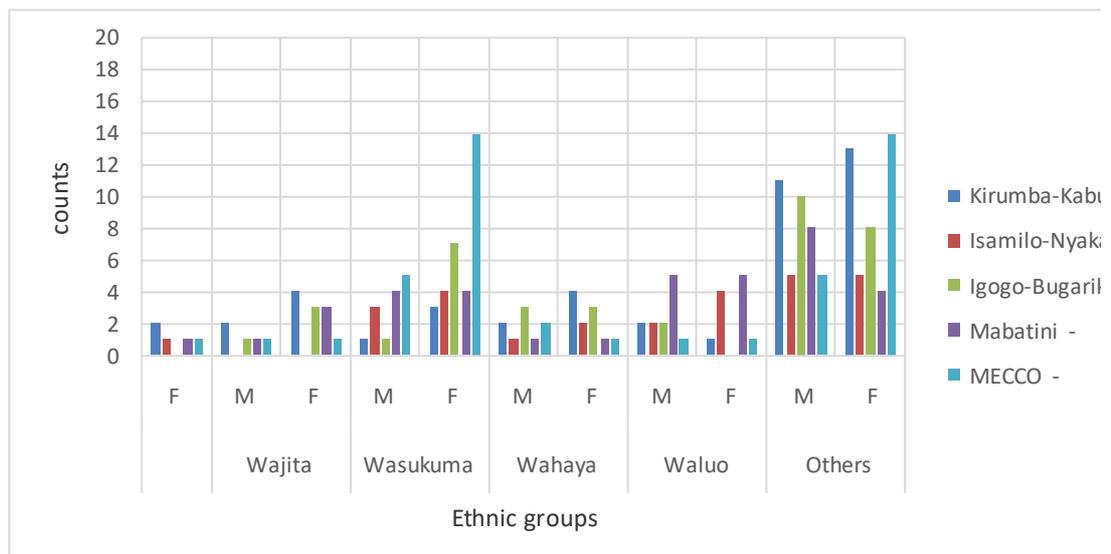
DISTRICT	WARD	Wakerewe		Wajita		Wasukuma		Wahaya		Waluo		Others		Grand Total	
		M	F	M	F	M	F	M	F	M	F	M	F	M	F
ILEMELA	Kirumba-Kabuhoro	1	2	2	4	1	3	2	4	2	1	11	13	19	27
	Isamilo-Nyakabungo	-	1	-	-	3	4	1	2	2	4	5	5	11	16
NYAMAGANA	Igogo-Bugarika	1	-	1	3	1	7	3	3	2	-	10	8	18	21
	Mabatini	-	1	1	3	4	4	1	1	5	5	8	4	19	18
	MECCO	-	1	1	1	5	14	2	1	1	1	5	14	14	32
Total		2	5	5	11	14	32	9	11	12	11	39	44	81	114

Source: Field Data (2013/2014)

Table 4.5 indicates that Wasukuma outnumbered (a total of 46 with 14 males and 32 females) those who have settled in squatter areas in Mwanza city (Table 5; Figure 5). According to Mwanza City Council (2014), Wasukuma ethnic group are among dominant ethnic groups residing in Mwanza. Also, Wasukuma are the main inhabitants of Mwanza region (for location please see Figure 3.3) and the largest ethnic group in the country (Nyang'aro, 2004: 7). According to Nyang'aro (2004: 7),

“The country has 120 separate ethnic groups, the majority of whom are Bantu speakers. The largest ethnic group is the Wasukuma who number roughly 4 million and represent 13% of the total population. Other large ethnic groups include: the Nyamwezi, Chagga, Haya, Hehe, Nyakyusa, and Makonde. In spite of their relative numerical superiority *vis-à-vis* other groups in Tanzania, each of the remaining large groups represent fewer than 5% of the population.”

**Figure 4.5 Respondents' Distribution by Ethnic Groups**



Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

Further respondents' distribution by their ethnic origins included eight Wanyamwezi with three males (one each was encountered from Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward, Isamilo-

Nyakabungo ward as well as MECCO ward and five females (2 from Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward, 2 also at MECCO and 1 from Mabatini). They all originate from Tabora region in north central Tanzania. Also, others included four Wahangaza from Kagera region along Northwestern parts of Tanzania (1 male from Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward and 3 females whereby 2 were encountered at Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward and 1 from MECCO ward). Waha from Kigoma region were represented by 5 males and 9 females. Their original locations (regions) can be identified from Figure 3.3.

Furthermore, Wazanaki from Mara region were two with one male from Igogo-Bugarika ward and one female from Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward. The least of all encountered ethnic groups included the following: all three females were Wachagga (1 each from Kirumba-Kabuhoro, Isamilo-Nyakabungo and Igogo-Bugarika wards); two Wapogoro males (1 each from Kirumba-Kabuhoro, Isamilo-Nyakabungo and Mabatini wards); one female Mpogoro (from Igogo-Bugarika ward); one male belonging to Wangoni from Ruvuma region in Southern Tanzania residing at Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward; at Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward, one from Wakwaya (Mara region); two male Wahehe (each found at Kirumba and Igogo wards); and at Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward the researcher encountered one male belonging to Wagogo ethnic group from Dodoma in central Tanzania (for locations of their origins see Figure 3.3).

Further minority groups were noted from the following ethnic groups: Wanyasa (from Southern Tanzania encountered one female at Mabatini ward), Wanyakyusa from Mbeya region (one male from Mabatini ward), one female of Wabondei ethnic group from Tanga region (Isamilo-Nyakabungo ward) and Wazigua (2 males as well as 1 female from Isamilo-Nyakabungo ward) from Handeni district Tanga region (Figure 3.3 from their places of domicile).

In addition, Mwanza showed a further mix of ethnic groups that included one person from each of the following: Waikizu from Mara region, Wasimbiti from Mara region as well Wabena from Njombe region and one Mzinza from Sengerema district in Mwanza region (for locations of their origins see Figure 3.3).

Mwanza city squatter areas still exhibited additional ethnic groups though with minimum numbers ranging from one to two from the following ethnic groups: Wafipa (from Katavi region); and Wanata from Mara region (see Figure 3.3 for their locations of origin).

Further analysed respondents' demographic profile involved marital status. This is presented in the subsequent sub-section.

#### **4.6 Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status**

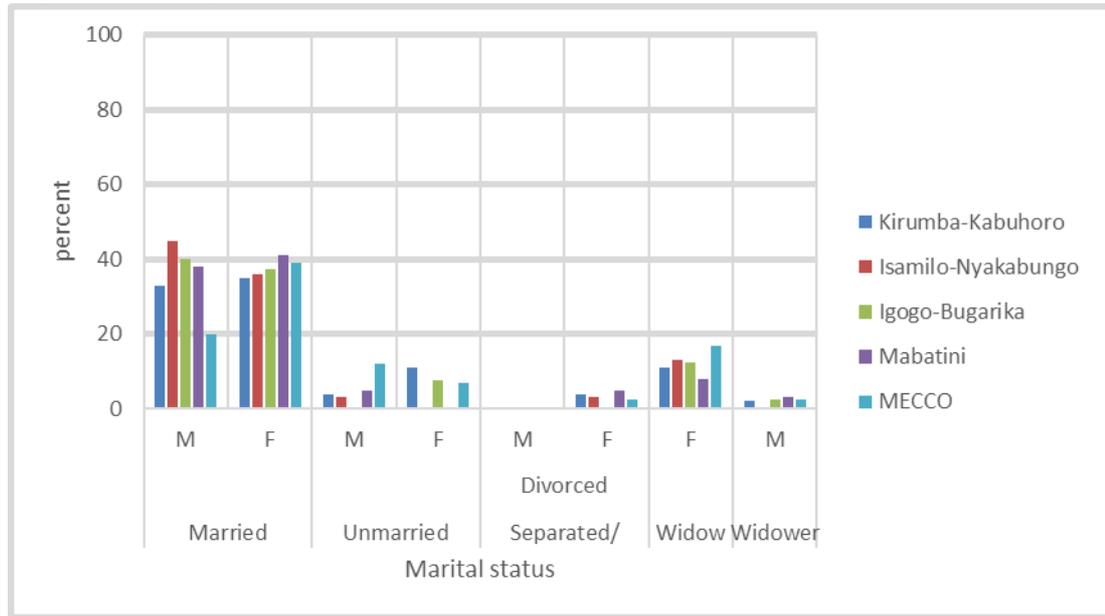
Before Christianity, most Africans practiced marriage of a man to multiple women. With Islam that was initially observed along coastal areas about five centuries ago, such marriage patterns were never changed. Later on, with Christianity in the nineteenth century, marriage started to involve one man and one woman at a time (monogamy). Tanzania went through similar societal transformations regarding religious faith through conversion from African traditional religions to the two main religious sects, Islam and Christian. As already stated in sub-section on religious affiliations, people's faith includes a blend of traditional customs and norms. In addition, some people observing African traditional religions, like Moslems, allow a man to be married to more than one woman at a time (polygyny), while polyandry, marriage of one woman to several husbands, is non-existent in Tanzania. Moreover, marriage as an institution has its ups and downs such that it was examined among other demographic characteristics so as to determine whether or not marital status contributed to people's migration, both females and males, into squatter areas in Mwanza city.

Thus, this study further explored respondents' marital status in Mwanza city squatter areas as an important demographic characteristic for comprehending patterns of squatters by their marital status. It was revealed from the study that 35.2 percent men and 37.7 percent women were married, while there were 12.3 percent widows and 1.98 percent widowers (Table 4.6; Figure 4.6). It was further disclosed from the study that there were 4.82 percent and 5 percent unmarried men and women, respectively (Table 4.6; Figure 4.6). Marriage is the same in each ethnic group of one man to one woman over 120 ethnic groups in the country. That has been intensified by Christian religious denominations. However, Moslems adhere to their Koran laws whereby polygamy is allowed. A similar pattern is also evidenced to those who observe their African cultural traditions that allow polygamy across the country.

**Table 4.6 Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status**

DISTRICT	WARD	Married %		Unmarried %		Separated/ Divorced %		Widow %	Widower %	Sub-Total %		Grand Total %
		M	F	M	F	M	F	F	M	M	F	
ILEMELA	Kirumba-Kabuhoro	33	35	4	11	-	4	11	2	39	61	100
	Isamilo-Nyakabungo	45	36	3	-	-	3	13	-	48	52	100
NYAMAGANA	Igogo-Bugarika	40	37.5	-	7.5	-	-	12.5	2.5	43	57	100
	Mabatini	38	41	5	-	-	5	8	3	46	54	100
	MECCO	20	39	12.1	7	-	2.4	17	2.4	34	66	100
Total		35.2	37.7	4.82	5		3	12.3	1.98	42	58	100

Source: Field Data (2013/2014)

**Figure 4.6 Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status**

Source: Field data (2013/2014)

Concomitant with people's life ways there encompasses aspects of habitation for people different from non-human organisms. House ownership or house rent featured to be among participants' demographic characteristics that merited for being determined in this study. In due regard, the following sub-section provides patterns of house ownership or house rent by migrants into Mwanza city squatter areas.

#### 4.7 Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership

The study further strived to get information pertaining to house ownership or rent by people living in squatter settlements in Mwanza city (see Table 4.7; Figure 4.6). Such information is important for many aspects including knowing people living in squatters' affordability/capability to own or rent houses/rooms. Also such information was critical in determining about possible forces or motives behind that contributed for people's migration from rural areas to squatter areas in Mwanza city. The variable was also used to see patterns of house ownership or rent by different people based on gender distribution as submitted through discussion presented in chapter nine of this thesis.

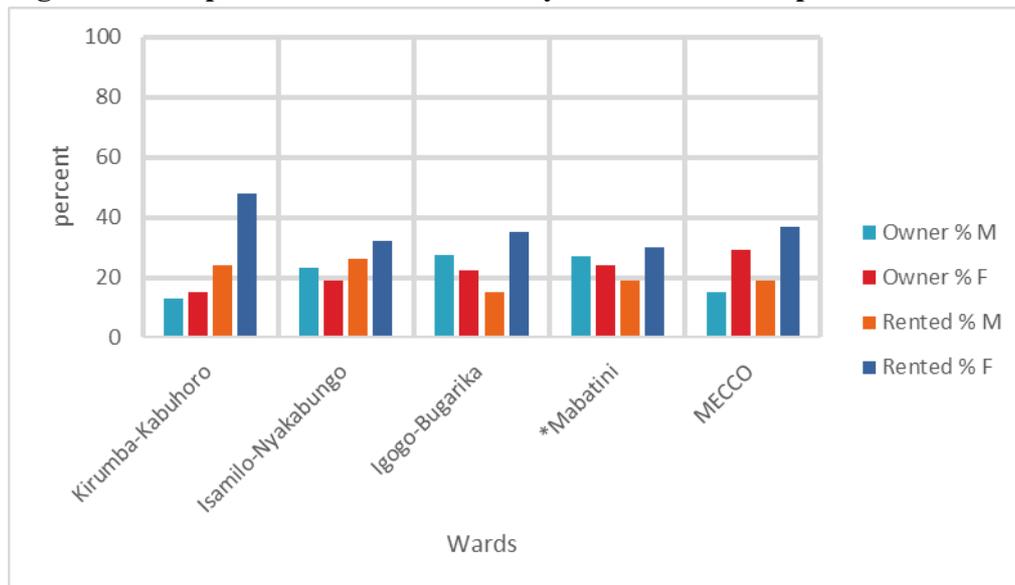
**Table 4.7 Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership**

District	WARD	Owner %		Rented %		Total %
		M	F	M	F	
ILEMELA	Kirumba-Kabuhoro	13	15	24	48	100
	Isamilo-Nyakabungo	23	19	26	32	100
NYAMAGANA	Igogo-Bugarika	27.5	22.5	15	35	100
	*Mabatini	27	24	19	30	100
	MECCO	15	29	19	37	100
Total		21	22	21	36	100

Source: Field Data (2013/2014)

\*Mabatini ward had 17 non-response participants on house ownership

It was revealed from the study that 21 percent men and 22 percent women stayed in houses they owned (Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). In addition, it was indicated from the study that 21 percent men and 36 percent women stayed in rented houses (Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). MECCO ward had more female owned houses than the rest of the wards followed by men from Igogo ward (see Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). Then, more females rented houses from Kirumba ward than the rest of the studied wards followed by females living in MECCO ward (Table 4.7; Figure 4.7).

**Figure 4.7 Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership**

Source: Field Data (2013/2014)

The final demographic feature that was analysed involved respondents' employment status. Like other analysed respondents' demographic features, it helped to determine

its pattern in the study area including aspects whether or not it was among push or pull factors that enhanced people's migration to Mwanza squatter areas.

#### 4.8 Respondents' Employment Status

Finally, participants' employment status was analysed in order to underpin whether or not it was among driving forces away from villages or an encouragement for people to move into urban areas and eventually, lived in squatter areas. In other words, such decision was analysed in order to determine whether or not employment, in a public or private entity, whether involved in a formal or an informal undertaking and the like, was a factor necessary to see the manner people migrated to urban areas to eke out their living.

The study areas had people employed in the public sector as well as private sector. Those employed in the public sector in the study areas included teachers at both primary (elementary) and secondary schools; health workers (dispensaries, health centres, hospitals as well as hospitals); and professional together with non-skilled workers at Ilemela as well as Nyamagana Municipal Councils. Others were employed in private establishments like fish processing plants, Mwanza Textile Mills, Nyanza Bottling Company, commuter buses in the city, taxi operations, motorcycle operations, tricycle operations, women's hair salons, men's hair salons and so on.

In another vein, self-employment involved people's activities that included small businesses. People in the study area were mostly busy as fish mongers, they were involved in sale of used clothes as well as shoes, sale of fruits and vegetables, part-time maids (house girls), waste collectors, operators of small shops and food vending (commonly known in Kiswahili as *mama lishe* and literally translated as mother for sale of food/nutrition). It has to be noted that house girls are house workers (young girls, mostly teenagers) mostly involved with house chores instead of mother houses. They are mostly employed by people working in either public offices or private establishments.

**Table 4.8 Respondents' Employment Status**

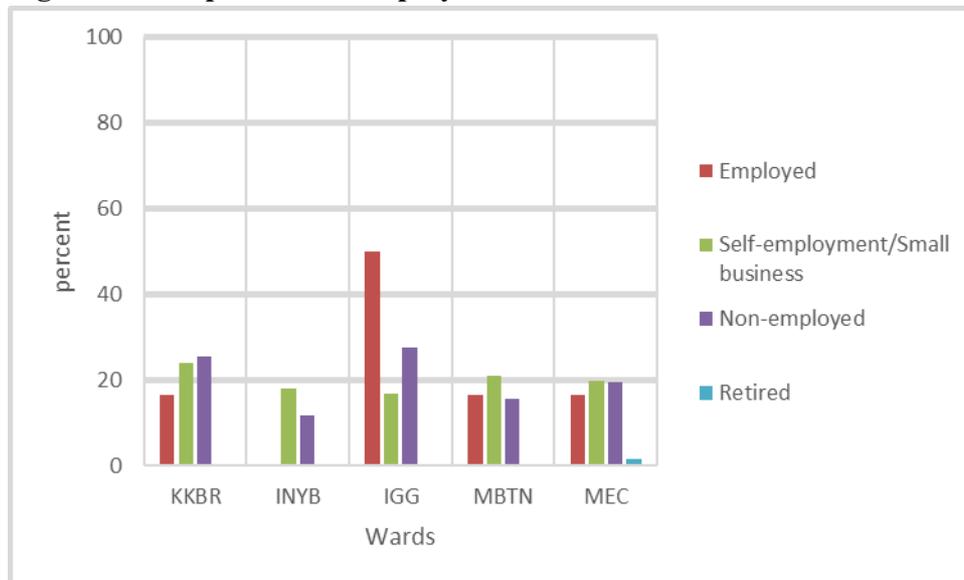
Occupation	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total %
Employed	16.6	-	50	16.7	16.7	100
Self-employment/Small business	24	18	17	21	20	100
Non-employed	25.5	11.8	27.5	15.6	19.6	100
Retired	-	-	-	-	1.5	100
Total	22	15	31.5	17	14.5	100

Source: Field data (2013/2014)

Key: KKBR- Kirumba, Kabuhoro; INYB, Isamilo-Nyakabungo; IGG, Igogo; MBTN, Mabatini; and MEC, MECCO.

Results from the study disclosed that persons employed in public or private sector were only 6 (3.1%) of the total respondents (Table 4.8). Self-employment accounted for 135(69.2%) of all respondents, almost three-quarters of the sampled respondents in the study area (see Table 4.8; Figure 4.8). Self-employment meant being involved in sale of fish (fish mongers), while others were involved in sale of used clothes as well as shoes, sale of fruits and vegetables, part-time maids (house girls), waste collectors, operators of small shops and food vending. A bit over a quarter (26.2%) of all participants in the study area disclosed that they lived in squatter areas without any kind of employment (Table 4.8; Figure 4.8). That was reflected without much variation in the studied wards whereby such unemployment was reflected as follows: 25.5 percent for Kirumba-Kabuhoro; 11.8 percent for Isamilo-Nyakabungo; 27.5 percent for Igogo; 15.6 percent for Mabatini; and 19.6 percent for MECCO (Table 4.8; Figure 4.8). In addition, only three (1.5%) retirees were encountered at only one ward out of the studied wards, MECCO ward (Table 4.8; Figure 4.8).

**Figure 4.8 Respondents' Employment Status**



**Source: Field data (2013/2014)**

Key: KKBR- Kirumba, Kabuhoro; INYB, Isamilo-Nyakabungo; IGG, Igogo; MBTN, Mabatini; and MEC, MECCO.

#### 4.9 Synthesis

Presented demographic characteristics revealed that there were more women than men in studied squatter areas in Mwanza city (see Table 4.1; Figure 4.1). Such pattern also was reflected in other variables. For example, women outnumbered men in terms of living in their own houses as well as living in rented houses (see Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). Results from the study pertaining to demographic variables revealed that more women (67 men and 73 women) were married than men and there were more (24) widows than (4) widowers (Table 4.6; Figure 4.6). Moreover, results from this study revealed that majority of respondents had no formal education and

elementary (primary) education (Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). Results further showed more female than males to that category (see Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). Respondents with college education were the least in the studied areas and females with college education were less than males (Table 4.3; Figure 4.3).

It was further disclosed from the study that less men than women were unmarried (Table 4.6; Figure 4.6). Also, squatter settlements in Mwanza city were inhabited by many ethnic groups as revealed from the study (see Tables 4.5; Figure 4.5).

In terms of employment, results from the study revealed that persons employed in public or private sector were only 6 (3.1%) of the total respondents (Table 4.8). Self-employment accounted for 135(69.2%) of all respondents, almost three-quarters of the sampled respondents in the study area (see Table 4.8; Figure 4.8). Furthermore, 26.2 percent of all respondents in the study area said that they lived in squatter areas without any kind of employment (Table 4.8; Figure 4.8). The pattern did not have much difference in the studied wards (Table 4.8; Figure 4.8) and only three (1.5%) retirees were found at only one ward out of the studied wards, MECCO ward (Table 4.8; Figure 4.8).

After enlightening about respondents' demographic profile, the next chapter endows results on features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Such results are delivered in line with presented sub-research question with its accompanying hypotheses submitted in chapter one of this thesis.

**CHAPTER FIVE**  
**RESULTS II: FEATURES AND CAUSES OF SQUATTER SETTLEMENTS**  
**IN MWANZA CITY**

**5 Introduction**

This study sought to identify features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city and compare with features from other parts around the world. Chapter One of this thesis provided the world view pertaining to the research problem and submitted definition connoting for squatter settlements including their features around the world. Thus, results from this study concerning identified features from Mwanza city squatter areas are discussed appropriately in chapter nine of this thesis.

Attributes of slum include the following: lack of basic services; substandard housing or illegal and inadequate building structures; overcrowding as well as high density; unhealthy living conditions as well as hazardous locations; insecure tenure; irregular or informal settlements; poverty together with social exclusion; and finally, minimum settlement size (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11-12). Further elaboration on features provides a clear understanding to studied squatters. As a reminder for this chapter, the following features of squatters known around the world are presented: lack of basic services that include lack of access to sanitation facilities, lack of safe drinking water, lack of waste collection/management, lack of electricity supply, lack of surface passage (roads as well as footpaths) and lack of storm water drains (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). In addition, incidence of substandard housing or illegal as well as inadequate building structures exhibited by such patterns as earthen floors, mud-and-wattle walls or straw roofs; overcrowding, high occupancy rates like many persons living together in a single room; settlements prone to unhealthy living conditions (polluted environments); structures or houses built on risky or hazardous land parcels (like flood plains); dilapidated buildings or structures are attributes that denoted for squatter settlements in the world; and insecure land occupancy (*ibid.*).

Besides such attributes ascribed to squatter settlements or called slums, they have several definitions that mean the same around the world. Participants were probed too in order to identify whether or not definitions submitted from the world view are similar or deviate from those offered by respondents for this study. Again, as a recall, the following definitions and terms, which in a way connote for squatter features are used around the globe: poverty as well as social exclusion considered by some to be income or incapability poverty (actually delineated to be a central feature of a squatter as well as cause of squatter conditions); areas perceived to have high levels of crime; areas associated with some vulnerable population groups like internally displaced persons or ethnic minorities (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 11). Moreover, such settlements were offered an operational definition by the United Nations Expert Group Meeting by asserting that squatter areas or slums combine, to varying extents, the following features: inadequate access to safe water; inadequate sanitation;

inadequate access to infrastructure; poor structural quality of housing; overcrowding; and insecure housing status (*ibid.*).

The researcher sought from participants' understanding of the term and compared with it as it is used around the world. Such submission is further provided for in discussion in chapter nine of this thesis. However, suffice it is to refresh for the term provided by other languages and geographical locations around the world that was already submitted in chapter one of this work. Thus, literature provides that term slum (for that matter squatter for our case) with many implications as well as meanings such that it is forbidden from many highly sensitive, politically approved as well as academically meticulous glossaries (UN-HABITAT, 2003: 9). It was disclosed that the term slum can also vary significantly in aspects it describes in different parts of the world or even in different parts of the same city (*ibid.*). In developing countries, if the term 'slum' is used, it mostly lacks the derogatory and troublesome or inconvenient original implication such that it simply refers to lower-quality or informal housing (*ibid.*). Moreover, huge, visible areas of squatter or informal housing have become closely attached with perceptions of poverty, lack of access to basic services and insecurity (*ibid.*). In due regard, terms like slum, shanty, squatter settlement, informal housing and low-income community are used, to a certain extent, interchangeably by organizations and authorities (*ibid.*). Furthermore, such settlement types exhibit an even highly complex aspect when considering the variety of equivalent words in other languages and geographical regions around the world, for example, French call them *bidonvilles*, *taudis*, *habitat précaire*, *habitat spontané*, *quartiers irréguliers*; Spanish refer to them as *asentamientos irregulares*, *barrio marginal*, *barraca* (Barcelona), *conventillos* (Quito), *colonias populares* (Mexico); German call them *Elendsviertel*; in American English they are called 'hood' in Los Angeles and ghetto elsewhere in USA; in South Africa they are referred to *umjondolo* (Zulu, Durban); and in Tanzania they are called *mabanda* in Kiswahili language (*ibid.*). It has to be noted that presented terms from various vernacular languages mean or connote the same (squatter or slums) based on geographical contexts around the world (*ibid.*).

Moreover, the researcher analysed causes (push-pull factors) for persons to live in squatters in the study area and compared them with those distinguished from different parts of the world (Lee, 1966; McGee, 1971; Mabogunje, 1972). Such causes were appropriately grouped into push factors, driving people away from their places of origin in the villages, while pull factors are factors attracting them to settle in urban areas that happen to be squatter areas like those studied in Mwanza city. All were analysed to show whether they still exhibit a specific pattern to the research area (Mwanza city in Tanzania) or they are related to other places around the world even though there are naming differences due to language and geographical affinities. Moreover, it was already submitted in chapter two of this work that in Africa, urbanization has a different origin and thus, formation from the rest of the

world due to history, cultural diversity as well as poverty in rural areas and urban areas are distinct from each other (Limbumba, 2012). In due regard, a prominent pattern is evident in Africa, for example, whereby the continent has such pattern of urbanization and thus, squatter formation distinct from other parts of the developing world like Latin America and Asia (Limbumba, 2012; Fabrizio, 2006; Burton, 2005; Francesco *et. al.*, 2002). In addition, they were compared to demographic features like gender, for example, in Asia, rural to urban migration is largely male dominated whereby they move from village to small towns and later on, they move to large cities (Majunatha and Kote, 2012). However, Africa provides a different picture from Asia whereby many countries are urbanizing and hence, forming squatter settlements with high influx of both male and female migrants due to push and pull factors together with personal factors (Mabogunje, 1972; Fabrizio, 2006; Burton, 2005; Francesco *et. al.*, 2002).

The following push factors identified by several authors drive people away from villages to urban areas and settle in squatter places seeking for better life (Roman Rollnick, 2006) there than rural areas: unemployment for survival that includes public employment, self-employment as well as small business undertakings; insecurity like gender discrimination (for women due to marriage problems); bad weather leading to non-crop yields, both cash crops and food crops; poor and/or inadequate social services like health services; displacement due to disasters like floods (in Asia); political upheavals like in Zimbabwe as well as the then apartheid rule in South Africa; and so forth.

In a further extension of views, UN-HABITAT (2002: 9) holds that the following factors are strongly influencing on the pattern of urbanization in the twenty first century in the world: globalization; democratization; new information and communication technology; economic transformation; and socio-cultural changes. In due regard, it is projected that in the scale of urban growth, almost a billion new urban residents in 15 years is changing the nature of urban settlements in the world (UN-HABITAT, 2002: 9).

On the other hand, pull factors attract people to migrate to urban areas thereby form squatter settlements that have variations around the world. They include the following: low housing for ownership or rent; employment (both formal in public as well as private, skilled and unskilled) like in mining (Lubumbashi in Democratic Republic of the Congo and Ndola as well as Kitwe in Zambia as reported by Limbumba, 2012), harbour or port development as areas historically attracted job opportunities; social bonding (joining spouse or relative, sister or brother); self-employment including undertaking petty businesses like vending activities in foods; ethnic group networks like in Kibera Kenya; military displacement like in Kore Addis Ababa, Ethiopia; security (exhibited in Mara region like women as well as

young girls escaping from sexual discrimination or sexual harassment such as wife beating and genital mutilation); and so forth.

Thus, this chapter submits features and causes of squatter settlements of Mwanza city. The chapter closes with a synthesis. As already reported, discussion of results is presented in chapter nine of this work. The subsequent section provides results on features of squatter settlements of Mwanza city.

## 5.1 Features of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City

This study sought to get an insight from participants on some intrinsic aspects that could help discern from squatter settlers' understanding of features of squatter settlements. Such aspects included the following: definition of the term squatter; trend analysis of rural to urban migration (migration periods); households' source of energy for cooking; households' source of energy for lighting; and households' access to safe as well as clean water. Respondents submitted their definition of the term squatter as they understood appropriately presented in the following subsection.

### 5.1.1 Respondents' Definition of the Term Squatter

Through close-ended questionnaire, the study got responses from participants in regard to the term squatter as presented in Table 5.1 and Figure 5.1.

**Table 5.1 Definition of Squatter According to Respondents (N – 195)**

DEFINITION	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total %
Social deprivation	14	9.5	43	24	9.5	100
Income poverty	16	14	22	20	28	100
Bad physical condition of the housing	24.14	17.24	18.97	17.24	22.41	100
Lack of social services	50	9	14	5	22	100
Area of immigrants and lack of legal tenure	25	20	15	27.5	12.5	100
Landless people in town	--	50	--	--	50	100
Other meaning	--	--	--	--	--	
Total	19	19	20	18	24	100

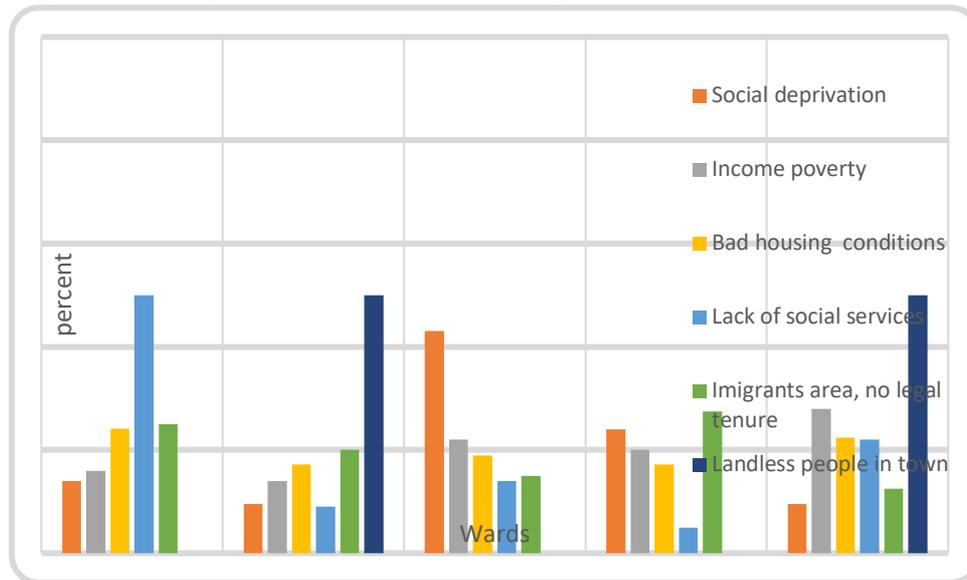
Source: Field Data (2014/2015).

Key: KKBR – Kirumba Kabuhoro, INYB – Isamilo Nyakabungo, IGG- Igogo-Bugarika, MBTN – Mabatini, MEC- MECCO.

A total of 50 (25.6%) out of 195 respondents from all wards mentioned income poverty denoted for the term squatter, while 58 (29.7%) of all respondents in the study provided the definition for the term to mean bad physical condition of housing

as shown in Table 5.1 and Figure 5.1. Furthermore, 40 (20.5%) said it to be an area of immigrants and people settled with lack of legal land tenure, while social deprivation was said to mean squatter by a total of 21 (10.8%) respondents and 22 (11.3%) respondents said lack of social services denoted for the term squatter (Table 5.1; Figure 5.1). The meaning for the term squatter was said to be landless people by two (1.05%) respondents from Isamilo-Nyakabungo ward and also two (1.05%) respondents from MECCO ward (Table 5.1; Figure 5.1).

**Figure 5.1 Respondents' Definition of Squatter**



Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

After establishing implications about the term squatter from participants, the researcher felt important to undertake a trend analysis so as to discern the manner such settlements have been and are still, being occupied in Mwanza city. Such analysis assisted for discussion in chapter nine vide demonstration of people occupying the areas with associated outcomes as analysed through theoretical positions employed for this study. Thus, such submissions are provided for in the following sub-section.

### 5.1.2 Trend Analysis of Rural to Urban Migration Periods

In order to get a clear picture on the manner Mwanza city has been getting people from rural areas, the study carried out a trend analysis for forty years from 1970 to 2010 (please see Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). In addition, the analysis was categorized in five-year periods. Such a trend analysis also shows the ward that started to have inhabitants and possibly squatters, while another ward or wards were recently settled by people. Results are presented in Table 5.2 and summarized in Figure 5.2.

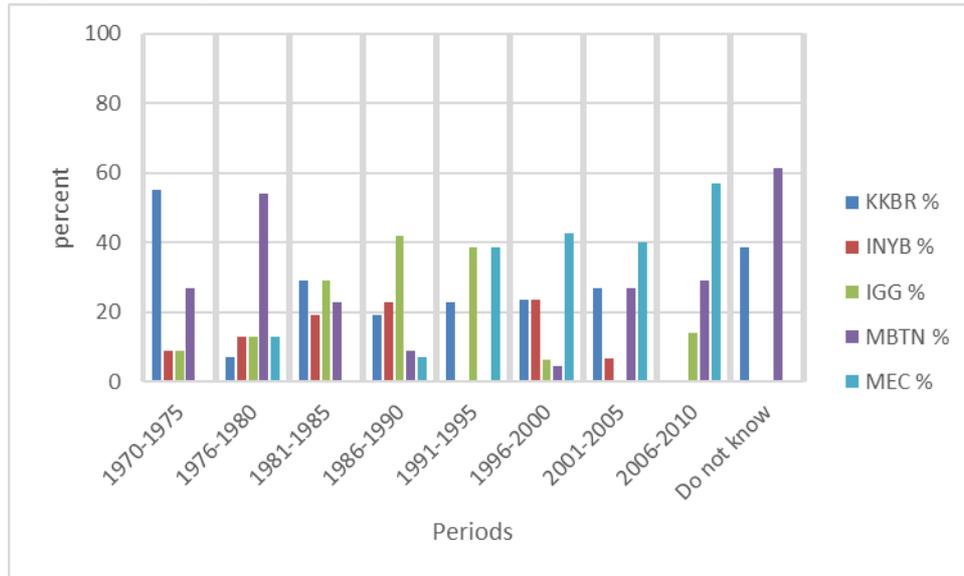
**Table 5.2 Migration Patterns from 1970 to 2010 (N- 195)**

YEARS	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total %
1970-1975	55	9	9	27	--	100
1976-1980	7	13	13	54	13	100
1981-1985	29	19	29	23	--	100
1986-1990	19	23	42	9	7	100
1991-1995	23	--	38.5	--	38.5	100
1996-2000	23.4	23.4	6.4	4.3	42.5	100
2001-2005	26.7	6.6	--	26.7	40	100
2006-2010	--	--	14	29	57	100
Do not know	38.5	--	--	61.5	--	100
Total	24.6	10.4	16.9	26.1	22	100

Source: Field Data (2014/2015).

Key: KKBR – Kirumba Kabuhoro, INYB – Isamilo Nyakabungo, IGG- Igogo-Bugarika, MBTN – Mabatini, MEC- MECCO

Overall, results from the study revealed that the period between 1986 and 1990 had the most numerous of all people in squatter settlements followed by 1996 and 2000 (see Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Igogo ward received more (42%) inhabitants than all wards followed by 23 percent of people at Isamilo-Nyakabungo ward (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). The earliest of all places to be settled was revealed to be Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward whereby people started moving in from 1970 to 1975 (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Mabatini ward was next with more people (27%) than the rest of the remaining wards (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Some respondents did not know time they shifted to Mwanza city. There were five people from Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward and eight from Mabatini ward (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). The period between 2006 and 2010 had the least people who moved in the studied wards with 14 percent at Igogo ward, 29 percent at Mabatini ward and with a lot (57%) of people out of such a minority who settled at MECCO ward (see Table 5.2; Figure 5.2).

**Figure 5.2 Migration Patterns from 1970 to 2010**

Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

The other variable for the study in understating features of people living in squatter areas embraced source of energy for cooking because such parameter helped to determine their stance as they offered in definition of the term squatter, like income poverty also reported elsewhere around the world.

### 5.1.3 Households' Source of Energy for Cooking

The study analyzed households' sources of energy for cooking in the studied squatter areas (see Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). Such findings are very important at several levels. For example, households' sources of energy and affordability are parameters that can depict sources of energy that are environmentally friendly, may imply poverty level and the like. All were also measured in order to determine as submitted in their definition of the term squatter and compared to other places around the world in the discussion of this work provided for in chapter nine.

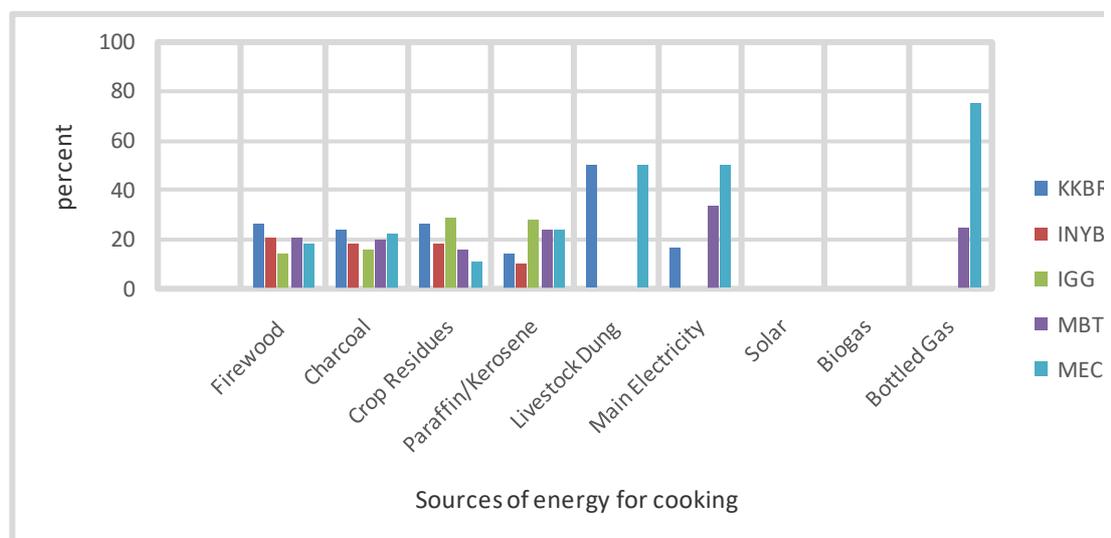
**Table 5.3 Households' Sources of Energy for Cooking (N- 195)**

Source of Energy	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total %
Firewood	26	21	14	21	18	100
Charcoal	24	18	16	20	22	100
Crop Residues	26	18	29	16	11	100
Paraffin/Kerosene	14	10	28	24	24	100
Livestock Dung	50	-	-	-	50	100
Main Electricity	16.7	-	-	33.3	50	100
Solar	-	-	-	-	-	-
Biogas	-	-	-	-	-	-
Bottled Gas	-	-	-	25	75	100
Total	24	16	20	19	21	100

Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

Key: KKBR – Kirumba Kabuhoro, INYB – Isamilo Nyakabungo, IGG- Igogo-Bugarika, MBTN – Mabatini, MEC- MECCO

Results from the study culminated into identifying the following sources of energy utilized by people in the studied squatter areas of Mwanza city: firewood, charcoal, crop residues (like maize cobs), kerosene, livestock dung (cow dung), electricity from the national grid and bottled liquefied gas (see Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). Through an open-ended questionnaire, it was revealed from the studied squatter areas that no household owned solar equipment for use as a source of energy for cooking (see Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). It was a similar pattern for biogas from animal by-products (Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). Charcoal and crop residues were the most of all utilized sources of energy for cooking in the studied wards (Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). The next in utility as a source of energy was revealed to be firewood as shown from 43 respondents from all studied wards (Table 5.3; Figure 5.3).

**Figure 5.3 Households' Sources of Energy for Cooking**

Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

The variable determining source of energy for lighting was also measured because such parameter helped to determine their stance as participants disclosed definition of the term squatter, like income poverty also reported elsewhere around the world.

#### 5.1.4 Households' Use of Sources of Energy for Lighting

In another vein, the study found it important to determine sources of energy for lighting in order to see a match or mismatch from sources of energy utilized by households for cooking (see Table 5.4; Figure 5.4). An open-ended questionnaire was employed to get results from the said patterns. The identified sources of energy for lighting included the following: hurricane lamps, candles, wick lamps, electricity from the national grid and solar lamps (Table 5.4; Figure 5.4).

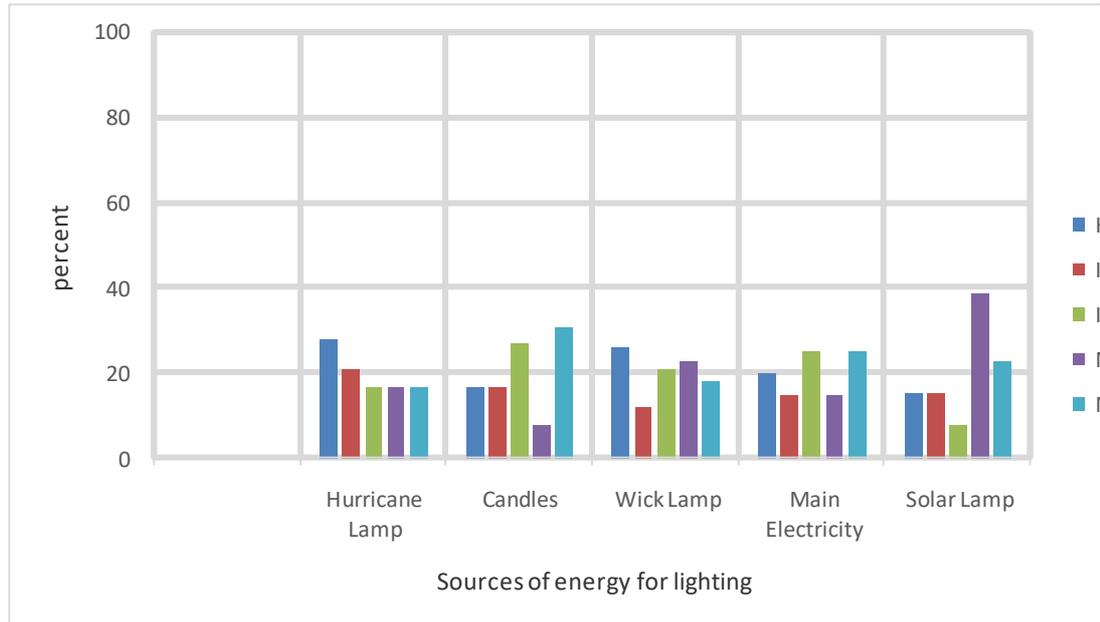
**Table 5.4 Households' Sources of Energy for Lighting (N – 195)**

Source of Energy	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total %
Hurricane Lamp	28	21	17	17	17	100
Candles	17	17	27	8	31	100
Wick Lamp	26	12	21	23	18	100
Main Electricity	20	15	25	15	25	100
Solar Lamp	15.4	15.4	7.7	38.5	23	100
Total	21.28	16.08	19.54	20.3	22.8	100

Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

Key: KKBR – Kirumba Kabuhoro, INYB – Isamilo Nyakabungo, IGG- Igogo-Bugarika, MBTN – Mabatini, MEC- MECCO

Out of the studied sample, it was found out that 73 households used wick lamps followed by hurricane lamps and 20 households used electricity from the national utility company, Tanzania Electric Supply Company Limited [(TANESCO) Table 5.4]. Very few households revealed to be using solar lamps for lighting their households (Table 5.4; Figure 5.4). Moreover, candles were also used by some households as shown to be mostly used by 31 percent respondents from MECCO ward followed by Igogo ward (27%) and the least (8%) of all households were found to be at Mabatini ward in using candles for lighting their houses (Figure 5.4). MECCO (25%) and Igogo (25%) wards were found leading in using electricity from the national utility company for lighting their households (Figure 5.4).

**Figure 5.4 Percentage Households' Sources of Energy for Lighting**

Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

Some features and terminologies offered by authors and participants in this study held the view that inadequate or poor access to clean water made such squatter settlements distinct. In due regard, the feature was also analysed in this study and submitted in the next sub-section.

### 5.1.5 Households' Access to Clean and Safe Water

The study examined households' access to safe and clean water because such a social service has implications to people's health. Clean and safe water is provided in Mwanza city by Mwanza Urban Water and Sanitation Authority (MWAUWASA) through potable water in pipes drawn from Lake Victoria (Mwanza City Profile, 2014). Results are presented in Table 5.5 and further summarized in Figure 5.5.

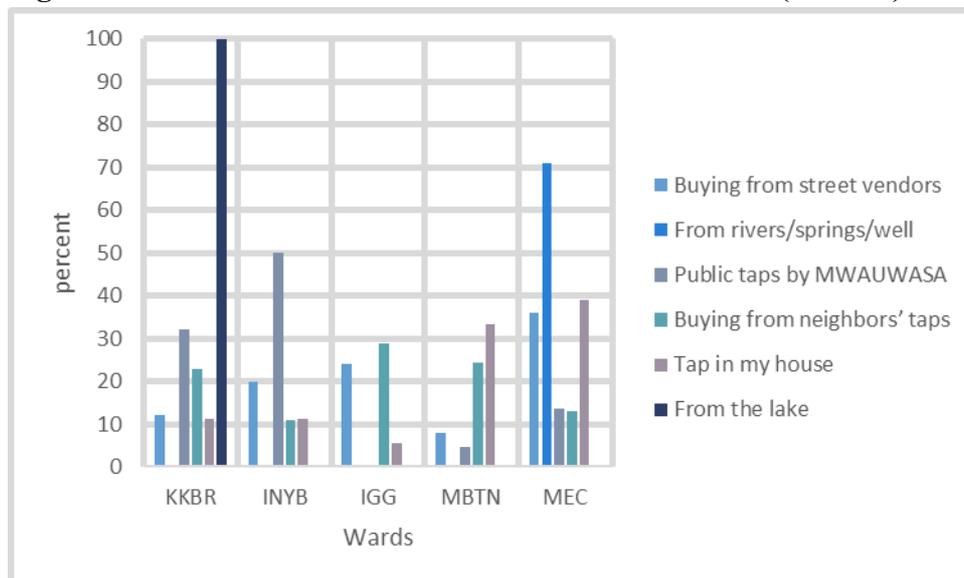
**Table 5.5 Households' Access to Clean and Safe Water (N – 195)**

Response	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total %
Buying from street vendors	12	20	24	8	36	100
From rivers/springs/well	--	--	--	--	71	100
Public taps by MWAUWASA	32	50	--	4.5	13.5	100
Buying from neighbors' taps	23	11	28.7	24.3	13	100
Tap in my house	11.1	11.1	5.6	33.3	38.9	100
From the lake	100	--	--	--	--	100
Other water sources	--	--	--	--	--	-
<b>Total</b>	<b>24</b>	<b>16</b>	<b>20</b>	<b>19</b>	<b>21</b>	<b>100</b>

Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

Key: KKBR – Kirumba Kabuhoro, INYB – Isamilo Nyakabungo, IGG- Igogo-Bugarika, MBTN – Mabatini, MEC- MECCO

Out of 195 participants involved in this study, 22 (11.3%) respondents disclosed that they had access to public taps provisioned by MWAUWASA (Table 5.5; Figure 5.5). In addition, almost 13 percent respondents reported that they bought water from street vendors (Table 5.5; Figure 5.5). Besides, 5.6 percent respondents had taps for clean, safe water at their households (Table 5.5; Figure 5.5). With close proximity to Lake Victoria, majority respondents from Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward disclosed that they fetched water for domestic use from Lake Victoria, while many respondents from MECCO ward reported that they used water drawn from springs/dug up wells (Table 5.5; Figure 5.5).

**Figure 5.5 Households' Access to Clean and Safe Water (N – 195)**

Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

The next aspect analysed in this study encompassed causes of squatter settlements. Such variable was important to demonstrate further involved among push-pull factors for people to squat in Mwanza city and results are submitted in the next sub-section.

## 5.2 Causes of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City

This study sought for identification of causes of people's migration from rural areas to Mwanza city squatter settlement areas. Such causes were analysed through a model stance known as push-pull factors. Face-to-face interviews were conducted for identification of causes for people to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas. Further justification was obtained from focus group discussions carried out at all wards as submitted in chapter three of this thesis. Results from the study revealed the following push and pull factors for rural-urban migration, or, factors that made people move from rural to urban areas and formed squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Thus, results from the study pertaining to pull factors that enhanced people migrate from their rural areas (places of domicile) to Mwanza city are presented in Table 5.6 and Figure 5.6. Such people ended up staying in squatter settlements of Mwanza city.

**Table 5.6 Push-Pull factors that accounted for rural-urban migration to Mwanza city**

Responses	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total %
Ethnicity	39	36.6	4.9	17.1	2.4	100
Government policies	29.7	3.7	37	14.8	14.8	100
Area with good economic status	24.4	14.7	21.9	4.9	34.1	100
Availability of infrastructure	8.3	12.5	35.4	25	18.8	100
Others	21	7.9	5.6	31.6	34.2	100
Total	24	16	20	19	21	100

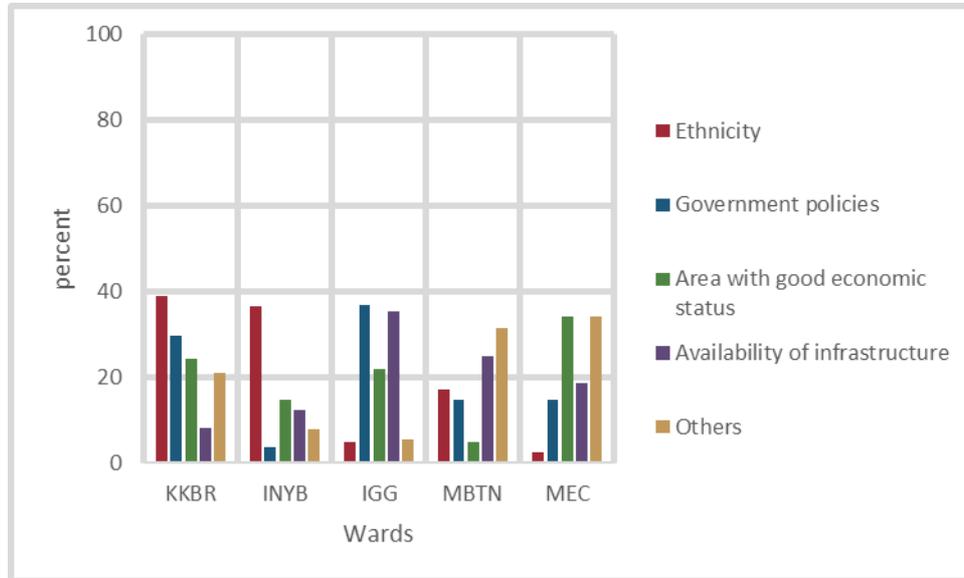
Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

Key: KKBR – Kirumba Kabuhoro, INYB – Isamilo Nyakabungo, IGG- Igogo-Bugarika, MBTN – Mabatini, MEC- MECCO

Results from the study revealed several push factors that accounted for people to migrate from rural areas to Mwanza city in squatter settlements. Such pull factors in order of the most preferred to the least included ethnicity, government policies, availability of infrastructure, area with good economic status and others disclosed mostly in focus group discussions such as enjoyment of social services like health as well as education services (see Table 5.6; Figure 5.6). The implication from such factors was further elaborated during focus group discussions at all studied wards. It

was revealed that the first settlers attracted others to join them in such settlements, for example, Wasukuma featured at all wards with a higher number (56 almost 29%) than the rest of residents in all studied wards (see Table 5; Figure 5).

**Figure 5.6 Push-Pull factors that accounted for rural-urban migration to Mwanza city**



Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

Moreover, Wasukuma ethnic group are among dominant ethnic groups residing in Mwanza region, they are the main inhabitants of Mwanza region (for location please see Figure 3.3; Figure 5.7; Mwanza City Council, 2014) and the largest ethnic group among over 120 ethnic groups in Tanzania (Nyang'aro, 2004: 7). They attracted other Wasukuma to settle in such areas, a pattern that is similar with several clusters in squatter settlements having dominant ethnic groups associated with Kiswahili nick names like 'kwa Wakuria' translated that it is a place for Wakurya at areas in Mabatini hillocks, while Igogo has places known to be dominantly settled by Wamanyema from Kigoma region (West of the country along Lake Tanganyika) and Wanyamwezi from Tabora region (for locations please see Figure 3.3).

Availability of infrastructure in urban areas featured to be the leading pull factor revealed by 48 (25%) respondents (Table 5.6; Figure 5.6). Further probing through focus group discussions elaborated aspects about infrastructure. At Mabatini, focus group discussants disclosed that,

“Mijini kuna maendeleo ya miundo mbinu, kama vile, barabara, hospitali za rufaa za serikali na angalau kuna hospitali za watu binafsi na kadhalika kiasi kwamba barabara zipo na zinapitika kwa kupeleka watu hospitali wakiugua. Pia hospitali zipo hata za watu binafsi wakati vijijini zipo hospitali za serikali za ngazi ya chini kama zahanati na vituo vya afya ambapo huduma ni duni.

Watu wote tukiugua twategemea kupata rufaa mijini. Kwa hiyo, ni vyema kuhamia na kuishi mijini ili kupata huduma kama hizo.”

The quote is translated as,

“In urban areas, there is developed infrastructure like roads, government referral hospitals including private hospitals such that there are passable roads for facilitation of people to take to hospital when they fall sick. Also in towns, there are private hospitals while in villages there are low level government health facilities like dispensaries and health centres with inferior health services. All people depend on urban referral hospitals when they fall sick. Therefore, it is better to shift and live in urban areas so as to get such services.”

It was disclosed by 41 (21%) respondents that urban areas have good economic status such that people are attracted to move there (Table 5.6). Again, focus group discussions helped to elaborate such an assertion by dwellers in studied areas. For example, those (34.1%) residing in MECCO submitted that they moved from their villages to MECCO areas in order to chance for being involved in income generation activities or casual employment (Table 5.11). Moreover, during focus group discussions, they admitted that they moved to MECCO in order to eke out their living through informal activities because there is no possibility of being involved with income generation in villages (rural areas) if there is drought that causes people being food poor and can never sustain their livelihoods. They solely depend on the hand hoes for cultivation and rainfall. In due regard, with aberrant weathering patterns that ensued for some years, they had no option except shift from villages so as to live in urban areas at such places like MECCO. They said that at MECCO, there are several opportunities for small income generation undertakings like food vending, getting employment as casual labourers like at Mwanza Textile Mills (MWATEX), sell fruits at stalls or sell fruits as well as foodstuffs at nearby small markets in their vicinities. Thus, many people were attracted to move to Mwanza city so as to get opportunities for self-employment, meaning that being involved in informal undertakings or being employed at private entities as casual labourers like at MWATEX, fish processing plants or sell food items at their local markets.

Then, 27 (almost 14%) respondents said that they moved in Mwanza city because implementation of government policies was mostly executed in urban areas (Table 5.6; Figure 5.6). That was another cause identified among reported pull factors as reported by respondents in the study areas (see also Table 5.6; Figure 5.6). Participants in focus group discussions at all wards involved in the study further elaborated that government policies were firstly and easily implemented in urban areas and very lately in rural areas. For example, they reported that policies for provision of good social services like health and education were better implemented in urban than rural areas such that people in urban areas enjoyed fruits of the

government. They further upheld that even if the government carried out campaigns on fighting against ailments, for example, they concentrated doing them in urban areas rather than in rural areas. Such pattern attracted people to move in urban areas in order to enjoy social services that are almost beyond reach in rural areas. After all, they recounted that even all referral hospitals are in urban areas, for instance, Bugando Medical Centre is a big, zonal referral hospital situated in Mwanza city. There is also Sekou Toure Hospital, a regional referral hospital that serves people from different parts in Mwanza region. Therefore, it was reasonable enough to live in urban areas so as to access such difficult health services in rural areas.

Other push factors were identified by a total of 38 (19%) respondents in the study area (see Table 5.6; Figure 5.6). Such factors (initially, said ‘others’) were further probed through focus group discussions (FGDs) so as to get an elaborate and true picture for additional push-pull factors that enhanced people migrate from their villages (rural areas) to Mwanza city. Results from focus group discussions from studied wards are almost similar and they are summarized in Tables 5.7, 5.8, 5.9, 5.10 and 5.11.

The following push factors for people’s migration to Mwanza city were disclosed by participants of Kirumba Kabuhoro ward: married women escaped from beating and various forms of discrimination from their husbands in the villages; some people ran away from villages because they were accused of being sorcerers such that they were afraid from being killed and so they were forced to migrate to urban areas as safe havens; and finally, relatives already in towns called them to go to do small trades (Table 5.7). On the other hand, respondents to focus group discussion from Kirumba Kabuhoro ward recounted the following pull factors for people’s migration to Mwanza city: people were obliged to move and live close to town so as to reduce costs by walking on foot to access social services, for example, hospitals for treatment (see Table 5.7). They further upheld that they migrated to towns because there are markets for several commodities such that people can live by doing small businesses rather than in villages; they moved from their places of domicile to Mwanza city because it is close to the lake such that it is easy to undertake fishing and get incomes easier than where they came from the villages where they could not manage to do such businesses; and lastly, it was easy to acquire a plot at cheap prices though in a hill (Table 5.7).

**Table 5.7 Push-pull factors revealed from Kirumba Kabuhoro Ward FGD**

Push factors	Pull Factors
Domestic violence/gender discrimination: Married women escaped from beating and various forms of discrimination from their husbands in the villages	Availability and access to social services: Live close to town so as to reduce costs by walking on foot to access social services, for example, hospitals for treatment
Insecurity: Some people ran away from villages because they were accused of being sorcerers such that they were afraid from being killed and so they had to migrate to urban areas as safe havens	Small businesses for subsistence: In towns, there are markets for several commodities such that people can live by doing small businesses rather than in villages It is close to the lake such that it is easy to undertake fishing and get incomes easier in town than where we came from the villages because we could not manage to do such businesses
Social bonding: Relatives already in towns called them to go to do small trades	Habitation area and social services: It was easy to acquire a plot at cheap prices though at a hill

Source: Field Data (2015-2017).

Further identified pull factors from Isamilo Nyakabungo ward focus group discussion members included the following: near the town; plots for building houses were easily available in town; close to social services, for example, hospitals, schools, markets for various items and the like; it is easier to do small businesses in town rather than in villages; and houses can be accessed at low costs thereby living costs get reduced (see Table 5.8). On the other hand, focus group discussion members from Isamilo Nyakabungo ward upheld that life in villages was challenging because for quite many fears, rains were erratic and people could not harvest food crops as well as cash crops as expected like in good previous years (Table 5.8). Also, they said that they moved from villages because there are no good social services like hospitals even for simple/small ailments in villages (see Table 5.8). In a special way participant in one of the females only focus group discussions, particularly from Isamilo Nyakabungo, disclosed that young teenage girls moved to urban areas in order to escape from female genital mutilation (FGM) that is a requirement in their ethnic groups in Mara region (Table 5.8). They moved in urban areas with the aim of starting fresh life in which ever form or life style because they forfeited their schooling and eked out their living as house girls, bar maids and some indulge into prostitution. Therefore, teenage girls moved to urban areas that seemed to be safe havens for them to avoid mandatory African traditional malpractices - FGM.

**Table 5.8 Push-pull factors revealed from Isamilo Nyakabungo Ward FGD**

Push factors	Pull Factors
Bad weather for crops/livelihoods: Life in villages was challenging because for quite many years, rains were erratic and people could not harvest food crops as well as cash crops	Availability and access to social services: Near the town Close to social services, for example, hospitals, schools, markets for various items and the like
Inadequate or lack of social services: There are no good social services like hospitals even for simple/small ailments in villages	Habitation area and social services: Plots for building houses were easily available Houses can be accessed at low costs and thus, living costs get reduced
Domestic violence/gender discrimination: Ran away to avoid female genital mutilation (FGM) in villages in Mara region	Small businesses for subsistence: It is easier to do small businesses in town than in villages

Source: Field Data (2015-2017).

Results from focus group discussion from Igogo ward regarding push factors included the following two factors: escaped from wife beating; and adolescent girls escaped from discrimination from their families after they rejected from being circumcised [(female genital mutilation) see Table 5.9]. Recall, the latter factor was also mentioned by focus group discussion participants from Isamilo Nyakabungo and most of the victims originated from Tarime in Mara region where it is a practice that is being discouraged by the government and all civil society organizations including religious organizations.

Igogo focus group discussion members revealed the following pull factors that enhanced them to migrate to Mwanza city: first, it is close to town centre whereby basic needs are easily accessed compared to rural areas; second, it is easier to get small jobs in towns than villages; third, it is easy to do small businesses because there are more people in town than in villages; fourth, it is close to a big hospital (Bugando Medical Centre), a different pattern from villages that have poor health services through dispensaries in villages; fifth, children can go to nearby schools, a situation that is different from villages that makes children cover long distances to attend schools; sixth, houses for rent are accessed at low costs; and finally, there are more job and small business opportunities in town than in villages (see Table 5.9).

**Table 5.9 Push-pull factors revealed from Igogo Ward FGD**

Push factors	Pull Factors
Domestic violence or gender discrimination: Escaped from wife beating Adolescent girls escaped from discrimination from their families after they rejected from being circumcised (FGM)	Availability and access to social services: It is close to town centre whereby basic needs are easily accessed It is close to a big hospital, a different pattern from villages that do not have health services and there are poor health services through dispensaries in villages Children can go to nearby schools, a situation that is different from villages that make children cover long distances to attend schools
	Employment: It is easier to get small jobs in towns than villages There are more job opportunities in town than in villages
	Small businesses for subsistence: It is easy to do small businesses because there are more people in town than in villages
	Habitation area and social services: Houses for rent are accessed at low costs

Source: Field Data (2015-2017).

Also, further probing through focus group discussion revealed additional push-pull factors from Mabatini ward that prompted people to squat there instead of their places of origin, the villages (see Table 5.10). The following push factors were revealed by Mabatini focus group discussion members: to join husband; farming is not productive in rural areas thereby it is better to live in town and be an entrepreneur and to join sister/brother who lives in town (Table 5.10).

The following pull factors that prompted people's migration from rural areas to Mwanza city were pointed out by focus group discussion members of Mabatini ward: to be close to town centre that is the business nucleus compared to villages that have no business opportunities; low cost housing; there are more casual labour opportunities in town than in rural areas; it was easy to access a plot for habitation; and it is closer with social services like police station, hospitals, markets, schools and so forth than in rural areas (see Table 5.10). Further pull factors revealed by Mabatini ward focus group discussion participants included the following: there are utility services like electricity and clean, potable water in towns, but such services are lacking in rural areas; business policies are implemented in towns by instituting every good aspect in towns and forget about people in rural areas; farming is not productive in rural areas thereby it is better to live in town and be an entrepreneur; there are many small businesses in town, while it is not like that for people in villages who have no money to pay for their basic needs; there is better life in towns than in villages; and finally, after witnessing village neighbours' success in town then, decided to migrate to town (see Table 5.10).

**Table 5.10 Push-pull factors revealed from Mabatini Ward FGD**

Push factors	Pull Factors
Social bonding: To join husband To join sister/brother who lives in town	Small businesses for subsistence: To be close to town center that is the business nucleus compared to villages that have no business opportunities Business policies are implemented in towns by instituting every good aspect in towns and forget about people in rural areas Farming is not productive in rural areas thereby it is better to live in town and be an entrepreneur There are many small businesses in town, while it is not like that for people in villages who have no money to pay for their basic needs After witnessing my village neighbours' success in town then, decided to migrate to town
Bad weather for crops/livelihoods: Farming is not productive in rural areas thereby it is better to live in town and be an entrepreneur	Employment: There are more casual labour opportunities in town than in rural areas
	Habitation area and social services: It was easy to access plot for habitation and low-cost housing
	Availability and access to social services: It is closer with social services like police station, hospitals, markets, schools and so forth than in rural areas Here there are utility services like electricity and clean, potable water in towns, but such services are lacking in rural areas There is better life in towns than in villages

Source: Field Data (2015-2017).

In regard to push factors for rural to urban migration, MECCO ward focus group discussion participants espoused that they moved to Mwanza city because there were no job opportunities in villages where people depend on rainfall for crop cultivation for their livelihoods but there was persistent drought thereby poverty continued to haunt people (see Table 5.11). Also, they disclosed that they migrated from their villages to Mwanza city because there are life hardships in villages due to lack of social services, for instance, health services are poorly delivered in rural areas and they were of low level while towns have referral health services of good quality (Table 5.11).

Focus group discussion members from MECCO ward reported the following pull factors that led them settle in Mwanza city: first, they moved in Mwanza city seeking for good habitation in order to eke out a better living than in rural areas; second, the urban area is close to necessary social services; third, the place is close to Lake Victoria such that there are more business opportunities in town than rural areas, fourth, it is close to market such that business undertakings are easily performed in

town quite differently from villages; fifth, there is good infrastructure, especially roads and availability of electricity as well as water, patterns that are different from villages where there is no potable water and wells dry up during dry seasons; sixth, it is a flat area with no hills and the area is not prone to flooding; and lastly, they moved in Mwanza seeking for security because there is a police station even though there are thieves (see Table 5.11).

**Table 5.11 Push-pull factors revealed from MECCO Ward FGD**

Push factors	Pull Factors
Bad weather for crops/livelihoods: No job opportunities in villages where people depend on rainfall for crop cultivation for their livelihoods but there has been persistent drought and thus, continued poverty was haunting people	Habitation area and social services: To seek for good habitation in order to eke out a better living than in rural areas It is a flat area with no hills and the area is not prone to flooding
Inadequate or lack of social services: There are life hardships in villages due to lack of social services like health services, but towns have referral hospitals that have good quality services	Availability and access to social services: Close to necessary social services
Poverty: Continued poverty was haunting people due to drought leading to non-harvest of food and cash crops	Small businesses for subsistence: Close to the lake such that there are more business opportunities in town than rural areas Close to market such that business undertakings are easily performed in town quite differently from villages
No job opportunities: Due to persistent droughts and thus, no cultivation to sustain village life, no job opportunities to mitigate the situation	Availability of good infrastructure and utilities: Good infrastructure, especially roads and availability of electricity as well as water, patterns that are different from villages where there is no potable water and wells dry up
	Security (properties and humans): To seek for security because there is a police station even though there are thieves

Source: Field Data (2015-2017).

### 5.3 Synthesis

In identifying measures to control and prevent squatter settlements through this study, it was necessary to determine features and causes of squatter settlements. Several pull factors that prompted people to migrate from rural areas to Mwanza city in squatter settlements were disclosed. Questionnaire results showed that ethnicity as a pull factor for people to migrate to Mwanza city accounted for 41 (21%) of respondents (see Table 5.6; Figure 5.6). Such submission was elaborated in focus group discussions that the first settlers attracted others to join them in such settlements, for example, Wasukuma featured at all wards with a higher number (46 almost 29%) than the rest of residents in all studied wards (see Table 5.6; Figure 5.6). Moreover, availability of infrastructure in urban areas featured to be the leading pull factor revealed by 25 percent respondents (Table 5.6; Figure 5.6). Furthermore,

21 percent respondents disclosed that urban areas have good economic status whereby people are attracted to move there. For example, 34.1 percent from MECCO submitted that they moved from their villages to MECCO areas in order to chance for being involved in income generation activities or casual employment. Moreover, they moved to MECCO in order to eke out their living through informal activities because there is no possibility of being involved with income generation in villages (rural areas) if there is drought that causes people being food poor and can never sustain their livelihoods.

Respondents said that they moved in Mwanza city because implementation of government policies was mostly executed in urban areas (Table 5.6; Figure 5.6). For example, they had opinions that policies for provision of good social services like health and education were better implemented in urban than rural areas such that people in urban areas enjoyed fruits of the government. Thus, such pattern attracted people to move in urban areas in order to enjoy social services that are almost beyond reach in rural areas.

Other push factors were identified by a total of 38 (19%) respondents in the study area (see Table 5.6; Figure 5.6). Such factors (initially, said 'other') were further probed through focus group discussions (FGDs) so as to get an elaborate and true picture for additional push-pull factors that enhanced people migrate from their villages (rural areas) to Mwanza city. Furthermore, results from focus group discussions from studied wards are almost similar and they are summarized in Tables 5.7, 5.8, 5.9, 5.10 and 5.11.

In sum, the following pull factors reinforced through focus group discussions were identified to have had attracted people to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas: availability and access to social services; habitation area and social services; small businesses for subsistence; employment; habitation area and social services; availability of good infrastructure as well as utilities; and security (for properties and humans). On the other hand, focus group discussions gleaned out the following push factors that forced people to move from their villages to Mwanza city squatter settlements: bad weather for crops/livelihoods; inadequate or lack of social services; domestic violence/gender discrimination; social bonding; poverty; and no job opportunities.

In situating the study context, the researcher sought for definition of terms 'squatter settlements' from respondents. A total of 50 (25.6%) respondents from all wards indicated that income poverty meant for the term squatter, while 29.7 percent of all respondents in the study provided the definition for the term to mean bad physical condition of housing (Table 5.1; Figure 5.1). On one hand, 20.5 percent said that the squatter is an area of immigrants living with lack of legal land tenure and, on the other hand, social deprivation was said to mean squatter by 10.8 percent respondents,

while 11.3 percent respondents disclosed that squatter designates for lack of social services (Table 5.1; Figure 5.1). The meaning for the term squatter was said to be landless people by 1.05 percent respondents from Isamilo-Nyakabungo ward and also 1.05 percent respondents from MECCO ward (Table 5.1; Figure 5.1).

By and large, results from the study revealed that the period between 1986 and 1990 had the most numerous of all people in squatter settlements followed by 1996 and 2000 (see Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Moreover, Igogo ward received more (42%) inhabitants than all wards followed by 23 percent of people at Isamilo-Nyakabungo ward (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Besides, the earliest of all places to be settled was revealed to be Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward whereby people started moving in from 1970 to 1975 (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Mabatini ward was next with more people (27%) than the rest of the remaining wards (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Five respondents from Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward and eight respondents from Mabatini ward did not know the time they shifted to Mwanza city (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). The period between 2006 and 2010 had the least people who moved in the studied wards (14 percent at Igogo ward, 29 percent at Mabatini ward) with a lot of people (57%) out of such a minority who settled at MECCO ward (see Table 5.2; Figure 5.2).

Still in making sense of features ascribed to squatters, the study sought to determine status of utilities for such people and thus, compared to aspects they defined their socio-economic level. Thus, sources of energy for cooking were among such yardsticks. In the study areas, the following sources of energy for cooking were utilized by people in the studied squatter areas of Mwanza city: firewood, charcoal, crop residues (like maize cobs), kerosene, livestock dung (cow dung), electricity from the national grid and bottled liquefied gas (see Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). Besides, no household owned solar equipment or biogas from animal by-products for use as a source of energy for cooking (see Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). Charcoal and crop residues were the most of all utilized sources of energy for cooking in the studied wards (Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). The next in utility as a source of energy was revealed to be firewood as shown from 43 respondents from all studied wards (Table 5.3; Figure 5.3).

In addition, sources of energy for lighting are other variables that depict people's socio-economic status as shown in this study whereby 73 households used wick lamps followed by hurricane lamps and 20 households used electricity from the national utility company, Tanzania Electric Supply Company Limited [(TANESCO) Table 5.4]. Very few households revealed to be using solar lamps for lighting their households (Table 5.4; Figure 5.4). Additionally, candles were also used by some households as shown to be mostly used by residents from MECCO ward followed by Igogo ward and the least of all households were found to be at Mabatini ward (Figure 5.4). MECCO (25%) and Igogo (25%) wards were found leading in using electricity from the national utility company for lighting their households (Figure 5.4).

The other features disclosed by participants and used to exhibit poverty level or lack of it is availability of water services. Thus, clean and safe, potable water was disclosed by only 11.3 percent respondents with access to public taps provisioned by MWAUWASA and almost 13 percent respondents reported that they bought water from street vendors (Table 5.5; Figure 5.5). Moreover, 5.6 percent respondents had taps for clean, safe water at their households (Table 5.5; Figure 5.5). By being in close proximity to Lake Victoria, 8 respondents from Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward disclosed that they fetched water for domestic use from the lake and 7 respondents from MECCO ward reported that they used water drawn from springs/dug up wells (Table 5.5; Figure 5.5).

Recollect, this chapter presents findings regarding sub-research question two presented in chapter one of this thesis, ‘What are features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city?’ Thus, in order to further disentangle truth to the desired question, it was assumed as follows:

“Features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city are brought about by push factors driving people from rural areas and pull factors attracting people in urban areas.”

The researcher uncovered features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city as well as push and pull factors that enhanced or facilitated people’s movement or migration from rural to Mwanza city areas. Such people create an urban sprawl in unplanned settlements, either through room/house rent or constructed houses in unplanned settlements.

In due regard, the following push factors that enhanced people migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas were identified: i) ethnicity facilitated by first settlers attracted others to join them in such settlements; ii) domestic violence/gender discrimination prompted married women escape from beating and various forms of discrimination from their husbands in the villages, while girls ran away to avoid female genital mutilation (FGM) in villages located in Mara region; iii) insecurity whereby some people, especially elderly ran away from villages because they were accused of being sorcerers such that they were afraid from being killed and thus, they had to migrate to urban areas as safe havens; iv) social bonding that involved relatives already in towns called their kin to go to do small trades or others went there to join husbands, while others joined relatives (brothers or sisters); and v) bad weather for crops/livelihoods whereby it was asserted that life in villages was challenging with erratic rainy seasons rains that resulted to poor food crops as well as poor cash crops and thus, led to unproductive farming in rural areas. Such bad weathering patterns made people deem that it was better to live in town and be entrepreneurs rather than continue dwelling in rural areas. After all, respondents argued that due to bad

weather for quite long periods of time, there were no job opportunities in villages and consequently, poverty continued to haunt people.

Other push factors that paved the way for people to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas included inadequate or lack of social services whereby participants claimed that there are no good social services like hospitals even for simple/small ailments in villages. Moreover, they argued that there are life hardships in villages due to lack of social services like health services, but urban areas like Mwanza city have referral hospitals that have good quality services.

Several pull factors as drivers for people to migrate and stay in Mwanza squatter areas were identified. They included the following: first, availability associated with easy access to social services, for example, big referral hospitals for treatment, schools, markets and others. Second, they live close to town centre so as to reduce costs by walking on foot to access social services like hospitals for treatment, schools for their children, markets and many others. Third, urban areas facilitated greater possibility of undertaking small businesses for subsistence than rural areas or villages. It was submitted that in towns, there are markets for several commodities whereby people can live by doing small businesses rather than in villages.

Fourth, urban areas offer good habitation areas such that people easily acquired plots at cheap prices though along hilly areas in close proximity with better provided social services than rural areas. In addition, it was argued that houses for rent or rooms for rent can be accessed at low costs and thus, living costs get reduced. For example, such habitats facilitated them to access social services within reach like hospitals, schools, police stations, markets for undertaking vending businesses or small businesses and so forth. There were utility services like electricity and clean as well as safe water that were mostly missing in rural areas. Furthermore, there was good infrastructure like roads for passage eased people's life ways in terms of accessing social services or small business opportunities and/or amenities. Fifth, another pull factor among drivers for people to migrate to Mwanza city was mentioned to be in search for employment. Participants to this study lamented that it is easier to get small jobs in towns than villages because there are more job opportunities in town than in villages. Jobs included casual labour that was easily available in urban areas compared to rural areas that were mostly non-existent. Sixth, urban areas were said to offer opportunities for small businesses for subsistence compared to rural areas because there were many people with money to buy items compared to rural areas. Moreover, it was disclosed that such areas are close to Lake Victoria such that there are more business opportunities in town than rural areas, for example, businesses in markets. Also, others could undertake fishing and associated businesses in Mwanza city rather than in rural areas where there are few people with no money for buying items including fish. Seventh, business policies were mentioned to be implemented in towns by instituting every good aspect and forget about people

in rural areas. Eighth, another driver for people to migrate to Mwanza city was said witness from neighbours' success in town after they exhibited developments in rural areas upon return like building good houses, having good/flashy clothes and having money for resolving household needs in form of remittances. Ninth, other respondents mentioned that they were pushed to move to Mwanza city areas because they deemed that there was better life than in rural areas. All were mostly referred to be due to easy access to social services, availability of business opportunities, availability of wage labour in public or private sectors and many other good life ways compared to rural life patterns. Finally, other respondents alluded to availability of security in Mwanza city for themselves as well as properties that were minimally executed in rural areas.

Pertaining to definition of the term 'squatter settlements,' respondents provided several connotations that are almost similar to those offered elsewhere in the world. For example, some alluded to mean income poverty, while others referred to bad physical condition of housing. In addition, other respondents said it means an area of immigrants living with lack of legal land tenure; social deprivation; lack of social services; and landless people.

In another vein, the study sought to determine status of utilities for such people thereby compared to aspects they defined their socio-economic level. Thus, sources of energy for cooking were among such yardsticks. Therefore, this study identified the following sources of energy utilized by people in the studied squatter areas of Mwanza city: firewood, charcoal, crop residues (like maize cobs), kerosene, livestock dung (cow dung), electricity from the national grid and bottled liquefied gas. However, no household owned solar equipment or biogas from animal by-products for use as source of energy for cooking. It was further disclosed that charcoal and crop residues were the most of all utilized sources of energy for cooking in the studied wards. Subsequently, firewood was also used by many households in the studied squatter areas.

In further identification of sources of energy for lighting that depict people's socio-economic status, there was the following disclosed pattern: many households used wick lamps followed by hurricane lamps and other households used electricity from the national utility company, Tanzania Electric Supply Company Limited (TANESCO). Very few households disclosed that they used solar lamps for lighting their households. Moreover, candles were also used by some households as shown to be mostly used by residents from only three of the studied wards, namely, MECCO ward followed by Igogo ward and the least of all households were found to be at Mabatini ward.

Other features disclosed by participants that help to discern people's socio-economic status encompass availability or lack of social services. Thus, availability of clean

and safe, potable water was disclosed by only very few respondents with access to public taps provisioned by MWAUWASA and another minority of respondents reported that they bought water from street vendors. In addition, very few respondents had taps for clean, safe water at their households, while others lamented that by being in close proximity to Lake Victoria, for example, those staying in Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward, they fetch water for domestic use from Lake Victoria, while very few respondents from MECCO ward reported that they used water drawn from springs/dug up wells.

Presented results provided good merit for evaluation of the posited assumption that sought to reveal truth or falsehood to the posited sub-research question. In due regard, obtained results from test implications ostensibly led to accept the assumption that, “Features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city are brought about by push factors driving people from rural areas and pull factors attracting people in urban areas.”

This study continued to be undertaken by determining the manner social responsibility approach was either effective or ineffective in preventing and controlling squatter settlements. Thus, solutions to the said aspect are presented in the subsequent chapter of this thesis.

**CHAPTER SIX**  
**RESULTS III: KEY PLAYERS' INITIATIVES IN PREVENTION AND**  
**CONTROL OF SQUATTER SETTLEMENTS**

**6 Introduction**

Among three sub-research questions that guided this study, the following was the second sub-research question, 'How effective is social responsibility approach pertinent in preventing and controlling squatter settlements and bad human behaviours in such settlements in Mwanza city?' In obtaining solutions for the posited sub-research question, the researcher assumed that through Social Responsibility Approach, key players, namely, the central government, urban authorities and stakeholders (private sector including individuals, civil society entities and the like) must be at the forefront in executing or discharging their social services delivery to all settlements including squatter settlements. It was foreseen that data for the said aspect will help to discern the manner the mentioned key parties undertake measures that enhance control and limit squatter growth in Mwanza city. Moreover, it has to be put to attention that proper comprehension in regard to results endowed in this chapter are subjected to discussion submitted in chapter nine of this thesis.

Additional key players included the private sector represented by civil organizations such as Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs), Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), business persons and individuals. All were expected to be determined whether or not they worked together with the government (local and central) in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city at various capacities. In addition, at the centre stage it was deemed necessary to examine the role of media in working together with the other key players as underscored through Social Responsibility Approach. The media embody an agency extremely important in communication and dissemination of aspects pertaining to society in all walks of life for socio-economic development. Thus, media role was analysed to see contribution towards prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. In due regard, findings submitted in this chapter illuminate key players' initiatives in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city areas together with aspects to determine the kinds of provided social services in squatter areas and benefits from such provided social services. Finally, synthesis is submitted at the end of the chapter.

**6.1 Key Players' Initiatives in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements**

This section provides results from the study on the role of media in dealing with squatter settlements; the role of civil society in dealing with squatter settlements; local government leaders' interactions with business people in dealing with squatters; the role of religious denominations (organizations/institutions) in dealing with

squatter settlements; and contribution of international organizations in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city.

### **6.1.1 The Role of Media in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

The role of media in dealing with squatter settlements of Mwanza city was examined and findings to that end are provided for in this sub-section. In due regard, findings encompass the following key aspects in regard to the role of media in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city: local government leaders' use of media in their general daily executions; type as well as use of media by local government leaders when they have specific problems in squatter areas; the kind of undertakings executed by media in dealing with specific squatter issues as well as problems; identified problems pertaining to squatter settlements dealt by media pertaining to squatter settlements; and the way forward for media in control as well as prevention of squatter settlements including curbing deviant behaviours in squatter settlements.

The study included media because they perform the following three functions or roles of information, education and entertainment to society. Such functions or roles are conventional social functions the media provide to the public, but equally applicable in broader sense in national development quest. Thus, through educating, informing and entertaining, the media thus make society, society members or the nation as well as leadership of society, aware of the importance and need to undertake certain process or processes of national development. Also attached to the said three basic roles of media is another role of persuasion such that media are seen as important tools of applying persuasive efforts to influence people's actions towards a particular direction. In due regard, mass media are seen for their role in furnishing the public with necessary information to achieve development or change goals.

Furthermore, roles of media in national development stretch out in their capacity as well as capability to teach, manipulate, sensitize and mobilize people through information dissemination. The media also plans a course for the public in creating in people's minds issues that should be viewed as priority including development programmes and policies. In due regard, this study strived to analyse the role of media in two pursuits or roles (information and education) among important key players in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlement in Mwanza city.

### **6.1.2 Local Government leaders' use of media in their general daily executions**

Respondents disclosed that there was no media coverage pertaining to socio-economic development activities in the squatter settlements of Mwanza city. Media appeared for coverage on problems. For example, if someone was raped, killed or caught with illegal items like illicit liquor (locally called *gongo*) or drugs (mostly marijuana/cannabis) or when calamities like floods or a disease outbreak broke in the area such as cholera, then there was media coverage for the area.

Such situation was echoed by local government leaders in their responses about the role of media in dealing with squatter settlements regarding socio-economic development activities by asserting that,

"Media have no time with us because they just come when something bad has occurred in our area. For example, if your house catches fire, somebody killed or when rainfall causes calamities like washing away houses or land/rock fall, they come and undertake coverage. Media do not help anything and media people will never come again till another bad event occurs. Media people really do not know what they are supposed to do" (said Mr. MBTNA, one of the chairpersons).

In an almost similar vein, another street chairperson, Mr. IGA, had this to say,

"Media people do not write anything for us. Coverage presented by media is for politicians and prominent people. For example, television news broadcasts only cover politicians and such pattern is similar with news bulletins presented in radio. In addition, newspapers present similar materials for people's consumption but nothing at all on squatter settlements with people's socio-economic activities. Generally, news coverage in all media forms is either music or politics, nothing is done for our development."

Testimony to such media coverage was reported in the last quarter of 2014 in Mwanza city whereby heavy rain downpours that resulted to rock falls accompanied with people's death as well as house damages including property damages were reported. Through news broadcast by Star Television headquartered in Mwanza city and captured through Internet, in September, 2014, there was a report on rock fall in Mabatini area, Mabatini ward whereby two people died and houses were demolished due to heavy rain downpour. Another episode happened in December, 2014 that did not result into people's death but damaged several houses due to rock falls as a result of heavy rain downpour that was reported at Nyakato area in Mwanza city.

In addition, during Focus Group Discussions with ward leaders, it was further disclosed that there was media coverage in their settlements when, for example, there was a project inauguration by a politician, could be a Regional Commissioner, District Commissioner or Member of Parliament. During project inauguration of helping households in the fight against poverty by Tanzania Social Action Fund (TASAF), there was media coverage. This was echoed by one Focus Group participants who had this to say,

*"Wakati wa uzinduzi wa mpango wa TASAF wa kijamii wa kunusuru kaya maskini, waandishi wa habari walifika na kutangaza uzinduzi huo. Baada ya uzinduzi huo, hatujawaona tena waandishi wa habari wakifika katika maeneo yetu ili kupasha habari zinazojiri katika makazi yetu."* (Local Government leader, July, 2016).

Translated as follows, “During TASAF project inauguration pertaining to assistance of poor households in the fight against poverty, media people came and covered the event. Thereafter, they have never come back to air out aspects pertaining to our settlements.”

Civil Society entities are among drivers of socio-economic development in the country. The study sought to firstly, identify their presence or absence and second, they were analysed so as to underpin their contribution towards prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Thus, the next sub-section helps to guide through such submissions.

### **6.1.3 The Role of Civil Society in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

The manner civil society entities dealt with squatter problems in Mwanza city was examined in order to see whether or not their efforts among key players were important. In order to grasp such pattern, the following aspects cover the sub-section: types and area of concentration by civil society organizations involved with squatter problems in Mwanza city; civil society areas of concentration in dealing with squatter problems in Mwanza City; and local government leaders’ interaction with civil society entities.

#### **6.1.3.1 Types and Area(S) Of Concentration by Civil Society Organizations in Dealing with Squatter Problems in Mwanza City**

This study wanted to determine types and area(s) or initiatives aimed at dealing with control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. It was determined that for most parts of the study areas in Mwanza city, there were no specifically organized civil society organizations that dealt with control and prevention of squatter settlements. However, to some extent, there were civil society organizations that revolved around solving individual problems through collective umbrellas as means for the fight against poverty. Recall, like anywhere else in the country, in the study area, there are savings and credit co-operative societies (SACCOS) that encompass a significant part in the financial sector of most countries Tanzania being included. People in the study areas also have formed such SACCOS to assist themselves in accessing loans that do not need stringent collateral like banks and financial institutions. They are not directly involved with control and prevention of squatters but rather, they help members deal with their own socio-economic problems.

Moreover, in the study area, besides SACCOS, there are Village Community Bank (VICOBA) groups that help individual members who cannot afford collateral in banks for loans but accessed such money lending services based on communal organizations under their own neighbourhood collectivization. Such groups assist members to access soft loans that they repay on short-term basis such as weekly, with minimum interest amounts to deal with their daily life patterns in such aspects

as vending businesses and the like. Vending businesses include the following: small shops, women's hair salons, bars, restaurants, food vending (small restaurants and make shift food vendors commonly known in Kiswahili as *mama lishe*), charcoal sales and the like.

It has to be recalled that this study did not identify a civil society organization specifically dealing with squatter problems in Mwanza city. Rather, there were civil society groups organized at neighbourhood collections that dealt with individual poverty alleviation. In determining further about key players' initiatives in control and prevention of squatters in Mwanza city, local government leaders' interactions with civil society organizations were examined. Their submissions are provided for in the foregoing sub-section.

### **6.1.3.2 Local Government Leaders' Interaction with Civil Society Entities**

Furthermore, this study assessed the manner government leaders interacted with civil society entities in dealing with squatters in study area. As long as there are informal civil society organizations such as Village Community Banks (VICOBA), the local government leadership was not directly involved in their daily executions. The local government leadership helps when the said informal civil society groups need assistance. For example, if there happened a misunderstanding that was not resolved by them at their own civil society organized leadership, local government leaders were always consulted for arbitration. That was echoed by one member in one of the Focus Group Discussions held at Igogo who had this to say,

*“Kwa kawaida VICOBA huwa tunajiendesha wenyewe bila matatizo. Yakitokea masuala ya kutokuelewana ndani ya kikundi, kama vile, mwanakikundi kutorejsha mkopo na sababu alizotoa hazikuridhisha mbele ya wana kikundi basi viongozi wa serikali za mitaa wamewahi kutusaidia sana kwa matatizo kama haya. Hii ni kwa sababu viongozi wa serikali za mitaa wanafhamu kuwa vikundi kama hivi vina manufaa kwa maisha ya watu katika kujikwamua na umaskini.”*

Translated as, “Normally, VICOBA has its own leadership. If there happens a misunderstanding in the group, like, a group member defaulting in loan repayment and provides dissatisfactory reasons before group members then, local government leaders have greatly helped us in such problems. The local government leaders know that civil society groups like ours are important to people's life ways, especially in their fight against poverty.”

However, in another vein, following the move by the current government leadership that calls for people to participate in cleaning the environment, many people are taking part in heading to such call. For example, some VICOBA members called upon their neighbours to take part in cleaning street roads, removing dirt and such undertakings are now being observed on every Saturday thereby going beyond the

central and local government leadership call requiring people to clean their environments communally on every final Saturday of the month.

Furthermore, it was equally important to analyse local government leaders' interaction with business persons, especially in dealing with squatters. Their opinions are provided for in the subsequent sub-section.

#### **6.1.4 Local Government Leaders' Interaction with Business Persons in Dealing with Squatters**

At grassroots level, ward and street, local government leaders had minimal interactions with business people in dealing with squatter settlement problems. Such persons were in contact occasionally and mostly when they were required to attend meetings in the local residence areas. It was reported that meetings were called upon whenever there was need. For example, if they wanted to discuss about development activities such as construction of roads, health center, schools and police post, it was time they called upon people for meetings including business people as envisaged key contributors for the settlements' socio-economic development activities. There was no fixed timetable or schedule for meetings on their socio-economic development activities.

They reported that even though such meetings were held, the problem arose when people had to contribute their money for some community needs. Usually, they did not want to contribute money. Thus, all agreements/resolutions from meetings ended in words and not in deeds or actions.

However, business people are taking part in other self-help community undertakings. For example, the central government and local government authorities require all people to take part in cleaning the environment for every final Saturday in the month. Business persons are required not to open their businesses before 10:00 hours in the morning such that one who does contrary to the directives is liable to fine and/or imprisonment. Thus, all business persons in the country including Mwanza city, meaning that even those doing their businesses in squatter areas, are observing the government call on making a clean environment daily and insisting on doing such exercise on every final Saturday in the month. Some business people were found distributing equipment for use in cleaning the environment at Mabatini whereby they distributed some brooms, dust pans, gloves and some pails to their street. Moreover, in unraveling other key players' efforts in taking part on squatter problems in Mwanza city, the study sought to identify presence or absence of religious denominations and/or their organizations as well as determine their role in dealing with the problem under investigation. The foregoing part exhibits the true picture of presence or absence of such religious denominations and/or their organizations including their efforts in curbing squatter problems in the study area. Moreover, in unraveling other key players' efforts in taking part on squatter problems in Mwanza city, the study sought to identify presence or absence of religious denominations

and/or their organizations as well as determine their role in dealing with the problem under investigation. The next part exhibits the true picture of presence or absence of such religious denominations and/or their organizations including their efforts in curbing squatter problems in the study area.

#### **6.1.5 The Role of Religious Denominations (Organizations/Institutions) in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

Recall, this study reported religious sects found in Mwanza city in Chapter Five of this thesis. Thus, results from this study revealed the following religious denominations in the study areas: Christians, Moslems and believers in African traditional religious sects (please see Table 4.4; Figure 4.4).

Pertaining to role played by religious denominations in dealing with squatter settlements, the study did not identify undertakings by such sects in control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Rather, they only exist there so as to provide required services for the faithful in the name of controlling deviant behaviours. Such aspects are presented in Section 6.4 of this Chapter and Section 9.3.7 of Chapter Nine of this thesis on the manner such religious groups are dealing with behaviour patterns in squatter settlement in the study area.

Then it was important to identify presence or absence of foreign partners (international non-government organizations) in socio-economic development in the area and determine their efforts aimed at control and prevention of squatter settlements in the study area. The subsequent sub-section provides for results to that end.

#### **6.1.6 Contribution of International Organizations in Dealing with Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City**

There is an International Non-Governmental Organization, Railway Children Africa that has been collaborating with local government authorities of Ilemela and Nyamagana municipalities in partnership with local NGOs, namely, Kivuko (Railway Children Africa's project), Upendo Daima and Caretakers of the Environment (COET) in survey of street children so as to make a rehabilitation for such children (Railway Children Africa, 2014). Railway Children Africa has been conducting activities pertaining to street children in Mwanza city some of whom are also from squatter areas (*ibid.*). Its mission is for all vulnerable children, whether or not from squatter areas (*ibid.*). The said NGO makes follow-up for such children to their parents and guardians whereby they involve both in their rehabilitation (*ibid.*). Due to mentioned NGO efforts, it was reported that most children were able to go back to their parents and guardians such that some managed to rejoin schools (*ibid.*).

After submission of aspects concerning key players in control and prevention of squatter settlements, it was necessary to determine magnitude or scale of provided

social services in studied areas. After all, inadequate or lack of social services were featured in the previous chapter to be among push factors for people to migrate in Mwanza city squatter areas, while their presence and good status or satisfaction accounted for their being pull factors in attracting the said people in studied areas. The next section provides results for the said facets.

## 6.2 Provided Social Services in Squatter Areas

Availability and/or inadequate social services were singled out to be among features of squatter settlements in literature around the world. This study wanted to determine status of provided social services so as to measure responsible authorities and/or agencies' efforts in their provision to the studied area (Table 6.2; Figure 6.2). Overall, results from the study revealed that provision of potable, clean and safe water in squatter areas featured prominently (47.7%) compared to other kinds of provided social services (Table 6.2; Figure 6.2). The next in prominence among government initiatives in social services provision to citizens in squatter areas was mentioned to be roads construction reported by 26 (13.3%) respondents in all studied wards (Table 6.2; Figure .2).

**Table 6.1 Provided Social Services to Squatter Areas (N-195)**

Responses	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total %
Provision of potable clean and safe water	16.1	21.5	18.3	20.4	23.7	100
Roads construction	-	7.7	38.5	30.7	23.1	100
Provided electric poles	38.8	11.9	19.5	14.9	14.9	100
Waste collection	55.6	11.1	-	-	33.3	100
Total	23.6	15.9	20.5	18.97	21.03	100

Source: Field data (2013/2014)

Key: KKBR- Kirumba, Kabuhoro; INYB, Isamilo-Nyakabungo; IGG, Igogo; MBTN, Mabatini; and MEC MECCO

Table 6.1 and Figure 6.2 show that 9(4.6%) respondents mentioned waste collection in squatter areas was a government initiative that aimed at cleaning the environment. Such measure was hailed by respondents who narrated that municipal authorities try their best at installing collection points in residential areas whereby trucks periodically collect waste and take to main Mwanza city dump site. Figure 6.1 shows one of such collection points with a big bin for city council trucks to collect them to the main dump site.

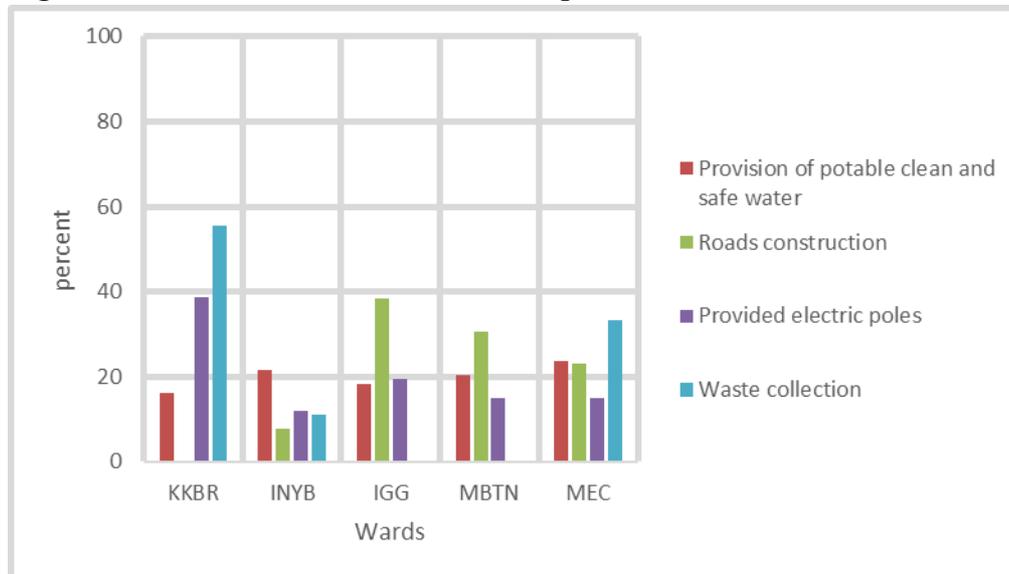
**Figure 6.1 Waste Collection Point with Big Bin in one of Squatter areas**



Source: Field data (2017).

However, waste collection in squatter areas was not mentioned at two wards, namely, Igogo and Mabatini wards (Table 6.12; Figure 6.2). But such response was not genuine because people have their own initiatives of waste collection for them to observe some form of hygiene. Moreover, since 9<sup>th</sup> December, 2015, the government, under the current president, embarked on cleaning environments by involving all people in the country. There are mandatory cleaning programmes for every citizen for every last Saturday of the month in the whole country. Those who contravene such order on the fateful day including opening their business premises before 10:00 a.m. are reprimanded.

**Figure 6.2 Provided Social Services to Squatter Areas**



Source: Field data (2013/2014)

In addition, through focus group discussions in the study areas, it was revealed that the local government was doing its best in provision of utilities like potable, clean and safe water, electric poles for electrifying the areas (Figure 6.3) and there was

limited waste collection to accessible areas (Figure 6.1), especially those not so high up in hillocks.

**Figure 6.3 Provision of Electricity in Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City**



Source: Field data (2017).

It was similarly disclosed during focus group discussions at Igogo and Kirumba Kabuhoro wards that the sloppy hillock landscape and congested houses with no space together with underlying and/or exposed granite rock boulders/granite bedrocks hampered development of road networks in their areas (see Figure 6.4). They had to depend on foot paths (see Figure 6.4) because there are no open areas or pavements for instituting infrastructures like storm water drains. That was equally observed for poor sanitation in the squatter settlements whereby they had shallow dug-up pit latrines. Consequently, it was difficult for the local government authorities to develop storm water drains or develop a sewage system in such areas. Again, waste collection as outsourced by Mwanza City Council was problematic in squatter areas due to a hard-up to reach landscape and maintain such measure (see also Figure 6.4).

**Figure 6.4 Footpaths in Squatter Settlements, Mwanza City**



(a) and (b) Close-up shots showing footpaths amidst congested houses



(c) and (d) A bit panoramic view of squatter settlements but cannot visibly show footpaths

Source: Field data (2017).

In evaluation of whether or not provided social services in studied areas were of required demand and possibly, quality and standards, this study examined if people's life ways had changed because as provided in the previous chapter, social services were among pull factors or drivers that attracted them to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas. The foregoing part provides their revelations.

### **6.3 People's Life Ways Regarding Provided Social Services**

Recall, in the previous chapter, most participants disclosed that they were attracted to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas in quest for availability and most likely, adequate social services compared to lack and/or inadequate social services in rural areas. Such variables are called pull factors by proponents. The manner people's life ways have changed regarding social services provision by the government as the main key player are furnished in this part. Such results aimed at getting people's opinions as an indirect measure in order to recapitulate whether or not the government used Social Responsibility Approach as an effective and pertinent pathway in preventing as well as controlling squatter settlements together with bad human behaviours.

**Table 6.2 The Manner People’s Life Ways Have Changed Regarding Social Services Provision**

Response	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total %
No longer discriminated like before	26.1	13	13	43.5	4.4	100
Participate in savings and credit societies	15	7.5	35	10	32.5	100
Our children are going to schools	25.9	14.8	14.8	18.6	25.9	100
Residents/inhabitants like the area	27.8	19.4	20.8	13.9	18.1	100
Children have friends outside the area	-	50	-	50	-	100
Total	23.6	15.9	20.5	18.97	21.03	100

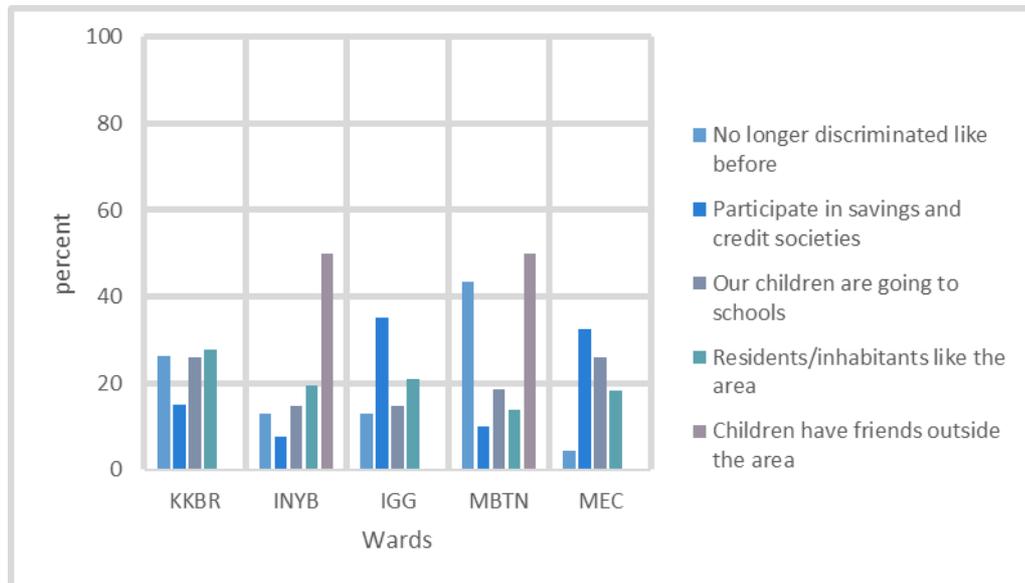
Source: Field data (2013/2014)

Key: KKBR- Kirumba, Kabuhoro; INYB, Isamilo-Nyakabungo; IGG, Igogo; MBTN, Mabatini; and MEC MECCO

Participants recounted motives behind their migration to Mwanza city squatter areas and out of those, 72 (36.9%) reported that they liked the areas as prominent among government favours for people to reside in squatter settlements followed by 54(27.7%) respondents who reported that their children were going to public schools constructed in their vicinities (Table 6.2; Figure 6.5). The implication from such pattern is that school children start continuing getting proper psycho-social care early in their growth spurt from their homes to outside environments, the school environments. Further growth spurt through adolescence and teenage can be observed to be with good manners/behaviour patterns for those who were well nurtured from childhood to adulthood. Thus, society members can witness grown up persons with good behaviours.

Table 6.2 and Figure 6.5 show that 40(20.5%) participants reported that as long as they were residing in the same areas, they enjoyed formation as well as operation of savings and credit cooperative societies (SACCOS). Such SACCOS helped them to access loans in an easier manner than banks that have cumbersome conditions like collateral and other forms of hard to acquire securities, especially immovable assets.

**Figure 6.5 The Manner People’s Life Ways Have Changed Regarding Social Services Provision**



Source: Field data (2013/2014)

With much happiness, participants narrated that people appreciated government services provision in squatter areas in Mwanza city. Thus, it implies that the government, to some extent, was responsible for its citizens.

It was unveiled in focus group discussions from all wards that they enjoyed living in squatter settlement areas. That was justified by some who recounted that they formed Savings and Credit Societies (SACCOS) by living close to each other. The aspect featured prominently by groups from Igogo ward followed by MECCO and Kirumba Kabuhoro wards but never featured much at the group discussion of Isamilo Nyakabungo ward. Also newly constructed primary schools and later on, ward secondary schools in the country were also constructed in squatter areas. Such government measures made inhabitants from squatter settlements happy for their children’s easy access to schools within their vicinities. In fact, results revealed from other data collection methods were similarly echoed in focus group discussions.

Most proponents around the world disclosed that urban sprawls that encompass squatter settlements have people with varying behaviour patterns. Such patterns are identified in squatter settlements around the world although they are not necessarily uniform and/or similar. To that end, this study desired to identify key players’ efforts in dealing with deviant behaviours found in squatter settlements. A further discussion ingrained through application of theoretical pathways is endowed in chapter nine of this thesis.

## 6.4 Approaches in Dealing with Bad Behaviours

### 6.4.1 Identified Behaviour Patterns

Like elsewhere identified in literature review of this work, the following behaviour patterns were identified in studied squatters: thugs; robbers; prostitution; drug addicts; and alcohol abuse. A brief account of each behaviour pattern as revealed in the study area is presented in this section.

Thus, it was found out that squatter areas had thugs who were either their sons or dependants or sons' friends who joined the groups. Most of them were teenage boys and those aged below 40 years old. Most of such youth were those who were school drop-out at elementary level or early secondary education at form two or they were form four failures. Those who finished elementary school had already started participating in truancy before school completion in standard seven. In another vein, form two drop-out were mostly bad behaviour carry over from elementary school and continued to be with groups of youth with deviant behaviours. They had the following habits: they were involved with snatching people's properties, for instance, women's hand bags were snatched along foot paths or street roads on their way to and from city centre; mobile telephones were snatched, they snatched people's properties like clothes and so on by piercing through windows sealed with no grills.

To show the way such youth behaved, one member from the local government Focus Group Discussion had this to say,

*“Hawa watoto wamezaliwa hapa tunawaona na wazazi wao wakiwa wenye maadili mema na kazi zao. Wazazi wamekuwa wanazingatia ratiba zao za kutoka asubuhi na kurudi jioni sana bila kujua watoto wao wameshinda na nani na wameshinda wanasoma au wanafanya vitendo kinyume na maadili mema. Siku moja, jirani mmoja alikabwa na kuporwa pochi yake na vijana wa hapa mtaani kwetu. Kwa bahati nzuri akamfahamu mmoja wa vijana waliompora. Alichoweza ni kufika hapa ofisi za mtaa na kutoa taarifa kuwa kaporwa pochi na vitambulisho vyake vikiwemo vya benki... Baadaye uongozi wa mtaa ukaenda nyumbani kwa kijana na kuwakuta wazazi na kijana. Hapo nyumbani kijana alijifanya mpole na mnyenyekevu lakini ilikuwa ngumu kukubali kuwa alikuwa kwenye makundi ya vitendo viovu. Baada ya kuhangaika kumuhoji na kumtishia kuwa hatukwenda kucheza bali tutampeleka kituo kikuu cha polisi ili apelekwe gereza la Butimba, wazazi wakanena watalipa ili yaishe bali watahangaika na kumrudi kijana wao. Kijana alituelekeza maficho ya wenzake. Tulikwenda na wenzake tuliwakuta wamelewa pombe na bangi na hawakueleweka. Tuliwakagua na kupata vitu si vya huyo mama jirani tu bali na vitu vingi ambavyo ilibidi siku za mwisho wa wiki tuite mkutano kwa watu na kutangaza waweze kuvitambua na kupata vitu vyao. Kwa upande wa wazazi ilikuwa ni mstuko kwani walikiri kijana wao kuacha masomo na kuwa tabu sana kumrudisha shule licha ya uwezo wao wa kumgharamia masomo. Alikwisha haribika tabia na ndiyo ilikuwa tabu yuko na makundi ya vibaka na wavuta bangi.”*

Translated as, “These kids have been born here with parents who are ethical. Parents have stuck to their schedules of moving out from morning till late in the evening without knowing their children’s activities during the day if they were studying or they were with whom behaving unethically. On one day, one of our neighbour’s wallets was snatched by these children. Unfortunately, she recognized one of them. She managed to report here at the local government authority office that they snatched her wallet with her identity card including bank cards. Later on, the leadership went to the children’s home and found the youth with his parents. We struggled to ask the boy who was not very cooperative until after threatening that we will take him to Butimba prison then his parents agreed to pay as compensation. Later on, the boy showed the hideouts with his friends where we went and found them drunk from alcohol and were intoxicated from smoking marijuana. Upon inspection we discovered not only the woman’s stolen items but also other’ stolen properties. That measure necessitated a call for a meeting for all people in the neighbourhood on the next week end for people to identify and recover their stolen items. On parents’ side, they were shocked and recalled that their boy dropped out from school and it was difficult to take him back to school besides that they were capable for paying for his schooling. The boy was already with deviant behavior and it was difficult by being with gangsters and marijuana smokers.”

#### **6.4.2 Unruly Behaviours: Robbery/Burglary**

Another form of unruly behaviour is robbery. Such behaviour pattern is bred from thugs who grow for many years as well as join grown up peers who experienced many incidents of robbery and go untamed. Such behaviours are organized with group members away from places of origin. Thus, it means that such robbers encompass youth who were truants at school, be elementary or secondary school, who later on give their life ways into being totally with unruly behaviours. They use weapons such as machets, stones used for forceful door opening, commonly called in Kiswahili, *Fatuma* and others use fire arms. All weaponry, whether fire arms or the like, are used for house breakage, car intrusion and so forth. The robbers have the worst form of behaviour patterns whereby many indulge in illicit drugs and illicit alcohols like the illegal ethanol known in Kiswahili as *gongo*. Most of them have been jailed and have never been rehabilitated but have given up their life ways into being untamed/unruly. Some have lost their friends out of mob justice (mob lynch) when they were caught ready handed and people took to their hands legal decisions such that they were beaten to death! On the other hand, such robbers armed with ammunition took innocent people’s lives. Cases to remember happened at Igogo whereby one women’s hair salon owner was shot dead by bandits. In addition, in

Kabuhoro ward, a shop attendant with mobile telephone vending involved with electronic money transfer through Vodacom (*M-pesa*) was shot to death by bandits in April, 2016. Another case happened at Nyakato National Housing involving youth who also ambushed by brandishing machine guns as well as explosives at an electronic money vendor and shot at large such that they killed two people and left scores of people wounded.

#### **6.4.3 Unruly Behaviours: Prostitution**

Prostitution is rampant in squatter areas. Some disclosed that they left marriages that broke away in villages by being told by neighbours who had migrated to urban areas that they should leave sexual harassments from their husbands by looking for white colour jobs in urban areas. They said that upon arrival in urban areas like Mwanza city, they were forced to live in like make shift rooms, known as *ghetto* and they were forced to work in bars and some were obliged to be prostitutes in the city without their wishes. The reasons included the fact that many are semi-illiterates with no knowledge or skills to be employed in formal as well as informal sector. Those who told them that they had to migrate to urban areas were involved in either prostitution or bar maids. Very few who were at the late teens and early twenty years of age tried their luck by working as house maids. Some were mistreated in some households and resorted to leave such employment and thereafter, because they did not want to go back to their villages of origin, they were lured by fellow young women to indulge in prostitution in the city. One of them from Igogo area narrated as follows,

*“Wajua niliambiwa na mwenzangu kijijini alipofika akawa na fedha na nguo akawa anabadili akasema anaishi jijini Mwanza na maisha hayampigi chenga. Yuko vizuri. Nikajiuliza kuwa nina mume ambaye tuna miaka mitatu hatuna hata mtoto ila pia ni mlevi na mkorofi kila mara ni kupigana tu. Nikaamua kuwa bora niende jijini Mwanza naweza kuwa na maisha bora kama mwanadada mwenzetu ninayemwona. Nikamwomba siku ya kuondoka kwenda Mwanza tuongozane akakubali. Kweli siku ikawadai tukasafiri hadi hapa Igogo Mwanza. Tukafika mahali nikidhani kapanga chumba chake kumbe ni ghetto mhh...na anaishi na akina dada wengine ambao kwa muda huo hawakuwepo kwa madai kuwa wamekwenda kazini, na kumbe ni kazi ya ukahaba. Walioweza kupata wanaume hawakurudi na waliokosa wanaume walirudi usiku. Kesho yake asubuhi mwenyeji wangu akanitambulisha na kunieleza kuwa kuna kazi atanipeleka jioni..... Tulikwenda na nikathibitisha kuwa kumbe ni kufanya ukahaba.”*

Translated as, “You know I was told by my fellow villager when she arrived in the village, she had money and a lot of clothes that she used to change by saying that she lives in Mwanza where she has smooth life. She is good. I asked by myself that I lived with my husband for three years without any child but he is rough and alcoholic with frequent fights/quarrels. I decided

that it is better to go to Mwanza city such that I may live better life than in this village like the young lady I am seeing. I requested her to go with me on her move back to Mwanza city to which she agreed. Truly, the fateful day happened and we traveled to Igogo in Mwanza. We arrived at a place I thought she had rented her own room but it was a sharing shelter facility we call *geto* in Kiswahili mhh. She lives with other young ladies who were absent by then on the claim that they had gone to work. But the work was prostitution. Those who managed to get men never returned at that night and those who did not came back. On the next day in the morning, my hostess introduced me to her friends and told me that she will take me to the work place in the evening. We went there and I proved that it was prostitution!”

The quotation shows the manner many young girls/young women are lured into migration from their rural areas by thinking that they are moving to safe havens for bright future. They end up in difficult life ways such that they get stuck and they cannot decide to go home fearing from being heard at by villagers that they never went with changed life pattern. Meaning that they should go back to their villages with money and properties to show the difference between living in villages that are envisaged to propel poverty or else live in urban areas thought of being places for bright future.

#### **6.4.4 Unruly Behaviours: Drug Abuse and Illicit Alcohol Use**

It was found out in the study area that people indulged in drug abuse. Through local government leaders, it was revealed that drug addicts included thugs, robbers, prostitutes and other people. Most of drugs used included marijuana (known in Kiswahili as *bangi*), khati (known in Kiswahili as *mirungi*), betel (known in Kiswahili as *tambu*), cocaine and the like. Also, they revealed that most people if not all of thugs, robbers and prostitutes were alcoholics. They all indulged in drug and alcohol abuse. They drink all sorts of alcohol including the banned ethanol called in Kiswahili as *gongo*. Thus, with drug abuse and alcoholism, such persons misbehave in such a manner that they get out of control. Also, they get children unexpectedly such that taking care of the said children with poverty becomes a problem.

#### **6.4.5 Law Enforcement in Curbing Prostitution, Burglary/Robbery Drug Abuse and Prostitution**

At times of events like burglary or robbery, law enforcers take charge of such law-breaking scenario. That goes simultaneously with dealing with people involved in selling drugs (marijuana, for instance) and illicit alcohol (*gongo*) together with netting prostitutes. In regard to burglary or robbery, culprits are put in remand prison and then they are taken to court. Court proceedings provide proper ruling to such offenders. Some serve long term sentences like 30 years imprisonment for those who assault by using firearms, while others serve few years' terms. Some become good

citizens but some, as reported in some media outlets, are habitual such that they get to misbehave after prison releases and get caught again. Thus, they are habitual offenders who have no point of return into being good citizens.

Similarly, those who sell and those who drink illicit alcohol are taken to court and, with evidence, they are judged in courts accordingly. For prostitutes, law enforcers take them to court whereby some are fined and/or imprisoned. However, it is very difficult to realize those who get to the government arms and get prosecuted such that after they serve their punishments it is difficult to know if they quit from such behaviours. Suffice it is to say that some change into good behavior patterns, while some get back as habitual offenders as it is the case mostly reported in media that some who get caught are habitual in their prostitution acts.

#### **6.4.6 Street Children**

Some children get bad influence from peers who are grown up youth and drive them into deviant behaviour patterns. The worst scenario is that once such children grow and instead of attending school they go into streets and become street beggars. In Mwanza city, street children always roam city centre streets, especially along Nyerere and Posta roads junction. Such children always beg and they at times get involved in problems, especially at night when they never go back at their home places that happen to be squatters like Igogo, Mabatini and so on. Reasons for such children stay and/or work in streets include discrimination from parents and guardians, abject poverty and others that create insecurity of such children (see also Railway Children Africa, 2014). Some street children are discriminated and/or abused by people in the streets such that it was disclosed by Railway Children Africa (2014) they accounted for over 100 percent. The survey by Railway Children Africa (2014) revealed that abusers included older youth mostly boys who were beggars. Thus, such children indulge in activities plus begging but fall victims to begging. That pattern is in contrary to the Convention on the Rights of the Children (CRC) ratified by Tanzania in 1991. In Tanzania, such convention paved the way to the law reform process that led to enactment of the Law of the Child Act (LCA) of 2009. All such initiatives are aimed at protecting the rights of the child. Thus, Railway Children Africa (2014) together with its local NGO partners, namely, Kivuko (Railway Children Africa's project), Upendo Daima and Caretakers of the Environment (COET) are striving to rehabilitate concerned children with their families and/guardians or care takers (Railway Children Africa, 2014).

It has to be noted that rehabilitation does not necessarily lead all children become normal by joining their parents or guardians. Some who never join their parents or guardians are sent to centres in Mwanza city. Some centres mostly established for fostering orphans are also used to receive street children, for example, Kuleana centre in Mwanza city. Not all children who either join their parents or guardians and those received by orphanage centres stay there. Some revert back to streets even

during bad weather like during rainy seasons (short and long) whereby they shelter themselves at city bus centres and other places like shop corridors and continue unchanged with living on the streets. Some escape from Mwanza city and go to other urban areas in neighbouring regions or even as far as coastal urban areas like Dar es Salaam city. In fact, Dar es Salaam is asylum for street children from all over the country whereby once netted, they recount their places of domicile as up-country places (both rural and urban) that include Mwanza region.

However, it has to be noted that not all street children are born out of prostitution, thugs, robbers and the like, other people are also producing such children who they cannot take care of them. Railway Children Africa (2014) in its report cited several reasons that breed street children and prostitutes in Mwanza city areas including squatters. Recall, the NGO is working on rehabilitation of such children together with helping young girls who were found increasing in indulging into prostitution (*ibid.*). Some reasons cited in this study included the following: abject poverty, marriage breakages, single parenting (mother/father only), orphanage due to many causes one of them is Human Immuno-deficiency Virus/Acquired Immuno-Deficiency Disease (HIV/AIDS) scourge, motorcycle accidents that caused death to one and/or all parents and many other causes/reasons pushing children into Mwanza city streets (*ibid.*).

#### **6.4.7 Person(s)/Group(s) in Dealing with Deviant Behaviours**

The study could not pinpoint responsible person/persons, special groups, be NGOs, CBOs and the like that were organized in dealing with deviant behaviours in their residential areas. Thus, robbers, prostitutes and the like went on unapprehended until they committed crimes, for the case of thugs and robbers. For prostitutes, they were at times rounded by police as loiterers but they managed their way out and got back in their residences together with their activities along places they use to loiter. Thus, it is appalling to inform that such vices in squatter areas were not dealt with properly. The only exception was through religious denominations, both Moslems and Christians, at their places of worship who were busy reminding their converts about mannerism and observance of morals. Also, they were involved in teaching specific subjects at primary and secondary schools in order to prepare youth about living by observing ethics and morals.

#### **6.5 Synthesis**

Equally important for this study were findings desired to determine key players' initiatives in prevention as well as control of squatter settlements together with control of bad human behaviors. Also, the chapter presents results on provided social services in squatter areas; people's life ways regarding provided social services; and finally, approaches in dealing with bad behaviours. Further determination of these aspects is endowed in discussion in chapter nine of this thesis.

It was disclosed that media did not directly deal with coverage on matters pertaining to prevention and control of squatter settlements. Media coverage was done only on events or episodes, for example, if floods happened. Also, coverage was done when politicians and government leaders went there for some activities like by the time TASAF Phase Three Projects on dealing with assistance of households in abject poverty had media coverage.

The study revealed that there was no civil society organization specifically dealing with squatter settlements in the study area. That was almost a similar scenario with business people, whose role was invisible. They never deal with prevention and control of squatters. However, they are involved in activities recently launched by the central government and local government authorities like cleaning the environment, an aspect that is mandatory to all citizens in urban areas. Local leaders approach them for participation in dealing with daily problems but they never really take part. However, the said undertakings are hampered by terrain, steep hilly areas, such that it is difficult to pave roads that can easily facilitate passage for undertakings like garbage collection by using vehicles and other provisioning of social services.

Religious bodies indirectly deal with people in squatter settlements by way of behaviour control for their converts. There is no specific religious body that deals with control as well as prevention of squatters in Mwanza city. They assist in observation of morals in communities because squatter settlements include drug addicts, alcohol abusers and prostitutes, children abusers who happen to drive children to streets in Mwanza city centre, street children, thugs and robbers.

Provided social services by the government and local government authorities were lauded by respondents. Such appreciation marked notable achievements on part of the government in its efforts to deal with people's welfare including those residing in squatter areas. Thus, the mentioned achievements are recorded through the central government and local government authorities in discharge of their duties for citizens. They have law enforcement for all purposes as their obligation. For example, they pave roads as a way to reduce congestion along high ways like construction of a road off Kenyatta road through Igogo past Bugando Hill (across Bugando Medical Centre). The road helps to reduce traffic congestion along Kenyatta road and other roads like Pamba road in Mwanza city. Thus, many people enjoy using the escape route including squatters. Law enforcers are government arms responsible in dealing with unruly behaviours like indulgence in illicit drinks (like sales in illicit gongo and/or drinking gongo) robbery/burglary, prostitution, street children and the like. The various levels of courts of law in Mwanza city deal with the said offenders that include those from squatter areas. Also, there are some efforts by local government authorities like waste collection, street cleaning for every last saturday of the month,

control of informal businesses in streets as well as markets and open spaces in the city.

Moreover, utility entities are government-owned that provide electricity and clean/safe water to all people including squatter settlements. Other social services that also were part of pull factors mentioned by respondents in focus group discussions to have had attracted them to reside in Mwanza city squatter areas include provision of health services to high level, referral level in public (Regional Hospital) and private health services (Bugando Medical Centre as a Zonal referral hospital that also collaborates with the central government at various dimensions in provision of health services. There are public schools (primary schools with kindergarten and elementary education levels plus secondary schools) that were also referred to by respondents as pull factors that attracted them to migrate to Mwanza city although they ended up settling in squatter areas.

The government is providing social services like construction of feeder roads, provision of utilities like clean and potable water as well as electricity from the public electricity entity, TANESCO. People living in squatters are enjoying social services like school for their children. Their children easily access elementary and secondary education compared to those in rural areas. In addition, people are able to access loans from their own community entities such as SACCOS and VICOBA that do not require collateral for qualifying to be advanced money. Such schemes help them to operate their small vending activities.

In the study area, there is no individual or entity dealing with deviant behaviours for people living in squatters. The only initiatives are government undertakings when there are episodes like robbery, prostitution and drug addicts who are meted out by law enforcers. Moreover, there is no International Organization dealing with control as well as prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. But Railway Children Africa is dealing with rehabilitation of street children in collaboration with local NGOs in Mwanza city for almost six years now. Some or almost many such children are from squatters.

It is reported that rehabilitation does not necessarily lead to all children become normal by joining their parents or guardians. Some who never join their parents or guardians are sent to centres in Mwanza city. Some centres for fostering orphans also receive street children. Yet, some children never join their parents or guardians or orphanage centres and instead, they go back to streets. They stay there even during bad weather, for example, during rainy seasons whereby they shelter themselves at city bus centres and other places like shop corridors and continue unchanged with living on the streets. Some escape from Mwanza city and go to other urban areas in neighbouring regions or Dar es Salaam city. Dar es Salaam is said to be the sanctuary for street children from all over the country whereby once caught by law enforcers,

they recount their places of domicile as up-country places that include Mwanza region.

Thus, registered or notable milestones in dealing with squatter settlements as submitted in this chapter are reported. However, identified initiatives or efforts involve the central government, local government and public utility entities. The government, through its utility entities, cares for its citizens and thus, provides social services. For private entities, only the international NGO, Railway Children Africa in collaboration with local NGOs deals with street children, some from squatter settlements.

It has to be evoked that this study sought to determine the manner social responsibility approach was an effective alleyway in preventing and controlling squatter settlements and bad human behaviours in such settlements in Mwanza city. In so doing, the following assumption was tested:

“Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania.”

The assumption test was geared towards determination of effectiveness through achievements due to participation by the central government (public sector) in terms of proper legal framework pertaining to settlements/resettlements in urban areas, Mwanza city council's concerted efforts in urban planning together with the private sector in regard to community, Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), Community-Based Organizations (CBOs) as well as business people in control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city.

The media were examined on their role in prevention and control of studied squatter settlements. Results unveiled that the media did not directly deal with coverage on matters pertaining to prevention and control of squatter settlements. Media coverage was executed only on events or episodes, for instance, if calamities like floods occurred. In addition, media coverage was done when politicians and government leaders went there for some socio-economic activities.

However, there was no civil society organization particularly dealing with squatter settlements in the study area. That was similarly true for business people, whose role was invisible. Business people involved in activities recently launched by the central government and local government authorities like cleaning the environment as a mandatory requirement to all citizens in urban areas in the country.

Available religious entities indirectly dealt with people in squatter settlements through control of congregates' behaviours. It was discovered that there was no particular religious body that dealt with control as well as prevention of squatters in

the study area. They assisted converts in observation of morals because squatter settlements were found with individuals indulged in drug addiction, alcohol abuse, prostitution, children abuse along streets in Mwanza city centre, and robbery. Also, some street children had abode from squatter settlements.

In dealing with people's welfare including those residing in squatter areas, there were notable social services provided by the central government and local government authorities. Respondents conveyed their appreciation concerning provided social services. Thus, achievements were recorded through the central government and local government authorities in discharge of their duties to citizens.

However, it was appalling to uncover that in the study area, there is no individual or body dealing with deviant behaviours for people living in squatters. The only initiatives are government undertakings when there are incidents like robbery, prostitution and drug addiction whereby they were meted out by law enforcers. Besides, this study never found International Organizations particularly dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Nevertheless, this study found out that Railway Children Africa deals with rehabilitation of street children in collaboration with local NGOs in Mwanza city.

In due regard, this study uncovered noticeable achievements in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city. However, identified initiatives or efforts involve the central government, local government and public utility entities. Thus, the central government, through its utility entities, cares for its citizens and thus, provides social services. For private entities, only the international NGO, Railway Children Africa in collaboration with local NGOs deals with street children, some from squatter settlements.

It has to be recollected that in this study, social responsibility approach is an independent variable reckoned to facilitate prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city in linkage with dependent variables mediated by public and private sectors' joint efforts together with instituting proper strategic plans, action plans, meetings as well as ensure that there would be joint implementation of selected action plans/strategies. Provided results from this thesis exhibit some achievement level in prevention and control of squatter settlements in the study area. However, there were some key players supposed to take an active role in high level realisation of the desired achievements to that end but they were minimally involved or were involved in a hidden way or were not involved at all. For example, religious entities were taking part as their moral obligation in dealing with people's behaviours in squatter areas. The role of media was a bit invisible or masked and happened only with events like bureaucrats' involvement in discharge of their duties or if there occurred calamities in squatter settlements. An ostensible demise of civil society organisation in the said task was registered. All such entities were supposed to join

the central government and local government authorities in amplifying the appreciated social service delivery in squatter settlements at diverse capacities. Thus, it means that the best realisation of sought achievements can only be executed through social responsibility approach if such entities' contribution or efforts are combined with central government and local government authorities' inputs.

Therefore, the researcher agreed with results of the tested assumption that, "Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania"

Besides determining key players' efforts or initiatives in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city, this study desired to identify problems and challenges in prevention as well as control of squatter settlements. These are devoted in their separate chapter presented next.

**CHAPTER SEVEN**  
**RESULTS IV: PROBLEMS AND CHALLENGES IN PREVENTION AS WELL AS CONTROL OF SQUATTER SETTLEMENTS**

**7 Introduction**

Further research endeavours for this thesis sought to uncover problems and challenges in prevention and control of squatter settlements of Mwanza city by various key players. The study examined the said aspects through the following key players: the central government, local government authorities (studied municipal councils) and the private sector. The analysis was carried through the said parties so as to uncover the manner they dealt with resolving problems and challenges they encountered in dealing with squatter settlements.

Moreover, the analysis sought to identify each key player's initiatives and/or efforts in prevention as well as control of squatter settlements under study so that at the end, the researcher provided testable predictions to assess them through the following avenues: unscrupulous house construction in unplanned (illegal) areas; provision of utilities; and status of provided social services. Such analysis is illuminated in discussion endowed in chapter nine of this thesis whereby along with other pathways, the researcher was able to submit expected measures or suggestions in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city. In due regard, results from the desired assessment are provided for in this part through the following facets: unscrupulous house construction in unplanned (illegal) areas; provision of utilities; comments on provided social services; and synthesis.

**7.1 Unscrupulous House Construction in Unplanned (Illegal) Areas**

Through unstructured interviews and further probing through focus group discussions, the study sought to elicit government measures to curb house construction in unplanned/illegal areas. Results from the study gleaned out several reasons that included the following: there was population explosion singled out from Igogo as well as Mabatini focus group discussions. Those at Kirumba and MECCO wards remarked seriously that there were no specially designated and planned areas for human habitation. Others remarked that the government did not care at all about people with the lowest incomes for allocating them pieces of land in planned areas.

Responses from focus group discussions provided further reasons as revealed from the study included the following: the government failed to deal and resolve the human habitation problem in unplanned areas at an early stage before it escalated up to an uncontrollable level. Also, it was disclosed that government officials were mixing politics in dealing with squatter settlement problems. In addition, it was revealed that leaders were afraid from being blamed by citizens for taking actions like demolishing their houses as a move to evict them from unplanned settlements. On the latter aspect, they recalled examples in election campaigns whereby

politicians and bureaucrats always said that they did not want to disturb squatter settlements because they harboured for potential election voters.

Moreover, people settled in squatter areas because planned as well as surveyed areas designated for human habitation were difficult to acquire due to huge expenses together with bureaucratic bottlenecks accompanied with corruption on plot allocation to ordinary citizens. They also remarked that there was no cooperation with local government authority leaders especially at grass roots level, street leaders in dealing with squatter settlement problems. Besides, they lamented that surveys for plots for human habitation were delayed and such measures were expensive, making it difficult for low income earners to afford. Moreover, they recounted that local government authorities were powerless with no authority over matters pertaining to land allocation at all avenues. At some point in time, respondents recalled that the government tried to evict people from unplanned settlements without proper procedures such that there was chaos because people had no alternative areas for resettlement.

On the other hand, it was revealed by Mwanza city officials that they embarked on participatory survey along un-surveyed residential areas whereby people were deemed to pay collectively some survey nominal fee. However, it was disclosed that such measure hit a snag because people felt that survey charges under such scheme were very high. They collectively met at their respective street chairpersons and tried to raise funds required for the survey but many failed to raise the required total amounts for such programme. Moreover, many respondents echoed their cry that they decided to establish dwelling places in unplanned areas because they could not afford to buy plots in planned areas. Thus, they accounted for spread and uncontrolled settlement areas, the squatters. In identifying other problems and challenges of control as well as prevention of squatter settlements, the researcher examined the status of provision of utilities in squatter settlements. A relevant revelation of such social services is prevented in the following section.

## **7.2 Provision of Utilities**

This section provides results on challenges pertaining to provision of utilities in squatter settlements. They had to be explored because people are already living in such areas and need such services like clean, potable piped water and sources of energy for cooking as well as lighting like electricity.

It was found out that as long as areas were having people, utility entities like Mwanza Urban Water Supplies (MWAUWASA) provisioned water to some people who could afford but not as planned. Advanced reasons included poor terrain that makes it difficult for the water utility entity to lay pipelines as envisaged. However, there were some who were connected illegally and obtained water with bills and some were not billed such that the water utility entity always hunts for defaulters as

well as illegally water connected people. Thus, a few who can afford vend water by digging personal wells that they sell and vendors fetch water by paying a token and fill-up in containers ranging from 10 to 20 litres that they furnish some households that order them. Other people went at such points and bought water in terms of containers sold at around 300 Tanzanian shillings for 60 liters or an equivalent of three buckets each with capacity to store 20 litres of water.

For sources of energy for cooking and lighting, there are some residents connected to the public utility power entity, Tanzania Electric Supply Company Limited (TANESCO) but there are others connected illegally by unofficial artisans known in Kiswahili as *vishoka*. The said people are always hunted by TANESCO because they deny revenues and rights for the utility company by tapping energy badly and illegally.

However, many people in squatter areas connect to power utility company for lighting and a few use such power for cooking and food storage for future use. Otherwise, many use environmental unfriendly sources of energy like charcoal for cooking and very few use liquefied gas as well as kerosene (or paraffin) for such needs. In fact, it was said that majority use charcoal and kerosene in many urban areas of Tanzania including Mwanza city such that they contribute to massive tree-cutting that eventually lead to environmental pollution, deforestation and environmental degradation. Instead of the researcher submitting whether or not social services provided in squatter settlements sufficed people's needs, there was need for requesting respondents disclose about their perceptions on the matter. Thus, an ostensible status is presented in the subsequent section.

### **7.3 Comments on Provided Social Services**

The study sought for comments on provided social services so as to gauge whether or not Social Responsibility Approach was considered in their provision by different stakeholders. After all, it was argued that Social responsibility Approach also a hallmark of this study, is a pertinent alley for dealing with control (even sprawl) of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. A wide cast of ideas pertaining to the said approach is presented through the Conceptual Framework (Figure 1.1) in chapter one and further submitted through theoretical grounding in chapter two of this study. In due regard, through Social Responsibility Approach, the researcher examined key players' obligations [the squatters, local government authorities ( Nyamagana Municipal Council as well as Ilemela Municipal Council), the central government and civil society organizations]. The researcher desired to identify if the key players' actions were directed towards prevention and control of squatter settlements of Mwanza city.

Among suggestions provided by respondents, provision of title deeds to their built up plots featured the most (30.8%) among all suggestions followed by improvement of

night security [(21%) Table 8.2; Figure 8.2]. It implied that people had quest for getting assurance of rights of occupancy for their built-up plots in unplanned settlements and at the same time they experienced night insecurity. Desire for roads was disclosed by 34(17.4%) of all respondents with Mabatini ward reported by 29.4 percent followed by 26.5 percent respondents of MECCO ward, 20.6 percent respondents of Kirumba Kabuhoro ward, 14.7 percent respondents of Igogo ward and finally, 8.8 percent respondents of Isamilo Nyakabungo ward (see Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). The implication from such variation on priority for roads can be discerned from landscape in Mwanza squatter areas whereby they are mostly in hillocks such that it is difficult for road construction (see Figure 6.3). Therefore, those who demanded for such need were not from high up rocky areas and thus, it could be easier to create some paved roads in low lying areas than high up sloppy areas full of granite rock boulders/granite bedrocks.

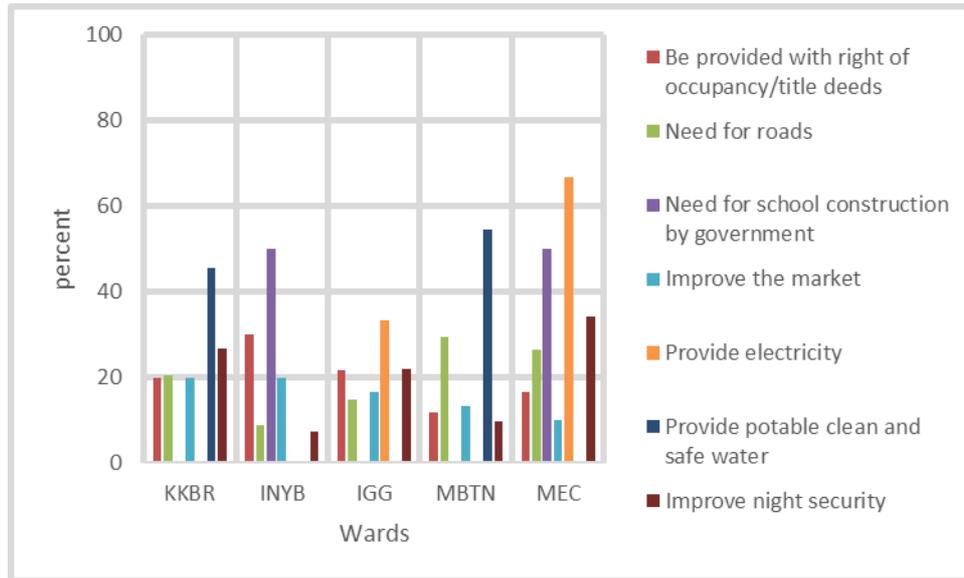
**Table 7.1 Comments on Provided Social Services (N-195)**

Suggestions	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total %
Be provided with right of occupancy/title deeds	20	30	21.7	11.7	16.6	100
Need for roads	20.6	8.8	14.7	29.4	26.5	100
Need for school construction by government	-	50	-	-	50	100
Improve the market	20	20	16.7	13.3	10	100
Provide electricity	-	-	33.3	-	66.7	100
Provide potable clean and safe water	45.5	-	-	54.5	-	100
Improve night security	26.8	07.4	21.9	9.8	34.1	100
Total	23.6	15.9	20.5	18.97	21.03	100

Source: Field data (2013/2014)

Key: KKBR- Kirumba, Kabuhoro; INYB, Isamilo-Nyakabungo; IGG, Igogo; MBTN, Mabatini; and MEC, MECCO

Improvement of markets was suggested by 15.4 percent respondents with a dire need for such measure echoed by respondents from Igogo ward (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). Such need was followed by respondents from Isamilo Nyakabungo (20%) and Kirumba Kabuhoro (20%), while it was minimally (10%) reported by respondents from MECCO ward (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1).

**Figure 7.1 Comments on Provided Social Services**

Source: Field data (2013/2014)

Focus group discussions revealed that they needed construction of police stations in their areas; construction of vocational training institutes in their areas and set aside play grounds for children's sports and their development. They also suggested about construction of health facilities, improvement of roads, strengthen security for days as well as nights in order to curb theft/robbery and construction of permanent markets in their areas. All were reported at all wards though with variations in terms of emphasis, depending on needs/priority according to location.

In chapter five of this work, some respondents disclosed through focus group discussions that they migrated to Mwanza city in order to enjoy security measures employed in urban areas. After all, that was mentioned to be among pull factors that attracted some of them to move to Mwanza city. They recounted that it was more secure to live in urban areas than rural areas where responses by law enforcement organs over episodes like burglary and people's safety were immediate to curb against them. They even mentioned on events like fire outbreaks that were dealt with by fire fighters that are within the central government control and they are only located in urban areas in the country. Moreover, some urban areas had many police posts for dealing with deviance, while in rural areas that was not the case. They recollected that in early 1990s, there were measures to construct police posts in the country that were more concentrated in urban areas than in rural areas and such posts help to maintain law as well as order in urban areas where they are still highly functional. Therefore, such confessions show the manner people in rural areas were pulled towards living in urban areas in order to enjoy security for their properties and their life.

Another thematic question posited in focus group discussions was about the manner to curb unscrupulous house construction in hillocks and other (non-hilly) unplanned areas. Respondents in such groups had the following to say,

*“Iwepo elimu ya ujasiriamali kwa watu waishio vijijini ili wasije mijini; serikali iingilie kati suala la upatikanaji wa viwanja kwa ajili ya makazi bora hasa ofisi ya mipango miji katika kila halmashauri; serikali itoe maeneo mengine kwa tuliojenga holela kisha tuhame na waboreshe maeneo hayo kwani ni karibu na mjini panafaa watu wa kipato cha chini kuishi; na serikali ijenge nyumba ili kuziua kwa bei nafuu ama ipangishe wananchi kwa bei nafuu. Kuwepo na upimaji shirikishi ili tupate hati miliki; maeneo mapya yapimwe, yapangiliwe vyema na yatolewe kwa watu kwa gharama nafuu. Mikopo itolewe ili watu waboreshe makazi yao. Viwanja milimani vitolewe kwa bei kubwa ili kukatisha tamaa watu wasijenege huko. Kuwepo sheria ya kuzuia ujenzi holela na adhabu kwa atakayekiuka. Kuwepo na uelimishaji wa wananchi juu ya makazi bora. Kodi za nyumba zipungue ili tuweze kupanga nyumba kwenye maeneo bora.”*

Literally translated as,

“There should be good education on entrepreneurship so that people living in villages should not migrate to urban areas; there should be government intervention on the aspect of plot allocation for good human habitation especially involvement of urban planning offices for each council; the government should allocate other planned areas so as to resettle those residing in squatter areas and improve such areas because they would be good for low income earners; and the government should build low cost houses for rent as well as sell them to citizens at low costs. There should be an integrated land survey so as to provide certificates of right of occupancy for inhabitants. Loans should be provided; survey new areas; organize such areas; and allocate them to people at low costs. Provide loans to people so that they can improve their habitats. Provide plots in hilly areas at high costs as a discouragement for people to build houses there. Institute a law that should prohibit unscrupulous construction accompanied with punitive punishment. Educate people about good habitation. Reduce house rents so that people can rent houses in good/proper areas.”

#### **7.4 Synthesis**

In further determining measures in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city, the researcher had to identify problems and challenges encountered to deal with the stated matters. Such data were properly gleaned out from unstructured interviews and further probing through focus group discussions. In due regard, the following reasons featured prominently as challenges to deal with house construction in squatters: there was population explosion; there were no specially designated as

well as planned areas for human habitation; and the government did not care at all about people with the lowest incomes for allocating pieces of land in planned areas.

Further reasons for unresolved challenges that caused government's failure in dealing with squatter areas disclosed from the focus group discussions included the following: the government failed to deal as well as resolve the human habitation problem in unplanned areas at an early stage before it escalated up to an uncontrollable level; government officials were mixing politics in dealing with squatter settlement problems; and leaders were afraid from being blamed by citizens for taking actions like house demolition as a measure to evict people from unplanned settlements.

Moreover, people settled in squatter areas because planned as well as surveyed areas designated for human habitation were difficult to acquire due to huge expenses together with bureaucratic bottlenecks accompanied with corruption on plot allocation to ordinary citizens. Moreover, it was revealed that there was no cooperation with local government authority leaders, especially at grass roots level, for example, street leaders, in dealing with squatter settlement problems. Besides, they observed that surveys for plots for human habitation were delayed and such actions were expensive thereby rendering it difficult for low income earners to afford. Furthermore, they argued that local government authorities were powerless with no ability over matters pertaining to land allocation at all avenues. Also respondents recounted that the government tried to evict people from unplanned settlements without proper procedures such that there was chaos and revolted because people had no alternative areas for resettlement.

On the other hand, it was revealed by Mwanza city officials that they launched participatory survey along un-surveyed residential areas and people were supposed to pay collectively some survey nominal fee. However, it was disclosed that such approach failed because people felt that survey charges under the said scheme were very high. They met at their respective street chairpersons and tried to raise funds needed for the surveys but many failed to raise the required total amounts for such programme. In addition, many respondents recalled that they decided to establish dwelling places in unplanned areas because they could not afford to buy plots in planned areas. Thus, they accounted for spread and uncontrolled settlement areas, the squatters.

Furthermore, through focus group discussions, it was disclosed that utility entities like Mwanza Urban Water Supplies (MWAUWASA) provisioned water to some people who could afford but not as planned. Advanced reasons included poor terrain that makes it difficult for the utility entity to lay pipelines as required. There were some people who were connected illegally and obtained water with bills, while some were not billed such that the water utility entity always searches for defaulters and

illegally water connected people. Thus, a few who can afford sell water by digging personal wells that they sell and vendors fetch water by paying a token amount of money and fill-up in containers. Other people went at such points and bought water to fill up their containers.

For sources of energy for cooking and lighting, there are some residents connected to the public power entity, Tanzania Electric Supply Company Limited (TANESCO) but there are others connected illegally by unofficial artisans. The said people are always hunted by TANESCO because they deny revenues and rights for the utility company by tapping energy badly.

However, results from the study uncovered that many people in squatter areas connect to power utility company for lighting and a few use such power for cooking as well as food storage for future use. Otherwise, many use sources of energy like charcoal for cooking and very few use liquefied gas as well as kerosene (or paraffin) for such needs. For sources of energy for cooking, many people use charcoal and kerosene in many urban areas of Tanzania including Mwanza city.

The study sought for comments on provided social services so as to gauge whether or not Social Responsibility Approach was considered in their provision by different stakeholders. As already presented in chapters one and two of this thesis, stakeholders to that end include the government (central government as well as local government authorities), individuals and organizations/entities such as Non-governmental Organizations, Civil Society Organizations and Faith-Based Organizations. Thus, the researcher examined the mentioned key players' efforts towards prevention and control of squatter settlements of Mwanza city.

Some suggestions for government interventions meant to keep squatter settlements continue were provided from questionnaire. Respondents disclosed that provision of title deeds to their built-up plots featured the most (30.8%) among all suggestions followed by improvement of night security [(21%) Table 8.2; Figure 8.2]. It implies that people had quest for getting assurance of rights of occupancy for their built-up plots in unplanned settlements but experienced night insecurity. Desire for roads was disclosed by 34(17.4%) of all respondents with Mabatini ward reported by 29.4 percent followed by 26.5 percent respondents of MECCO ward, 20.6 percent respondents of Kirumba Kabuhoro ward, 14.7 percent respondents of Igogo ward and finally, 8.8 percent respondents of Isamilo Nyakabungo ward (see Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). The implication from such variation on priority for roads can be determined from landscape in Mwanza squatter areas whereby they are mostly in hillocks and thus, it is difficult for road construction to be carried out (see Figure 6.3). Therefore, those who demanded for roads were not from high up rocky areas and thus, it could be easier to create some paved roads in low lying areas than high up sloppy areas full of granite rock boulders/granite bedrocks.

Focus group discussion members suggested provision and/or improvement of the following: improvement as well as construction of permanent markets; construction of police stations in their areas; construction of vocational training institutes in their areas; and set aside play grounds for children's sports. They also suggested about construction of health facilities, improvement of roads, strengthen security for days and nights in order to control theft/robbery and construction of permanent markets in their areas.

Another thematic question was about the manner to deal with unscrupulous house construction in hillocks and other (non-hilly) unplanned areas. They suggested government intervention on curbing people's establishment in squatters and discourage rural to urban migration. Also, the government should establish good settlement areas including provision of loans for people to access good areas for habitation.

The central government, local government authorities and public entities play their part in discharge of their duties as mandated by their status. However, respondents in studied squatter settlements revealed their discharge level that portrayed some limited or minimal achievements. Presented challenges as well as problems, to a certain extent, depict partial government's failure in discharge of its duties. Respondents disclosed several challenges and problems that ranged from non-provision of right of occupancy for habitation areas to social services provision like roads construction, provision of business areas, particularly markets, construction of police stations to curb deviance, lack of political will to deal with their problems and semantics to demolish or evict squatters from such areas.

However, respondents provided suggestions as ways to make them stay in such areas whereby the government was seen as failing to deal with them.

Thus, all such entities showed double standards whereby, on one hand, the government wanted to control and prevent squatter settlements but, on the other hand, the government was sympathetic on leaving them settle in such areas through provision of social services including improvement of infrastructure. Therefore, aspects emerge that there is the urge to prevent as well as control sprawl of squatter settlements but there is consideration to that end such that the government is like leaving people settle in the said areas as evidenced in results from this study.

In identifying problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in preventing and controlling increase in squatter settlements in Mwanza city, the researcher provided testable prediction to assess them through the following possibilities: unscrupulous house construction in unplanned (illegal) areas; provision of utilities; and status of provided social services. In achieving needed results for the task, the researcher tested the ensuing prediction, "There are problems and

challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City” The researcher’s hunch was that data from this study will ostensibly show that through appropriate key players’ participation that embrace the central government, local government authorities as well as the private sector, prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city have limited if not very few manageable challenges and problems.

The central government, local government authorities and public entities are mandated to discharge their duties to citizens in the country. Conversely, respondents in studied squatter settlements revealed that the said bodies’ discharge level that exposed some limited or negligible accomplishments. In due regard, identified challenges and problems, to a certain extent, portray partial government’s failure in discharge of its duties. Numerous challenges and problems were identified. They ranged from non-provision of right of occupancy for habitation areas to social services provision like roads construction, provision of business areas, particularly markets, construction of police stations to curb deviance, lack of political will to deal with their problems and semantics to demolish or evict squatters from such areas. Nevertheless, respondents provided suggestions as ways to make them stay in such areas whereby the government was seen as failing to deal with them. As a result, all bodies showed double standards whereby, on one hand, the government wanted to control and prevent squatter settlements but, on the other hand, the government was sympathetic on leaving them settle in such areas through provision of social services including improvement of infrastructure.

Consequently, aspects appear that there is the urge to prevent as well as control spread out of squatter settlements but there is empathy to that end whereby the government is leaving people settle in the said areas as provided in results from this study. All the same, results exhibit key players’ efforts in dealing with squatters at diverse capacities but they need to up-grade their degree and zeal in dealing with identified challenges and problems for good habitation in urban areas like squatter settlements. Such desire was minimally executed through application of social responsibility approach whereby they played their obligation. Therefore, such results led the researcher to confirm the posited assumption that, “There are problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City”

After presentation of challenges as well as problems, it is pertinent to unravel aspects pertaining to determination of initiatives or efforts in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city by several key players. Key players to that end include the central government, local government authorities (from grassroots level, the street, to municipal level), media, private individuals as well as entities. Private entities include civil society organizations, some faith-based and some non-faith-base, local as well as international, all deemed necessary for the

desired cause of control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Thus, the next chapter provides determined or identified main actors' initiatives/efforts in control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city.

**CHAPTER EIGHT**  
**RESULTS V: CURRENT INITIATIVES IN DEALING WITH PREVENTION**  
**AND CONTROL OF SQUATTER SETTLEMENTS IN**  
**MWANZA CITY**

**8 Introduction**

The previous chapter provided uncovered challenges as well as problems in control and prevention of squatter settlements. The next research endeavour involved analysis on the manner social responsibility approach was applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city. In so doing, the researcher assessed efforts from the main actors, namely, the central government as well as local government authorities. The latter comprise Ilemela Municipal Council, Nyamagana Municipal Council and Mwanza City Council. A clear view of local government structure of Mwanza city is provided for in chapter three (Section 3.2) of this thesis. Thus, this part presents efforts by the central government together with local government authorities in prevention and control of squatter settlements and finally, synthesis is provided.

**8.1 Central Government as well as Local Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

Results from this study disclosed the following central government as well as local government initiatives in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city: 26 (23.9%) respondents from Igogo ward reported that the government had plans to improve existing infrastructure in squatter areas (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). Such suggestion featured prominently in all studied wards with a total of 109 (55.9%) respondents (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). Subsequent in frequency about government future plans in dealing with squatter settlements was a suggestion by 45 (23.1%) participants that the government planned to demolish some houses so as to give way for construction of roads, storm water drains, provision of electricity infrastructure and other infrastructural developments (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). The suggestion was provided by participants from all studied wards as exhibited in Table 8.1 and Figure 8.1 as follows: 17(37.8%) participants from MECCO ward; 15(33.3%) respondents from Kirumba Kabuhoro ward; 6(13.3%) respondents from Mabatini ward; 5(11.1%) participants from Isamilo Nyakabungo ward; and the least (4.5%) were participants from Igogo ward.

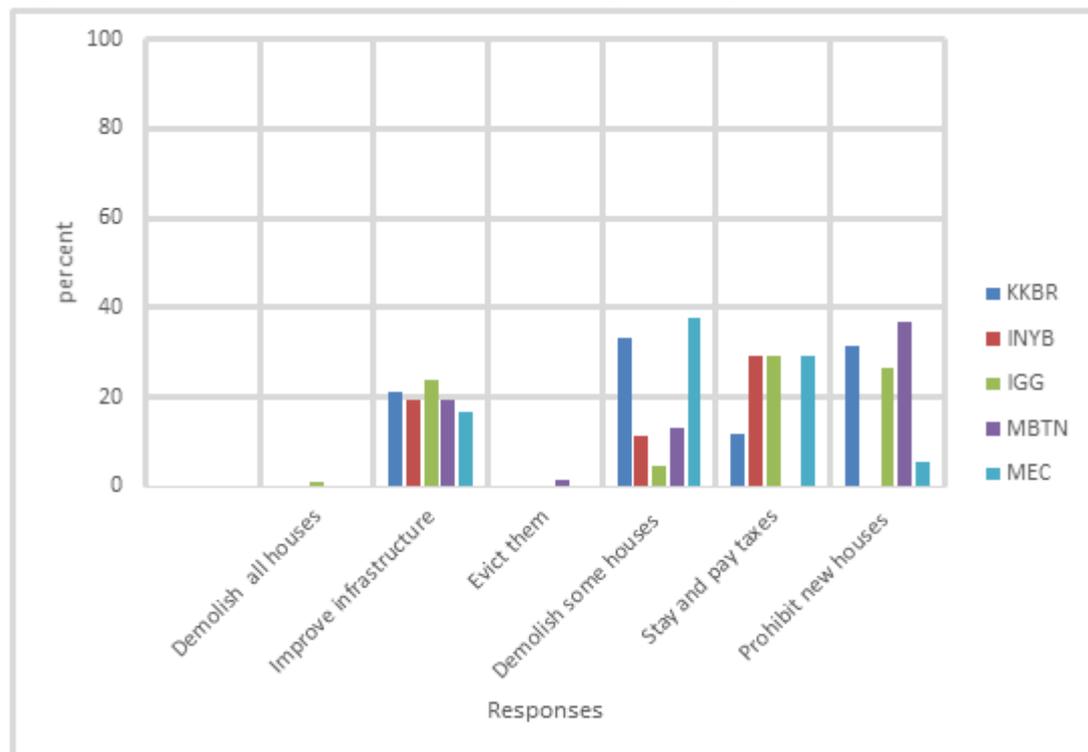
**Table 8.1 Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements (N-195)**

Responses	KKBR %	INYB %	IGG %	MBTN %	MEC %	Total
Demolish all houses	-	-	1.03		-	100
Improve infrastructure	21.1	19.3	23.9	19.3	16.5	100
Evict them	-	-	-	1.5	-	100
Demolish some houses	33.3	11.1	4.5	13.3	37.8	100
Let them stay and pay taxes	11.8	29.4	29.4	-	29.4	100
Prohibit new houses	31.6	-	26.3	36.8	5.3	100
Total	23.6	15.9	20.5	18.97	21.03	100

Source: Field data (2013/2014)

Key: KKBR- Kirumba, Kabuho; INYB, Isamilo-Nyakabungo; IGG, Igogo; MBTN, Mabatini; and MEC, MECCO.

Furthermore, it was revealed by 19(9.7%) participants from the study that the government had plans to prohibit construction of new houses in squatter areas (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). Thus, 17(8.7%) participants reported that government officials were of the view to let squatters stay in such areas as long as they can pay taxes and the least (1%) mentioned government future plan for dealing with squatter settlements was demolition of all houses in squatter areas (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1).

**Figure 8.1 Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

Source: Field data (2013/2014)

Results from Focus Group discussions pertaining to government future plans in dealing with squatter settlements were not different from those obtained from other data collection methods. For example, all respondents (non-local government leaders) to the said aspect in focus group discussions at all wards pointed out that development of infrastructure was the leading government priority not only to squatter settlements but also to other parts of the country in both urban and rural areas. They recalled about general election campaign catch words that most politicians boasted of developed roads infrastructure in the country with concomitant future construction of road networks where passage for people and goods was a problem.

Demolition of all houses was not seen to be a government move as disclosed in the focus group discussion at Igogo. However, there was demolition meant for easing access to some areas due to some reasons as presented in later paragraphs of this thesis. In addition, such settlements were meant to be left continuing because, as reported in this study, a certain leader mentioned that people in squatter settlements, like others elsewhere, were potential voters in the elections. Those at Mabatini ward recalled that even utility companies like Tanzania Electric Supply Company (TANESCO) and the water utility entity, MWAUWASA were at the forefront in providing their services at all places in urban areas including squatter settlements. They remarked that such provision of social services by utility entities was testimony that there was recognition and consideration for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in officially planned as well as registered settlements.

Fear from eviction was only mentioned in the focus group discussion of Mabatini ward, while the rest of the wards never felt that there was such government move. That was not disclosed besides a plea that directed them to reveal government measures in dealing with squatter settlements.

Additionally, focus group discussion members of Isamilo Nyakabungo ward did not remark about prohibition of building new houses in squatter settlements. People in that ward include some with low to low-medium incomes such that they depicted higher understanding level than the rest of people in studied wards. Their houses did not sprawl like in other squatter areas and thus, they did not depict much congestion like in other studied areas. However, in other wards, especially at Mabatini and Kirumba Kabuhoro wards, focus group discussion members felt that their leaders were not in favour of building new houses there. Leaders advised them not to construct new house structures.

Recall, it is already reported in Chapter Seven (Section 7.1) of this thesis that as a way of controlling and preventing squatter settlements, Mwanza city officials disclosed that they instituted participatory survey along planned but un-surveyed plots for residential areas. In such areas, people were required to pay for some survey

small fee. A few areas have been in the said programme but it was disclosed that such measure hit a hurdle because people felt that survey charges under the said scheme were very high and unaffordable.

Thus, city authorities and the central government are trying to discourage people from developing in squatters but the envisaged measures are not working. They are planning to demolish some houses due to several reasons. House demolition has been done so as to create space for undertaking the following: pave as well as build street roads so that they will create accessibility to such settlements; enhance waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary and secondary schools; build health facilities (dispensaries as well as health centres); build markets; and build police stations.

## **8.2 Synthesis**

In continued undertakings to determine prevention and control of squatter settlements, the researcher examined instituted efforts by the central government together with local government authorities to that end. This part of the thesis uncovered that the central government in conjunction with local government authorities had plans to improve existing infrastructure in squatter areas; and they had plans to prohibit construction of new houses in squatter areas (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). On the other hand, 8.7 percent participants reported that government officials were of the view to let squatters stay in such areas as long as they can pay taxes (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1).

Results from Focus Group discussions concerning government future plans in dealing with squatter settlements were not different from those obtained from other employed data collection methods. For example, all respondents (non-local government leaders) in focus group discussions at all wards pointed out that development of infrastructure was the leading government precedence not only to squatter settlements but also to other parts of the country in both urban and rural areas.

Demolition of houses was not seen to be a government measure as disclosed in the focus group discussions at Igogo. However, demolition of some houses was performed due to the following reasons: pave as well as construct street roads so that they will generate accessibility to settlements; enhance waste collection together with their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary and secondary schools; construct health facilities (dispensaries as well as health centres); build markets; and construct police stations.

In another vein, it was disclosed that they had to keep such settlements due to some political reasons. For example, it was disclosed that one leader argued that people in squatter settlements, like others elsewhere, were significant voters in the elections.

Some respondents, for instance, those at Mabatini ward recalled that even utility companies like Tanzania Electric Supply Company (TANESCO) and Mwanza Urban Water Supply Authority (MWAUWASA) were at the forefront in provision of services at all places in urban areas including squatter settlements. Thus, such moves by utility entities were interpreted that there was recognition and consideration for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in officially planned as well as registered settlements.

This study uncovered minimal level of threats from the government against people's decisions of settling permanently in squatter areas. For example, fear from eviction was only mentioned in the focus group discussion of Mabatini ward, while the rest of the wards never felt that there was such government move. More to the point, focus group discussion members of Isamilo Nyakabungo ward did not remark on aspects regarding prohibition of building new houses in squatter settlements. Residents in Isamilo-Nyakabungo ward include some with low to low-medium incomes such that they depicted higher understanding level than the rest of people in studied wards. Their houses did not spread like in other squatter areas thereby they did not depict much congestion like in other studied areas.

Mwanza city officials disclosed that they initiated participatory survey along planned but unsurveyed plots for residential areas. In such move, people were required to pay for some survey nominal fee. However, the exercise failed because people felt that survey charges under the said scheme were very expensive and unaffordable.

The city authority and central government is discouraging people from developing in squatters but the measures are not working. Moreover, they are planning to demolish some houses in order to create space for undertaking the following: pave as well as construct street roads for creating accessibility to the said settlements; facilitate waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary as well as secondary schools; build health facilities; construct markets; and build police stations.

In accruing advanced data interpretation regarding the sub-research question, "How can social responsibility approach be applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city?" the researcher gathered data on initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements that were further analysed to gauge whether or not the applied social responsibility approach. Such responsibility involved assessment central government as well as local government authorities' initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements; civil society organizations' role in prevention and control of squatter settlements; individuals' role in dealing with prevention as well as control of squatter settlements; and the role of media in prevention as well as control of squatter settlements. Thus, to appropriately interpret the data for the desired task, the researcher premised

through the assumption that, “Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city”

Pursuant to findings sought to advance data interpretation, the formulated assumption was tested and led to subsequent submissions: first, it was uncovered that the central government together with the local government authorities had plans to improve existing infrastructure in squatter areas. On the other hand, it was underscored that such efforts were among main government priorities not only to squatter settlements but also to other parts of the country, both urban and rural areas. Second, demolition of some houses was seen to be a government move that aimed at paving and constructing street roads so that they will make accessibility to such settlements; facilitate waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary as well as secondary schools; build health facilities (dispensaries as well as health centres); build markets; and construct police stations.

Third, in the contrary, there were polarised views from government authorities and political echelons who vied to keep squatter settlements undisturbed due to some political ends, while others thought of discouraging sprawl of such settlements. For instance, it was recounted that one leader argued that people in squatter settlements, like others elsewhere in the country, were important voters in elections and thus, they had to be left reside in squatter areas. In another dimension, it was narrated that utility companies like Tanzania Electric Supply Company (TANESCO) and Mwanza Urban Water Supply Authority (MWAUWASA) were at the head in provision of services at all places in urban areas including squatter settlements. Besides, it was argued, in squatters’ favour, that such undertakings by utility entities were interpreted to be in recognition as well as thoughtfulness for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in officially planned as well as registered settlements and thus, it was an insignia of authentication of leaving squatter settlements untouched.

Fourth, it was unearthed that there was minimal level of threats from the government against people’s decisions of settling permanently in squatter areas. For example, fear from eviction was only mentioned at one of the studied wards, while the rest of respondents from other wards never felt that there was such government move. In further justification of such lack of threat from government, respondents did not remark on aspects regarding prohibition of building new houses in squatter settlements. After all, there were areas that embraced some residents with low to low-medium incomes such that they portrayed higher understanding level than the rest of people in studied wards whereby they built houses that did not extend like in other squatter areas. Such pattern did not show much overcrowding like in other studied areas.

Fifth, Mwanza city officials revealed that they launched participatory survey along un-surveyed plots for residential areas. In due regard, people were required to pay for some survey nominal fee. Conversely, the exercise failed because people felt that survey charges under the scheme were very high and unaffordable.

Sixth, Mwanza city authority including municipal councils and central government is discouraging people from developing in squatter areas but the measures are not working. As already recounted from respondents, local government authority officials unveiled that they were planning to pull down some houses so as to generate space for infrastructure development and social services provision. For example, such spaces were needed by local government authorities so that they can build street roads to form accessibility to the said settlements that will, in turn, facilitate waste collection together with waste disposal; improve social services provision by constructing new and/or adding buildings for primary as well as secondary schools; construct health facilities; build markets; and construct police stations.

Thus, critical evaluation of presented results portrays that, on one hand, the central government together with local authorities are in a position to prevent as well as control squatter settlements at various scopes. On the other hand, such authorities are provisioning social services to the studied squatter areas. However, in combination with other submitted results from this thesis, there are initiatives that portray the central government and local authorities, among key players, somehow employ social responsibility in discharge of their duties aimed at some marked level of prevention and control of squatter settlements in the studied areas. In due regard, the researcher accepted the premised assumption that, "Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city".

This is the final chapter in series of other chapters four, five, six and seven that together provide results from this thesis. The subsequent chapter provides discussion of results. The chapter provides discussion by considering determinations based on hypotheses test results and conceptual framework already submitted in chapter one of this work. In addition, the discussion is tailored towards aspects that revolved around theoretical grounding and empirical works as submitted in chapter two of this thesis.

## **CHAPTER NINE**

### **DISCUSSION OF RESULTS**

#### **9 Introduction**

As submitted in chapter one of this thesis, the main task of this study, through Social Responsibility Approach, sought to examine obligations among inhabitants (the squatters), the local government authorities (Nyamagana Municipal Council as well as Ilemela Municipal Council), the central government and civil society organizations in regard to impacts (negative or positive) upon the environment (squatter environment). In addition, the study sought to underpin whether or not their actions created equilibrium [benefit(s) to society] or disequilibrium to the environment by being irresponsible or responsible. In so doing, several avenues were used and furnished results from chapter four to chapter eight of this thesis. They included determination of respondents' demographic characteristics through their distribution in regard to their gender; age groups; education levels; religious affiliation; ethnic group; marital status; house ownership or rent; and employment status. Determination of demographic features was due to the fact that demographers including other social scientists (Hossain, 2001) hold that most socio-economic characteristics for instance, marital status, migration and social services like schools, health facilities, housing as well as transport depend on demographic characteristics. Thus, this study used such features to get the real status by comparing them with provided social services in squatter areas of Mwanza city.

In addition, this study sought to identify features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city and compared with features from other parts around the world. chapter one of this thesis provided the world view pertaining to the research problem and submitted definition connoting for squatter settlements including their features around the world. Thus, this study desired to determine features as well as causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city for properly understanding them so as to proceed with determination of the main mission, examination of whether or not responsible parties employed social responsibility approach as a pertinent pathway in prevention and control of squatter settlements of Mwanza city.

Moreover, the researcher examined whether or not there was utilisation of Social Responsibility Approach by key players in prevention and control of squatter settlements in the study area. The key players include the central government and local government authorities. The researcher envisaged that data for the said aspect will help to discern the manner the mentioned key parties undertake measures that enhance control and limit squatter sprawl in Mwanza city.

Additional key players include the private sector represented by civil organizations like Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs), Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), business persons and individuals. All were expected to be determined whether or not they worked together with the government

(central and local government authorities) in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city at various capacities. In addition, at the core, it was deemed necessary to examine the role of media in working together with the other key players as highlighted through Social Responsibility Approach. The media represent an agency extremely important in communication and dissemination of issues pertaining to society in all walks of life for socio-economic development. In due regard, media role was analysed so as to identify their contribution towards prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city.

The next research endeavour involved analysis of instituted efforts through social responsibility approach in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city. In that way, the researcher assessed efforts from the main actors, the central government and local government authorities. The latter comprise Ilemela Municipal Council, Nyamagana Municipal Council and Mwanza City Council.

Thus, presented results from this study from chapters four to eight paved the way for discussion that involved incorporation of hypotheses test results and conceptual framework already submitted in chapter one of this work. In addition, the discussion is tailored towards aspects that revolved around theoretical grounding and empirical works as submitted in chapter two of this thesis.

In due regard this chapter is composed of the following sections: respondents' social characteristics; features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city; problems and challenges in prevention and control of squatter settlements; current initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city; the manner social responsibility approach can be applied to prevent as well as control an increase in squatter settlements and discussion pertaining to theoretical stances in dealing with squatter settlements.

## **9.1 Respondents' Social Characteristics**

This section presents discussion of results concerning respondents' social characteristics. Such discussion will help in understanding the issue of rural-urban migration in a proper socio-demographic perspective. The section is composed of the following sub-sections: respondents' distribution by gender as well as age group; education levels; religious affiliation; ethnic group; marital status; house ownership/house or room rent; and employment status.

### **9.1.1 Respondents' Distribution by Gender and Age**

#### **9.1.1.1 Respondents' Distribution by Gender**

In terms of respondents' distribution by gender, results from the study revealed that more females (61.2%) than males (38.8%) migrated to studied squatter areas in Mwanza city (see Table 4.1; Figure 4.1). That pattern of rural to urban migration and staying in squatters was revealed as follows: Kirumba had 63 percent; Isamilo

accounted for 52 percent; Igogo scored at 57 percent; Mabatini had 69 percent and MECCO had 66 percent (Table 4.1; Figure 4.1). Such statistics for having more female than male migrants were due to push-pull factors like women joining their spouses, women escaping from discrimination and women getting employment in households. On the other hand, few males migrated because of wage labour, business undertakings and other means for their survival. There are variations in regard to gender and age pattern for squatter across the world as shown by various proponents as presented in the next paragraphs.

Gugler (1989: 348) reported presence of more women than men in urban areas due to rural-urban migration in the Third World. For example, in Latin America and the Caribbean, women outnumbered men in the urban population of every country and it was similar to the Philippines (Gugler, 1989: 348). But at other places, for example, in South Asia, men were recorded to outnumber women by a substantial margin (Gugler, 1989: 348).

In Sub-Saharan Africa, it was reported that there were more men than women as highly exhibited in Botswana where men migrated to mines in South Africa (Gugler, 1989: 350). Elsewhere in Sub-Saharan Africa, it was revealed that countries had rather small populations and/or were known as major exporters of male labour, for example, Benin, Burundi, Central African Republic, Chad, Congo, Gabon, Guinea, Malawi, Mozambique, Rwanda and Togo (Gugler, 1989: 50). It implies that such countries had migrant labour with male outnumbered female populations in urban areas due to employment.

In another vein, several studies indicated that rates of female migration were higher than previously observed as well as more complex than it was believed. In due regard, migration has gender-differentiated causes and consequences. Kholsa (2012: 13) advanced that female migration was increasing despite restrictions of women's dependent position within the family and society because households were in dire need for income and in some places, many employment opportunities were available to women. It was further upheld that in some towns and cities in Latin America and the Caribbean together with parts of South East Asia, rural outmigration was female selective whereby urban sex ratios usually exhibited more women than men and levels of female headed households were higher in urban than rural areas (Kholsa, 2012: 13). Furthermore, it was argued that such similar pattern was due to the fact that scale and nature of migration into urban areas in Latin America were highly predisposed by decisions in rural households about the kind of person to migrate and reasons due to constraints placed on women's work outside the home by households together with demand for female labour in urban areas (see Kholsa, 2012: 13).

Several proponents remarked that an older adolescent girl is greatly likely to get employment in a city rather than in a village (for example, Kholsa, 2012: 13). It was

held by Kholsa (2012: 13) that some African countries have a pattern whereby the adolescent girl is likely able to marry at an earlier age in rural areas than in urban areas like that expected in other parts of the world. For example, in Sub-Saharan Africa and South Asia, half (50%) of young women in rural areas are married by the time they are 18 years old, a pattern about twofold the rate of young women in cities (Kholsa, 2012: 13). Kholsa (2012: 13) argues that urbanization can offer girls and women employment as well as education opportunities unavailable in rural areas. The said employment as well as education opportunities could offer women great social and cultural alternatives including economic independence, aspects that can never be realized in rural areas (Kholsa, 2012: 13). Also, several other reasons were cited that contributed to many women's rural-urban migration trend in squatter settlements, in particular. Women were said not to have livelihood means in villages like inheritance rights to land enjoyed by men (Kholsa, 2012: 13). For example, in another dimension, it was revealed that in Mali, Nigeria, Vietnam and Tanzania, many young women migrated from rural to urban areas so as to improve their economic alternatives including their socio-cultural rights (Kholsa, 2012: 14) such that they lived inexpensively and negotiated for their health.

Another feature examined for understanding respondents involved their age profiles in order to determine the most numerous ages and the least numerous ages involved in rural to urban migration. Thus, respondents' age profile is presented in the subsequent sub-section.

#### **9.1.1.2 Respondents' Distribution by Age**

In regard to respondents' age, it was disclosed that more (50%) youth aged between 18 and 35 years migrated as well as settled in squatter areas than those 55 and above years old who accounted for 8 percent followed by 30 percent aged between 36 and 45 years (see Table 4.2; Figure 4.2). Kholsa (2012: 14) quoted the State of the World Population Report by United Nations Population Fund (UNFPA) released in 2006 that revealed a pattern whereby young people aged between 15 and 29 years old make up half the total international migration flow, which is a similar trend for rural to urban migration.

The best way to illuminate the point is the following pattern showing similarities from other parts around the world in regard to the most numerous ages for migrants from rural to urban areas. A analogous example observed in this study over squatter settlements showing youth in the age bracket between 15 to 35 years old on migration from rural was observed from other areas that included the following: i) in Nigeria, Pam (2014: 122) reported that approximately 60 percent of productive youths migrate to urban centers due to push factors like lack of essential services such as electricity, water, good roads, clinics and good housing, low agricultural productivity and low living standards. ii) A study at Ogun Waterside Local Government Area of Ogun State in Nigeria carried out by Okhankhuele and

Opafunso (2013: 191) revealed that youths aged between 18 and 29 years old migrated in large number in search for social services, in particular, education and employment in towns as well as cities. iii) In Ethiopia, mostly in Addis Ababa city, Bezu and Holden (2014: 16) disclosed that 51 percent youth migrated in urban areas in the age group between 15 and 35 years old accounted for 51 percent, while those in age group age group between 35 and 55 years old were only 24 percent. iv) Many youths are encouraged by old people to migrate for wage for labour in industrialized Dhaka urban areas, Bangladesh because rural areas are declining in terms of job creation (Ishtiaque, 2013: 50).

A slightly different pattern of results from Mwanza was revealed by Gibson and Gurmu (2012), whereby they disclosed that 15.5 percent of youths aged between 15 and 30 years old migrated from rural areas to close towns of Derra and Iteya in Ethiopia. The main reasons disclosed for such rural to urban migration encompassed the following pull factors: in search for high school education by many (75%) or employment in casual labour (13%), accompanying family and visiting relatives (*ibid.*). Those who sought for education returned to villages after obtaining one extra grade (*ibid.*) and thus, a slight difference depicted in terms of lower pattern than that depicted from results from Mwanza city is marked by reasons for Ethiopian youths' movements to urban areas.

Respondents' education levels were examined so as to determine their magnitude in squatter areas of Mwanza city. The next sub-section furnishes results pertaining to respondents' education levels.

### **9.1.2 Respondents' Education Levels**

This study endeavoured to analyze respondents' education levels so as to determine that pattern in regard to the most numerous and the least numerous population segments involved in squatting in urban areas. Recall, respondents for this study had varied education levels (Table 4.3; Figures 4.3). Results from the study revealed that 12 percent of all respondents were illiterates with males represented by 5 percent and females accounted for 7 percent, while those who never completed primary education cycle accounted for 3 percent females and 2 percent males (Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). In addition, more females (36%) than males (23%) completed primary education level, while 11 percent males and 10 percent females completed secondary education (Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). With regard to tertiary education (college education), only 4 (2%) males and 2 (1%) females had college education in the study areas (Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). In due regard, results from this study imply that there was a higher illiteracy level among female respondents than male respondents in the study area (see Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). Such results are similar to those obtained from a study of squatter settlements in Kore, Addis Ababa, Ethiopia by Bahir (2010: 226) who revealed that there was the relatively higher illiteracy level among women than men.

Furthermore, such low education level of the urban poor was identified in a study by Lewis (2000, cited in Bahir, 2010: 226) in Puerto Rico as well as Mexico and was comparable to that of Kore (Addis Ababa, Ethiopia) squatters. In Kore squatters, it was exposed that majority of females had low junior education, while many males completed both junior and secondary education levels (Bahir, 2010: 226). Such pattern in Kore is not so much different from studied squatters in Mwanza city (see Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). The next sub-section provides discussion concerning respondents' distribution by religious affiliation.

### **9.1.3 Religious Affiliations**

This study examined respondents' religious affiliation so as to determine further demographic characteristics of squatter settlers in Mwanza city. Bear in mind, results from this study report religious denominations at a general pattern rather than segregated religious sects. They included Christians, Moslems and believers in African traditional religious sects (see Table 4.4; and Figure 4.4).

It was exposed from this study that only three (1%) males believed/practiced African traditional religion (Table 4.4; Figure 4.4). Respondents in the study area constituted more Christian believers (14% males and 21% females) than Moslems who comprised for 6 percent males and 8 percent females, respectively (Table 4.4; Figure 4.4). It has to be noted that such status does not necessarily imply that squatter areas in Mwanza city were constituted by more Christian believers than Moslem believers. It was a chance for having such respondents but did not represent a count like a population census. After all, even the last country's census did not include the factor of religious denominations among other factors like ethnicity (see Census Country Report by NBS, 2012). This pattern of mixed population groups, regardless of their religious affiliation, was incepted since independence by the first president of the country, Mwalimu Julius Kambarage Nyerere. Since then, to-date, people share habitats and even get married in harmony, regardless of their religious orientation. Ethnic group affiliation was examined because it was an important feature to identify whether or not some respondents were clustered in squatter areas based on their ethnicity. Thus, the following sub-section provides discussion pertaining to respondents' distribution by their ethnic group affiliation.

### **9.1.4 Distribution of Respondents by their Ethnic Origins**

This study identified several ethnic groups in Mwanza city mostly from neighbouring regions like Mara, Tabora, Kagera and Kigoma (see Table 4.5; Figure 4.5). As long as ethnic groups have known places of origin, such variable was useful to determine squatters' places of domicile as a result of push and pull factors to squat in Mwanza city. For example, getting employment in urban areas such as MWATEX, fish processing plants like VICFISH, undertaking small businesses, looking for social services like accessing good health services as well as school for children and running away from women discrimination. Recall, the latter was mentioned included

adolescent girls running away from FGM and wife beating. Almost similar reasons like employment were identified in Dar es Salaam city squatter areas by Limbumba (2012). Moreover, it was disclosed that people migrated from rural to urban in Dhakar, Bangladesh due to wage employment and sporadic flooding events (Ishtiaque, 2013).

Results from the study (see Table 4.5; Figure 4.5) revealed that Wasukuma outnumbered (a total of 56 with 14 males and 42 females) those who have settled in squatter areas in Mwanza city (Table 5; Figure 5). Wasukuma ethnic group are among dominant ethnic groups residing in Mwanza, they are the main inhabitants of Mwanza region (for location please see Figure 3.3, Mwanza City Council, 2014) and they form the largest ethnic group in the country (Nyang'aro, 2004: 7).

Regardless of mixed ethnic groups identified in the study area, all squatter settlements are demarcated with dominant ethnic groups such that they have place names *kwa* Wakurya in Mabatini ward meaning at Wakurya, *kwa* Wanyamwezi in Igogo ward and so forth for the other squatter settlements in Mwanza city. For example, Isamilo-Nyakabungo and Mabatini wards are heavily populated by ethnic groups from Mara region like Wakurya, Wazanaki, Wanata and so forth. Such pattern happened because the first settlers from Mara region attracted them to live in the mentioned squatters. Likewise, Igogo ward is dominated by people from Tabora region (Wanyamwezi) and Kigoma region (Waha and Wabembe). Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward is dominated by people from Kagera region (Wahaya) followed by Wakerewe and Wakara from Ukerewe district in Mwanza region.

In Nairobi Kenya, almost comparable to the situation observed in Mwanza city, squatters live in ethnic identity or ethnic divisions as submitted by Father Gerald Whelan (2006). The proponent (*ibid.*) argued that the said squatter patterns ensue because living in harmony among different ethnic groups becomes difficult due to differences in socio-cultural values. A similar observation was presented by Bodewes (2005) for squatter settlements in Kibera area in Nairobi city. Probably, with different history from Tanzania, the said demarcations in Mwanza city do not feature much as strict divisions due to the fact that even a few years before independence of mainland Tanzania (then Tanganyika on 9<sup>th</sup> December, 1961), the first president for Tanzania, Mwalimu Julius Nyerere and his compatriots advocated for no division of ethnicity and religious sects. They worked hard to unite people by using also language, Kiswahili thereby there are mixed marriages with disregard to religious denominations or ethnicity in Tanzania. Thus, the presented demarcations for Mwanza exhibit dominance while squatters live as mixed population groups in terms of religious denominations and ethnic groups with no discrimination.

It has to be understood that some African countries have youths who migrate to urban areas and form alliances that lead them to undertake some development

projects. However, such alliances did not show that they involved persons from the same ethnic group but people from the same rural areas. For example, in Nigeria, rural to urban migrants undertake rural development projects in their areas of origin and they form in urban areas (in squatter areas) rural community associations (Ajaero & Onokala, 2013). The said community associations always articulate developmental needs of their rural communities of origin and they contribute resources to undertake projects like road construction including award of scholarships to students residing in rural areas (*ibid.*).

In another vein, such migrants provide remittances to their parents in rural areas whereby they use them for various purposes (*ibid.*). Also, a similar pattern was reported by Pam (2014) in Nigeria whereby urban migrants facilitate remittances that are used to buy fertilizers, other farm inputs as well as payment for school fees and medical bills. Another important demographic feature that was examined was marital status. Discussion pertaining to this feature is submitted in the following sub-section.

#### **9.1.5 Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status**

Respondents' marital status in Mwanza city squatter areas was examined because it is an important demographic characteristic for further understanding patterns of squatters. It was revealed from the study that 35.2 percent men and 37.7 percent women were married, while there were 12.3 percent widows and 1.98 percent widowers (Table 4.6; Figure 4.6). It was further disclosed from the study that there were 4.82 percent and 5 percent unmarried men and women, respectively (Table 4.6; Figure 4.6).

The identified marital statuses exhibit that push-pull factors contributed to such varied population segments. Some people migrated to urban areas for being married, while others being single migrated to urban areas for wage employment and others moved into Mwanza squatters so as to carry out petty businesses like sale of second hand clothes, food vending and the like.

#### **9.1.6 Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership**

Besides, the study obtained information pertaining to house ownership or house rent by people living in squatter settlements in Mwanza city (see Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). That was important for many aspects including knowing people living in squatters in terms of affordability/capability to own or rent houses.

In regard to house ownership, it was uncovered that 21 percent men and 22 percent women stayed in houses they owned (Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). Also, it was indicated from the study that 21 percent men and 36 percent women stayed in rented houses (Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). MECCO ward had more female owned houses than the rest of the wards followed by men from Igogo ward (see Table 4.7; Figure 4.6). Then, more females rented houses from Kirumba ward than the rest of the wards followed

by females living in MECCO ward (Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). Many people were found living together in rooms that included sharing a single room, especially youngsters and others who were still eking out their living as dependants. Such measures were meant to carry out cost-sharing as a way to settle in urban areas with less financial constraints. In other instances, people were found renting with house owner-occupiers, while others were solely renting without house owner-occupiers. Results from this study imply that many people moved to squatter areas because they were constrained by incomes that militated for them to look for houses or rooms with low rents and living costs that appeared to be ideal options for them to settle there. Similar scenarios were uncovered before by other authors in other parts of the country as presented in the next paragraph.

A study by Limbumba (2010: 95) at Hannanasifu and Keko Machungwa squatter settlement areas in Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania disclosed that demand for rental accommodation was high such that it paved way for high population densities as well as encroachment of housing development in a nearby river valley. It was further established that rooms were booked in advance even at the time a house was under construction (Limbumba, 2010: 95). On the other hand, house owners added rooms for rent wherever there was space, an aspect that increased further population density in such squatter settlements in Dar es Salaam city (Limbumba, 2010: 95).

Further assessment of respondents' characteristics involved their employment status so as to understand about their means for survival. The feature is discussed in the subsequent sub-section.

### **9.1.7 Employment Status**

In regard to employment status, findings from this study uncovered that some were employed in the public sector as teachers at both primary (elementary) and secondary schools; health workers (dispensaries, health centres, hospitals that are private as well as public); and others were professional workers together with non-skilled workers at Ilemela as well as Nyamagana Municipal Councils. Others were employed in private sector, for example, fish processing plants, Mwanza Textile Mills, Nyanza Bottling Company, commuter buses in the city, taxi operations, motorcycle operations, tricycle operations, women's hair salons, men's hair salons and so on.

In another vein, self-employment involved people's activities that included fish mongers, sale of used clothes as well as shoes, sale of fruits and vegetables, part-time maids (house girls), waste collectors, operators of small shops and food vending (commonly known in Kiswahili as *mama lische* and literally translated as mother for food/nutrition). House girls are house workers (young girls, mostly teenagers) involved with house chores instead of mother houses. Such young ladies are mostly employed by people working in either public offices or private establishments.

Additional findings from this study portrayed that, people living in squatter settlements are involved in many activities at diverse capacities. Some are employed as professionals in public and private sectors while others are in the informal sector carrying out various activities, skilled and unskilled. All such undertakings support submissions from previous research works in Tanzania (for example, Magigi and Majani, 2005) and outside Tanzania. Magigi and Majani (2005: 4) explored communities in squatter settlement upgrading projects at Ibungilo in Mwanza city and Ubungo Darajani in Dar es Salaam, Tanzania. They (*ibid.*) revealed that major economic and income generation activities carried out in the studied squatter settlements included gardening; business undertakings; garages; hotels/restaurants; animal keeping/poultry keeping; and off-farm undertakings (carpentry as well as sale of timber).

Similar situations in squatter settlements like those studied in Mwanza city can be discerned around the world. For example, in Ethiopia, Bahir (2010: 227) reported daily labour earnings together with informal activities in squatters for their livelihoods for majority of sampled households in Kore squatter settlements of Addis Ababa city in Ethiopia.

This is the final sub-section in regard to discussion concerning respondents' demographic characteristics. The following section provides discussion of results in regard to features as well as causes of squatter settlements in the studied areas.

## **9.2 Features and Causes of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City**

This section provides discussion on features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Discussion pertaining to features and causes of squatter settlements exhibit the real pattern in the study areas in comparison with other areas around the world. The discussion begins with features of squatter settlements followed by causes of such settlements.

### **9.2.1 Features of Squatter Settlements of Mwanza City**

In regard to understanding features of squatter settlements of Mwanza city, this sub-section provides discussion on definition of the term squatter; trend analysis of rural to urban migration (migration periods); households' source of energy for cooking; households' source of energy for lighting; households' access to safe as well as clean water; and a general comparison of features revealed from other parts of the world.

Through close-ended questionnaire, the study got responses in regard to the term squatter as presented in Table 5.1 and Figure 5.1 to mean the following: income poverty; bad physical condition of housing; social deprivation; and landless people. Such understanding of the term was further extracted from this study that was reported to connote the following: use of poor, environmental unfriendly sources of

energy for cooking as well as lighting, lack of ownership of plots for housing with no right of occupancy, house/room renting with sharing of utilities, lack of sources of clean, potable as well as safe water, lack of proper waste management and lack of public social services like health as well as infrastructure like paved roads. Results from this study present similar submissions to UN-HABITAT (2003: 11) Global Report on Human Settlements that provides the following characteristics of squatter settlements: lack of basic services; poor quality housing or illegal as well as inadequate building structures; overcrowding together with high density; unhealthy living conditions as well as hazardous locations; insecure tenure, irregular or informal settlements; poverty as well as social exclusion; and finally, minimum settlement size.

In order to get a clear understanding on the manner Mwanza city has been getting people from rural areas, the study carried out a trend analysis for forty years from 1970 to 2010 (see Table 5.1 and Figure 5.1). In addition, the analysis was categorized in five-year periods. Overall, results from the study revealed that the period between 1986 and 1990 had the most numerous of all people in squatter settlements followed by 1996 and 2000 (see Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Igogo ward received more (42%) inhabitants than all wards followed by 23 percent of people at Isamilo-Nyakabungo ward (Table 5.2' Figure 5.2). The earliest of all places to be settled was revealed to be Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward whereby people started moving in from 1970 to 1975 (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Mabatini ward was next with more people (27%) than the rest of the wards (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). The period between 2006 and 2010 had the least people who moved in the studied wards with 14 percent at Igogo ward, 29 percent at Mabatini ward and with a lot of people (57%) out of such a minority who settled at MECCO ward (see Table 5.2; Figure 5.2).

Reported migration scenarios were due to the following pull factors: first, people settled initially at Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward areas due to close proximity to Kirumba international fish market whereby people are involved in fish business and related businesses within the vicinities. Second, people settled at Mabatini as well as Igogo ward areas due to closeness to Mwanza city centre as well as health facilities (Bugando zonal referral hospital and Sekou Toure regional hospital). In such areas, it is easy for people to access places with social services like health and take part in business ventures as well as wage employment. Third, it was easy to access houses and/or room(s) for rent at affordable low rates.

Presented results from this study portray the manner typical urban growth processes have been and they are still, occurring around the world through time. As recounted in history of urban growth in chapter one of this thesis, it was reported that as long as cities grew, people gathered to towns in search for work, wage employment as well as access social services like education including health (see Limbumba, 2012; UN-HABITAT, 1996: 87). It is a situation similarly portrayed with sprawl of Mwanza

settlements - squatters of Mwanza city being a case in point portrayed from results from this study.

The study analyzed households' sources of energy for cooking in the studied squatter areas. The following sources of energy were revealed to be utilized in the studied squatter areas: firewood, charcoal, crop residues (like maize cobs), kerosene, livestock dung (cow dung), electricity from the national grid and bottled liquefied gas (see Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). It was further revealed from the studied squatter areas that no household owned solar equipment for use as a source of energy for cooking and it was a similar pattern for biogas from animals (Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). Moreover, the study identified the following sources of energy for lighting: hurricane lamps, candles, wick lamps, electricity from the national grid and solar lamps (Table 5.4; Figure 5.4).

Results from the study revealed that some households used electricity from the national utility company, Tanzania Electric Supply Company Limited [(TANESCO) Table 5.4]. A hand full of households used solar lamps and candles for lighting their households (Table 5.4; Figure 5.4). Disclosed use of sources of energy for cooking as well as lighting houses in squatter settlements in Mwanza city displays poverty level and low level of good utilities in households. An almost similar situation was found by Hozefa (2011) who assessed factors that posed health risks to urban dwellers in slum areas of Mnazi Mmoja as well as Midizini in Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania. Several aspects were disclosed from the study area that included poor housing condition as well as indoor smoke from cooking together with filthy external surroundings and stagnant water on storm drains due to waste accumulation that led to blockage, narrow as well as inaccessible parts during emergency services (*ibid.*).

In regard to access to clean and safe water, few (11.3%) respondents had access to public taps provisioned by MWAUWASA and others bought water from street vendors, while very few (5.6 %) respondents had taps for clean, safe water at their households (Table 5.5; Figure 5.5). Besides, due to close proximity to Lake Victoria, some respondents from Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward disclosed that they fetched water for domestic use from the lake, while other respondents from MECCO ward reported that they used water drawn from springs/dug up wells (Table 5.5; Figure 5.5). In general, the studied slum areas show that majority of people have no access to good supply of clean, safe potable water. A similar situation was revealed in Dar es Salaam by Mhache and Mauma (2013) who found problems in squatter settlements that included, among others, water shortage. They (*ibid.*) argued that identified problems in Dar es Salaam squatter settlements had root causes on social, economic and political dimensions. In due regard, they suggested that there should be concerted efforts involving all stakeholders with political commitment for curbing urbanization that paves the way for squatter settlements (*ibid.*).

In general, it can be surmised that features of squatter settlements as revealed from the study are in appalling conditions. Such revelation was exhibited in the manner respondents defined the term squatter whereby they revealed to mean income poverty; bad physical condition of housing; social deprivation; and landless people. Moreover, results revealed that many people could not have good utilities as portrayed by use of sources of energy for cooking and lighting that are utilized by poor who cannot access good and well to do sources like electricity, solar power and biogas. That was similarly true for accessed clean, safe and potable water.

After presentation of features of squatter settlements, causes of their formation were also determined. Thus, the next sub-section provides discussion on causes of squatter formation in the studied settlements.

### **9.2.2 Causes of Squatter Settlements**

In order to further disentangle truth to features and causes of squatter settlements, it was predicted as follows:

“Features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city are brought about by push factors driving people from rural areas and pull factors attracting people in urban areas.”

In resolving the formulated assumption to the problem, the researcher examined features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city as well as identified push and pull factors that enhanced people’s migration from rural to Mwanza city squatter areas. Such persons form urban sprawls in unplanned settlements, either through room/house rent or constructed houses in unplanned and/or illegal settlements.

Recount that this study identified the following push factors that enhanced people migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas: first, ethnicity facilitated by first settlers attracted others to join them in such settlements; second, domestic violence/gender discrimination prompted married women to escape from beating and various forms of discrimination from their husbands in the villages, while girls ran away to avoid female genital mutilation (FGM) in villages located in Mara region; third, due to insecurity, some people, especially elderly ran away from villages because they were accused of being sorcerers such that they were afraid from being killed and thus, they had to migrate to urban areas as safe havens; fourth, social bonding involved relatives already in towns called their kin to go to do small trades or others went there to join husbands, while others joined relatives (brothers or sisters); and finally, bad weather for crops led to challenging village life ways due to erratic rainy seasons that resulted to poor food crops as well as poor cash crops and thus, led to unproductive farming in rural areas. Reported bad weathering patterns made people consider that it was better to live in town and be entrepreneurs rather than continue dwelling in rural areas. Nevertheless, respondents argued that due to bad weather for

quite long periods of time, there were no job opportunities in villages and consequently, poverty continued to haunt people.

Other push factors that enhanced people to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas included inadequate or lack of social services in rural areas whereby participants claimed that there are no good social services like hospitals even for simple/small ailments in villages. Nonetheless, they argued that there are life hardships in villages due to lack of social services like health services, but urban areas like Mwanza city have referral hospitals that have good quality services.

Several pull factors as motivation for people to migrate and stay in Mwanza squatter areas were identified that encompassed the following: firstly, availability associated with easy access to social services, for example, big referral hospitals for treatment, schools, markets and others forced people to move away from rural to urban areas. Secondly, respondents narrated that they were prompted to stay close to town centre so as to reduce costs by walking on foot to access social services like hospitals for treatment, schools for their children, markets and many others. Thirdly, it was submitted that urban areas facilitated greater possibility of undertaking small businesses for subsistence than rural areas or villages. It was argued that in towns, there are markets for several commodities whereby people can live by doing small businesses rather than in villages.

Fourthly, it was argued that urban areas offer good habitation areas such that people easily acquired plots at cheap prices though along hilly areas in close proximity with better provided social services than rural areas. In addition, it was contended that houses for rent or rooms for rent can be accessed at low costs and thus, living costs get reduced in urban areas. For example, such habitats facilitated them to access social services conveniently like hospitals, schools and police stations as well as markets for undertaking vending businesses or small businesses and so forth. In defending further their decisions for migrating to urban areas, respondents recounted that there were utility services like electricity and clean as well as safe water that were mostly missing in rural areas. Furthermore, respondents argued that there was good infrastructure like roads for passage thereby eased people's life ways in terms of accessing social services or small business opportunities and/or amenities. Fifthly, another pull factor among drivers for people to migrate to Mwanza city was mentioned to be in search for employment. Participants to this study lamented that it is easier to get small jobs in towns than villages because there are many job opportunities in towns compared to villages. Jobs included casual labour that was easily available in urban areas compared to rural areas that were mostly non-existent. Sixthly, urban areas were said to provide for more opportunities for small businesses for subsistence than rural areas because there were many people with money to buy items compared to rural areas. Likewise, it was disclosed that some areas are close to Lake Victoria such that there are more business opportunities in town than rural

areas, for example, businesses were available and easily carried out at markets. Also others could undertake fishing and associated businesses in Mwanza city rather than in rural areas where there are few people with no money for buying items including fish.

Seventh, business policies were mentioned to be implemented in towns by instituting every good aspect but forget about people in rural areas. Eighth, another pull factor for people to migrate to Mwanza city was said that they witnessed from neighbours' success in town after they exhibited developments in rural areas upon return like building good houses, having good/flashy clothes and having money for resolving household needs in form of remittances. Ninth, other respondents mentioned that they were pulled to move to Mwanza city areas because they believed that there was better life than in rural areas. All were mostly referred to be due to easy access to social services, availability of business opportunities, availability of wage labour in public or private sectors and many other better life ways than rural life patterns. Finally, other respondents argued for moving to urban areas because of availability of security in Mwanza city for themselves as well as properties that was minimally executed in rural areas.

Concerning definition of the term 'squatter settlements,' respondents provided several that are almost similar to those offered elsewhere in the world. For example, some described to mean income poverty, while others referred to bad physical condition of housing. Additionally, other respondents referred to an area of immigrants living with lack of legal land tenure; social deprivation; lack of social services; and landless people.

In another avenue, the study determined status of utilities for such people and then compared to aspects that defined their socio-economic level. As a result, disclosed sources of energy for cooking were among such yardsticks that included the following: firewood, charcoal, crop residues (like maize cobs), kerosene, livestock dung (cow dung), electricity from the national grid and bottled liquefied gas. Conversely, no household owned solar equipment or biogas from animal by-products for use as source of energy for cooking. It was further unveiled that charcoal and crop residues were the most of all utilized sources of energy for cooking in the studied wards. Subsequently, firewood was also used by many households in the studied squatter areas.

The following sources of energy for lighting that depict people's socio-economic status were delineated: many households used wick lamps followed by hurricane lamps and other households used electricity from the national grid. Very few persons mentioned to utilization of solar lamps for lighting their households. Besides, candles were used by some households as shown to be mostly employed by residents from

only three of the studied wards, namely, MECCO ward followed by Igogo ward and the least of all households were found to be at Mabatini ward.

Other features disclosed by participants that help to discern people's socio-economic status encompassed availability or lack of social services. Thus, availability of clean and safe, potable water was disclosed by only very few respondents with access to public taps provisioned by MWAUWASA and very few respondents reported that they bought water from street vendors. Also, very few respondents had taps for clean, safe water at their households, while others exposed that by being in close proximity to Lake Victoria, for example, those staying in Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward, fetch water for domestic use from Lake Victoria. Very few respondents from MECCO ward reported that they used water drawn from springs/dug up wells.

Presented results provided good ground for evaluation of the posited hypotheses that sought to reveal truth or falsehood to the sub-research question. Therefore, obtained results from test implications led to accept the assumption that, "Features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city are brought about by push factors driving people from rural areas and pull factors attracting people in urban areas"

The next aspect in the study involved assessment of key players' initiatives in prevention and control of squatter settlements and determined whether or not they applied Social Responsibility Approach. Such initiatives are properly discussed in the following section of this chapter.

### **9.3 Key Players' Initiatives in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements**

The gist of this section provides discussion on key players' initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements so as to determine whether or not they applied social responsibility approach in their undertakings. Also discussion dwells on provided social services in squatter areas; and benefits from provided social services.

#### **9.3.1 Key Players in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements**

Discussion pertaining to identified key players' initiatives in prevention and control of squatter settlements is submitted based on determination whether or not they employed social responsibility approach that is the hallmark of this study. It is further presented under the following parts: government initiatives in dealing with squatter settlements; the role of media in dealing with squatter settlements; the role of civil society in dealing with squatter settlements; and the role of religious denominations (organizations/institutions) in dealing with squatter settlements. Discussion of identified key players' pursuit of prevention and control of squatter settlements is provided under separate players. Thus, the next sub-section furnishes

discussion concerning central government and local government authorities' efforts in dealing with studied squatter settlements.

### 9.3.1.1 Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements

Information about government efforts in dealing with squatter settlements is important. Therefore, this sub-section presents government efforts in dealing with squatter settlements at diverse dimensions. Respondents disclosed that the government had the following future plans in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city: first, to improve existing infrastructure in squatter areas featured prominently in all studied wards through demolition of some houses so as to give way for construction of roads, storm water drains, provision of electricity and similar developments (Table 6.1; Figure 6.1).

Second, it was revealed by participants from the study area that the government had plans to prohibit construction of new houses in squatter areas by designating registration of all existing houses (Table 6.1; Figure 6.1). The move aims at paying compensation to the right persons in case house demolition may be required for various reasons including development projects. Third, it was reported that the government wanted to let squatters stay in such areas as long as they could pay taxes like property tax; and fourth, respondents mentioned demolition of all houses in squatter areas. The latter was emphasized by respondents from Bugarika in Igogo ward who held that after demolition, house owners would be compensated to give way to construction of new good quality house units.

Further findings from Focus Group Discussions confirmed submissions pertaining to government efforts in dealing with squatter settlements. Respondents reported about public utility companies involved in provision of social services to their areas. For example, respondents from Mabatini ward mentioned entities like Tanzania Electric Supply Company (TANESCO) and Mwanza Urban Water Supply Authority (MWAUWASA) provided their services in urban areas including squatter settlements. Respondents had opinions favouring their stay in squatter areas by remarking that provision of the said services was testimony by public and thus, the government that there was recognition as well as consideration for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in official planned and registered settlements. Such views were equally narrated in one focus group discussion from Igogo ward that,

*“Kuunganisha maji na umeme katika makazi yetu yasiyo rasmi ni ishara tosha kwamba serikali yetu inatambua uwepo wetu na makazi kama haya. Kwa sababu tunalipishwa kodi ya majengo ikiwa ni pamoja na kulipia gharama za maji na umeme kadri tunavyotumia. Sisi tupo tayari kulipia gharama na kodi sitahiki kwa serikali na tunachohitaji ni kuboreshewa makazi yetu kulingana na gharama tunazotoa serikalini na siyo serikali kutupuuza.”*

Translated as, “Electricity and water connections in our informal residential areas portray enough sign that our government recognizes our existence and our settlements. Reasons include that we pay for property tax and we pay for our electricity as well as water consumption bills. We are ready to pay for bills including commensurate taxes to our government and thus, aspects that we need from the government encompass improvements in our settlements in accordance with incurred costs and thus the government should not ignore our existence.”

In addition, this study probed about provision of other social services. Such services included provision of clean, safe, potable water; roads construction; and waste management. Findings from this study uncovered that overall, people wanted adequate provision of potable, clean and safe water in squatter areas in Mwanza city featured prominently in all wards mentioned by close to half (47.7%) of respondents compared to other kinds of provided social services (Table 6.2; Figure 6.2).

Respondents mentioned about their own initiatives and government efforts in keeping their environments clean. Table 6.2 and Figure 6.2 exhibit that respondents mentioned waste collection in squatter areas as a government initiative for cleaning the environment (see Figure 6.1). However, there was limited waste collection to inaccessible areas especially those high up in hilly areas. That was revealed at areas like Igogo and Kirumba - Kabuhoro whereby it was argued that the sloppy hillock landscape together with underlying and/or exposed granite rock boulders/granite bedrocks hampered development of road networks in their areas (see Figure 6.3) and thus, waste collection was difficult to execute. They had to depend on foot paths that made it difficult to pass with garbage collection bins.

Besides, through observations, findings from this study revealed poor sanitation in the squatter settlements. The said settlements were observed with shallow dug-up pit latrines. Furthermore, due to bad terrain, steep-sided landscapes as well as hillocks, it was difficult to pave roads as well as construct drainage. Thus, it was difficult for the local government authorities to develop storm water drains or develop a sewage system in such areas. In addition, waste collection as outsourced by Mwanza City Council was problematic in squatter areas due to a hard-up to reach landscape and maintain such activities (see also Figure 6.3).

Likewise, further government efforts in provision of social services to citizens of all walks of life including squatters are justifiable through strategic plans in some utility entities. This study was able to get water supply strategic plans that are in footing by MWAUWASA (2011: 10). In its strategic plan, MWAUWASA (2011: 21) outlines main objectives for improvement of provision of water services to Mwanza city residents and peri-urban settlements including settlements outside the city bounds.

The central government and local government authorities are key players in facilitation and enhancing regularization/up-grade of such settlements (see also Magigi and Majani, 2005). There are strides by Mwanza City Council through its two municipalities, Nyamagana and Ilemela in facilitation of city dwellers' smooth operation of their activities. Results from this study disclosed the way the local government authorities were interacting with business people in designing and furnishing places for their operations.

Through focus group discussions, local government leaders reported that they held meetings whenever there was need for activities that included the requirement to institute development ventures. For example, if they wanted to discuss about development activities like construction of roads, health centre, schools and police post, it was time they called upon people for meetings including business people as envisaged key contributors for settlements' socio-economic development activities.

Respondents reported that even though such meetings were held, the problem was when it arose that people had to contribute their money. As business people, they normally did not want to contribute money. Thus, all agreements/resolutions from meetings ended in words and not in deeds. As submitted for other entities like civil society organizations and subsumed in the Conceptual Framework presented in chapter one (see Figure 1.1), business people, individually or collectively, have an obligation to take part in control and prevention of squatter settlements. However, that was not the case in the study area. Therefore, there should be some efforts to get them involved as key stakeholders in control and prevention of squatters together with noted squatters' deviant behaviour patterns.

As its obligation for facilitating the informal sector, which contributes to economy of Mwanza city in terms of aspects like employment, among others, Mwanza City Council, in consultation with business persons identified as well as established markets/working places of informal sector businesses [(see Table 9.1) City Director, 2008: 6]. The said spaces are planned for petty traders operating in the informal economy and include squatter settlers (City Director, 2008: 60).

Thus, Mwanza city council is targeting to help micro-entrepreneurs access venues for their business operations because they cannot afford to acquire ordinary plots from the city council's land office due to small nature of their businesses (City Director, 2008: 60).

**Table 9.1 Available Market Spaces for Petty Traders in Nyamagana and Ilemela Districts**

Location	Number of structures	Number of working spaces	Number of people to be accommodated
Buzuruga market	9	214	214
Mabatini market	3	84	84
Kitangiri market	7	140	140
Kiloleli market	21	594	594
Total	40	1,032	1,032

Source: Adapted from City Director (2008: 6).

The next identified key player included media because they perform important roles in society. Thus, the following sub-section furnishes discussion concerning media role in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements.

### **9.3.1.2 The Role of Media in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

Media were involved in the study because they perform three roles of information, education and entertainment to society. The said roles are usual social functions provided by media to the public, but equally applicable in broad sense in national development quest. In due regard, through educating, informing and entertaining, the media make society, society members or the nation as well as leadership of society, aware on importance together with need to carry out certain process or processes of national development. Likewise, connected to the said three basic roles of media, there is an additional role of persuasion whereby media are seen as important devices of applying influential efforts to influence people's actions on a particular direction. Therefore, mass media are seen for their role in furnishing the public with necessary information so as to achieve development or change goals.

Additionally, roles of media in national development extend in their capacity as well as capability to teach, manipulate, sensitize and mobilize people through information dissemination. The media also plan a pathway for the public in creating in people's minds issues that should be viewed as priority including development programmes and policies. In realization of such noble role of media, this sub-section furnishes discussion concerning media among important key players in dealing with prevention and control of studied squatter settlements.

Respondents disclosed that there was no media coverage pertaining to socio-economic development activities in the squatter settlements. It implies that there was no media that took an active part in reporting daily work and/or life ways concerned with squatter settlements in Mwanza. Respondents only informed that news coverage was on problems or events that occurred in such areas. For instance, if someone was raped, killed or caught with illegal items like illicit liquor (locally known as *gongo*)

or drugs (mostly marijuana or cannabis) or when calamities like a flood or a disease outbreak in the area such as cholera, then there was media coverage for the area.

Besides, it was informed that media coverage was done when politicians and government leaders went to squatter areas, like in other areas in the country, for some activities. For example, by the time TASAF Phase Three Project was launched on dealing with assistance of households in abject poverty, the event had media coverage. Thus, there is need for media to be involved with coverage of life patterns in squatter settlements in a manner to contribute to control as well as prevent squatter settlements in urban areas that include Mwanza city.

In focus group discussions, participants were concerned that media are very important tools in exposing as well as educating people on life aspects. It was further upheld that media must be actively as well as willfully involved in coverage of activities as well as events without being alerted. Respondents argued that media must underscore the importance of investigative journalism for socio-economic development that should include coverage of all areas, rural and urban, planned and unplanned urban areas. In due regard, results from this study show that media people have a great role to play in society on aspects concerning development activities, environment as well as social life ways at all times.

In advancing determination of key players' efforts in dealing with studied squatter settlements, civil society entities were the next to be examined in their obligations in taking part in prevention and control of studied squatter settlements. Such determination is appropriately presented in discussion in the following sub-section.

### **9.3.1.3 The Role of Civil Society in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

Civil society entities play an important role in socio-economic development aspects in society at diverse capacities. This study sought to determine their participation level in prevention and control of squatter settlements among other key players to that effect. Thus, the best way to discern such aspect is through discussion furnished in this sub-section that enlightens on the manner non-governmental organizations (NGOs) and/or civil society entities take part in dealing with squatter problems in Mwanza City. It also includes business people's share in dealing with squatter problems in Mwanza city. This is in line with the presented Conceptual Framework in chapter one and Social Responsibility Approach in chapter two of this thesis that underscored for such entities in dealing with squatter problems. The sub-section is presented under the following aspects: types of civil society organizations/entities involved with squatter problems in Mwanza city; civil society areas of concentration in dealing with squatter problems in Mwanza city; civil society contribution/help in improving squatter settlements; local government leaders' interaction with civil society entities; the manner squatter areas have benefitted from civil society entities' contribution in dealing with squatter settlements; and local government leaders'

interaction with business persons and frequencies to that end; aspects making interactions with business people in squatter settlements; business people's contribution to socio-economic development in squatter settlements; local leaders' involvement of business people in resolving problems in squatter settlements; and international agencies' involvement with squatter problems.

It was disclosed that there was no civil society organization specifically dealing with control and prevention of squatter settlements in the study area. They never deal with prevention and control of squatters. However, they are involved in activities recently launched by the central government and local government authorities like cleaning the environment, an aspect that is mandatory to all citizens in urban areas. Local leaders approach them for participation in dealing with daily problems but they never really take part. However, such undertakings are hampered by terrain, steep hilly areas such that it is difficult to pave roads that can easily facilitate passage for activities like garbage collection by using vehicles and provision of other social services.

The Conceptual Framework presented in chapter one of this thesis under the limelight of Social Responsibility Approach calls for stakeholders that include civil society organizations to play their part on society matters. In regard to this study, such matters that were the hallmark of this study encompass control as well as prevention of squatters in urban areas that include Mwanza city. Thus, non-participation of civil society entities to that end does not do any good for improvement of life ways in urban areas as presented by squatters.

During focus group discussions, respondents aired out their views and argued that NGOs including civil society organizations form a very important team of key players in development activities at all spheres. It was further remarked that such entities must be dynamically as well as willfully involved in development activities and events happening in societies as their moral obligations. Respondents argued that the said entities must emphasize on the importance of voluntary spirit to all people at all areas, rural and urban, planned and unplanned urban areas. In due regard, results from this study show that NGOs and civil society organizations have a big role to play including a major moral obligation for society on aspects concerning development activities, environment as well as social life ways at all times.

In order to understand achievements or non-achievement of key players' initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements, this study strived to uncover benefits from government social services bestowed to squatter settlements. Thus, a pertinent endeavour to that end as discussion is furnished in the subsequent sub-section.

### 9.3.1.4 Benefits from Government Social Services

As already stated, the best avenue to understand government obligations to squatter settlements was to gauge benefits accrued from provided government social services. Such undertaking is appropriately furnished through discussion in this sub-section. After all, results on the manner people's life ways had changed regarding social services provision by the government. Such results aimed at getting people's opinions as an indirect measure in order to recapitulate whether or not the government used or never used Social Responsibility Approach as an effective and pertinent pathway in preventing as well as controlling squatter settlements.

In determining prevention and control of squatter settlements, the study sought for respondents' opinions in regard to provided government social services. Thus, findings from the study revealed that 72(36.9%) respondents reported that inhabitants liked the areas as prominent places among government favours for people to reside in squatter settlements followed by 54(27.7%) respondents who reported that their children were going to public schools constructed in their vicinities (Table 6.3; Figure 6.4). Also newly constructed primary schools and later on, ward secondary schools in the country were also built in squatter areas. Such government move made inhabitants from squatter settlements content for their children's easy access to schools within their proximities. In fact, similar claims were echoed in focus group discussions.

The implication from such pattern is that school children start continuing getting proper psycho-social care early in their growth spurt from their homes to outside environments like the school environments. Further growth spurt through adolescence can be observed to be with good manners/behaviour patterns for those who were well raised from childhood to adulthood. Thus, society members can witness grown up persons with good behaviours.

As shown in Table 6.3 and Figure 6.4, 40(20.5%) participants reported that as long as they were residing in the same areas, they enjoyed formation as well as operation of savings and credit cooperative societies (SACCOS). It was further revealed in focus group discussions in all wards that people enjoyed living in squatter settlement areas compared to rural areas. That featured prominently at Igogo followed by MECCO and Kirumba-Kabuhoro wards but never featured much during group discussion of Isamilo-Nyakabungo.

Formation of SACCOS is enhanced by the government through many avenues that include legislation, for example, Cooperative Societies Act of 2013. The Cooperative Societies Act facilitates registration of SACCOS'. In addition, registered SACCOS benefit from government services from ward, district, and regional to national levels. The registered SACCOS enjoy periodic training programmes, government audits and pieces of advice for their sustainability from Cooperative professionals from district

level to regional level. At national level, such registered SACCOS benefit from much more aspects that are often times channeled through region and district authorities. SACCOS and village community banks (VICوبا) help them to access loans in an easier manner than banks that have cumbersome conditions like collateral and other forms of hard to acquire securities, especially fixed assets like houses. Such schemes help them to operate their small vending activities.

The government is providing social services like construction of feeder roads. Furthermore, provision of utilities like clean and potable water as well as electricity from the public electricity entity, TANESCO is facilitated by the government in the whole country including squatter settlements in urban areas.

### **9.3.1.5 Assumption Test**

It has to be evoked that this study sought to determine the manner social responsibility approach was an effective pathway in preventing and controlling squatter settlements in Mwanza city. In so doing, the following assumption was tested: "Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania

Assumption test was useful in determination of effectiveness shown through achievements due to participation by the central government (public sector) in terms of proper legal framework concerning settlements/resettlements in urban areas, Mwanza city council's concerted efforts in urban planning together with the private sector in regard to community, Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), Community-Based Organizations (CBOs) as well as business people in control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Besides, media were examined on their role in prevention and control of studied squatter settlements.

It was unveiled that the media did not directly deal with coverage on matters concerning prevention and control of squatter settlements. It was unveiled that media coverage was only on events or episodes, for example, if calamities like floods occurred. Also, media coverage was done when politicians and government leaders went in the said settlements for some socio-economic activities.

In another vein, the study uncovered that there was no civil society organization specifically dealing with squatter settlements in the study area. That was similarly found true for business persons, whose role was invisible. Business persons are involved in activities recently launched by the central government and local government authority like cleaning the environment as a mandatory requirement to all citizens in urban areas in the country.

Available religious entities indirectly deal with people in squatter settlements through control of congregates' behaviours. This study discovered that there was no particular religious body that deals with control and prevention of squatters in the study area. Available religious entities remind converts in observation of morals because squatter settlements were found with individuals indulged in deviant behaviours like drug addiction, alcohol abuse, prostitution, children abuse along streets in Mwanza city centre and robbery. Also, some street children had original abode from squatter settlements.

In regard to people's welfare including those residing in squatter areas, there were notable social services provided by the central government and local government authorities. Respondents conveyed their appreciation concerning provided social services. Thus, achievements were recorded through the central government and local government authorities in discharge of their mandated duties for citizens.

However, it is appalling to note that in the study area, there is no individual or body other than government dealing with deviant behaviours for people living in squatters. The only initiatives are government undertakings when there are incidents like robbery, prostitution and drug addiction, they are apprehended by law enforcers. Besides, this study never found International Organizations primarily dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. On the other hand, this study found out that Railway Children Africa deals with rehabilitation of street children in collaboration with local NGOs in Mwanza city. It has to be recounted that some street children were from squatter settlements. Therefore, such street children likely benefit services from Railway Children Africa.

In another avenue, this study uncovered noticeable achievements in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city. However, identified initiatives involve the central government, local government authorities and public utility entities. Thus, the central government, through its utility entities, cares for its citizens and provides social services. For private entities, only the international NGO, Railway Children Africa in collaboration with local NGOs deals with street children, some from squatter settlements.

It has to be recounted that in this study, social responsibility approach is an independent variable reckoned to facilitate prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza in linkage with dependent variables mediated by public and private sectors' joint efforts. The said parties together with instituting proper strategic plans, action plans, meetings and joint implementation of selected action plans/strategies would facilitate mission of prevention and control of squatter settlements. Provided results from this thesis demonstrate some achievements in prevention and control of squatter settlements in the study area. However, there were some key players supposed to take an active role in high level realisation of the

desired achievements to that end. They were minimally involved or were involved in a hidden way or were not involved at all. For example, religious entities were taking part as their moral obligation in dealing with people's behaviours in squatter areas. The role of media was a bit invisible or masked and happened only with events due to bureaucrats or politicians' involvement in their discharge of their duties or if there occurred calamities in squatter settlements. An ostensible demise of civil society organisation in the said task was noticed. All such entities were supposed to join the central government and local government authorities in amplifying the appreciated social service delivery in squatter settlements at diverse capacities. In due regard, it means that the best realisation of sought achievements can only be executed through social responsibility approach if such entities' efforts are combined with central government and local government authorities' inputs. Therefore, the researcher was convinced to accept the posited assumption that, "Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania"

After gauging key players' efforts in prevention and control of studied squatter settlements, the study strived to underpin problems and challenges they encountered in dealing with such communities. The best avenue to determine the said aspects is through discussion, in all its facets, furnished in the next sub-section.

#### **9.4 Problems and Challenges in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

Based on results from this study, this section presents discussion on problems and challenges in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements. The section is presented under the following sub-sections: government measures to curb unscrupulous house construction in unplanned (illegal) areas; and challenges in provision of social services to squatter settlements. Unscrupulous house construction encompassed some identified problems and challenges encountered by key players in their obligations to prevent and control squatter settlements. Thus, the pattern is discussed in the following sub-section.

##### **9.4.1 Unscrupulous House Construction in Unplanned Areas**

Through unstructured interviews and focus group discussions, the study sought to elicit reasons for government's failure to curb/prohibit house construction in unplanned/illegal areas. Results from the study gleaned out the following reasons: there was population explosion singled out from Igogo as well as Mabatini focus group discussions. Those in Kirumba and MECCO remarked seriously that there were no specially designated as well as planned areas for human habitation.

Also, it was remarked further from some respondents who said that the government does not care at all about people with the lowest incomes. They argued that the government failed to deal as well as resolve the human habitation problem in unplanned areas at an early/infancy stage before squatter settlements exploded up to

an uncontrollable level. After all, findings from the study disclosed that people settled in squatter areas because they did not have financial capability to acquire planned and/or surveyed pieces of land. On the other hand, they recounted that if at all it happened that there were activities for survey of plots by local authorities for people to enjoy right of occupancy of such plots, they could not afford prescribed survey charges. If they tried to agree to such conditions, there were bureaucratic hitches. Thus, the whole idea of plot acquisition in planned or unplanned settlements was untenable by squatters.

Still, they narrated that the government was mixing politics and implementation together with the fact that leaders were afraid from being blamed by citizens because such leaders did not defend them on matters dictated by the government like house demolition to give way for development of infrastructure. They said that politicians defended sprawl of unplanned settlements, especially during election campaigns for local government leaders or general elections for president, councilors and members of parliament. Respondents recounted that politicians and bureaucrats always said that they should not disturb squatter settlements because they harboured for potential election voters from such areas.

Submissions from this study do not deviate much from previous reports from other proponents. For example, it was reported before that people settled in squatter areas because planned as well as surveyed areas designated for human occupation were difficult to acquire due to huge expenses together with bureaucratic blockages accompanied with dishonesty on plot allocation to ordinary citizens (see Komba, 2008). There was no support from local government authority leaders especially at gross roots level, street leaders (Komba, 2008). In the same vein, they reported that surveys for plots for human habitation were delayed, but such actions were expensive thereby making it difficult for low income earners to afford for such services. Such case in point was raised before by Komba (2008) who reported that affordability and low incomes forced for people to settle in unplanned or squatter settlements by accessing cheap plots. Such stance was observed in Mwanza city squatters by Komba (2008). Others rented in such cheap places in order to eke out their living in close proximity to areas they wanted to work for wage earning or undertake petty businesses as submitted by Limbumba (2010) at Hannanasifu and Keko Machungwa squatters in Dar es Salaam city. In addition, it was disclosed that local government authorities are powerless with no authority over matters pertaining to land allocation at all avenues. Moreover, respondents recalled that the government tried to evict people from unplanned settlements without proper procedures such that there was chaos because people had no alternative areas for resettlement. The exercise failed and they remarked that the government should prepare proper procedures to that end.

It was revealed further that as a way of controlling and preventing squatter settlements, Mwanza city officials launched participatory survey along planned but

un-surveyed plots for residential areas. In such areas, people were required to pay for some survey small charges. However, it was found out that such exercise failed because people felt that survey charges under such scheme were very high and unaffordable. People never took part into such exercise of surveying and thus, authentication of such areas that included squatters failed.

As already discerned from results from this study, Mwanza city authority and central government is discouraging people from developing in squatters but the envisaged activities are not working. Respondents said that Mwanza city was planning to demolish some houses in order to create space for undertaking the following: pave and build street roads so that they will create accessibility to such settlements; facilitate waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary as well as secondary schools; construct health facilities; build markets; and put up police stations. However, all such envisaged activities have not been implemented. Identified challenges in provision of social services in squatter settlements are clearly discussed in the following sub-section.

#### **9.4.2 Challenges in Provision of Social Services to Squatter Settlements**

Discussion regarding main actors' encountered challenges in provision of social services so as to gauge whether or not social responsibility approach was applied by different stakeholders is provided for in this sub-section. As already presented (see, for example, Figure 1) in the Conceptual Framework in Chapter One, stakeholders include the government (central government as well as local government authorities), individuals and entities like Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs) and Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs).

According to results from this study, it was informed that there were difficulties in getting title deeds to people's built up plots in unplanned areas and featured prominently in most study sites (Table 8.2; Figure 8.2). It implies that people need to get rights of tenure for their built-up plots in unplanned settlements. It has to be recalled that the same problem was raised before concerning challenges of legally accessing people to rights of tenancy including squatters in Mwanza city (see Komba, 2008). Yet, the same problem was seen featuring among difficulties for squatters who reported that affordability and low incomes forced people to settle in unplanned or squatter settlements by accessing cheap plots (see Komba, 2008). Other people resorted to rent houses because they cannot build houses and those places are cheap. For example, Limbumba (2010) disclosed about the said facts at Hannanasifu and Keko Machungwa squatters in Dar es Salaam city.

Longing for roads was disclosed by all respondents though with variation for priority over other wants based on terrain, especially for those who dwell in non-hilly areas like some parts in Nyakabungo and Kirumba-Kabuhoro who wanted roads construction (see Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). The implication from such variation of want

for roads can be due to nature of landscape in Mwanza squatter areas whereby many areas are steep slopes (or highly hilly) such that it is difficult for road construction (see Figure 6.4). Therefore, those who demanded for roads were not from high up rocky areas and thus, it could be easier to create some paved roads in low lying areas than high up sloppy areas full of granite rock boulders/granite bedrocks.

Improvement of markets was suggested by respondents with a high need for such measure recounted by respondents from Igogo ward (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). Such need was also echoed by respondents from Isamilo-Nyakabungo and Kirumba-Kabuhoro wards, while it was minimally reported by respondents from MECCO ward (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). It has to be reckoned that as its obligation for facilitating the informal sector, Mwanza City Council in consultation with business persons, identified as well as established markets of informal sector businesses [(see Table 9.1) City Director, 2008: 6]. Such spaces are planned for petty traders operating in the informal economy and include squatter settlers (City Director, 2008: 60). Thus, Mwanza City Council is targeting to help people of all walks of life from various places including squatter settlements to access venues for their business operations because they cannot afford to acquire ordinary plots from the City Council's land office due to small nature of their businesses (City Director, 2008: 60).

Focus group discussions disclosed that people needed construction of police stations in their areas; construction of vocational training institutes in their areas and reserve places for play grounds for children's sports including their development. They also suggested about construction of health facilities, improvement of roads, strengthen security for days and nights in order to deal with theft/robbery and construction of permanent markets in their areas. All were reported at all wards though with differences in terms of emphasis, depending on priority according to location.

Similar patterns for squatter settlements were evident in Nigeria, for example, it was found out that squatter areas had no police stations/posts (Onyekachi, 2014: 423). However, in order to deal with such problems in Nigeria, people organized their own security groups and prepared one of the other social infrastructures, for example, they built their own churches, mosques and dispensaries (Onyekachi, 2014: 423).

It has to be brought to attention that provision of social services by the government is a mandatory obligation. However, in practice, it is very difficult to execute to expected quality and standards, especially in unplanned settlements like squatters in urban areas that also include such areas in Mwanza city. For example, Komba (2008) in his study of Mwanza city revealed that the impact of urbanization was due to issues of failure of urban government authorities to control urban growth thereby resulting to unplanned settlements and lack of basic infrastructures in most areas. Komba (2008) disclosed further several challenges that are very big for local

government authorities to provide land for development of settlements for the urban poor. Komba (2008) argued that challenges were coupled up with long procedures including standards one has to abide by when he/she wanted to have a house (settlement) in urban areas. In due regard, such situation meant that majority of people in urban areas who are poor (see also Magigi and Majani, 2005; Komba, 2008) cannot afford pieces of land for house construction. It was further revealed by Komba (2008) that there were problems in addressing settlement development in Tanzania. The major problem identified by Komba (2008) was lack of knowledge of urban poor on procedures and standards one has to pursue on acquiring land together with other legal building documents when constructing houses in urban areas. In due regard, such patterns made urban poor victims of demolishes and became poor of the poorer in cities like Mwanza (see also Komba, 2008).

#### **9.4.3 Assumption Test**

In identifying problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in preventing and controlling increase in squatter settlements in Mwanza city, the researcher provided the following testable prediction: “There are problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City” The researcher’s feeling was that data from this study will show that through appropriate key players’ participation that encompassed the central government, local government authorities as well as the private sector, prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city had limited if not very few manageable challenges and problems.

Respondents in studied squatter settlements revealed the said bodies’ discharge level exposed some limited or negligible accomplishments. Identified challenges and problems, to a certain extent, expose partial government’s failure in discharge of its duties. Numerous challenges and problems were identified that ranged from non-provision of right of occupancy for habitation areas to social services provision like roads construction, provision of business areas, particularly markets, construction of police stations to curb deviant behaviours, lack of political will to deal with their problems and turn away from demolishing or evicting squatters from such areas.

On the other hand, respondents provided suggestions to make people stay in such areas whereby the government was seen as failing to deal with them. Accordingly, all bodies showed double standards whereby, one hand, the government wanted to control and prevent squatter settlements but, on the other hand, the government was sympathetic on leaving them settle in such areas through provision of social services including improvement of infrastructure. As a result, it appeared that there is the urge to prevent as well as control spread out of squatter settlements but there is sympathy to that end whereby the government is leaving people settle in the said areas as provided in results from this study.

All the same, results demonstrate key players' efforts in dealing with squatters at varied capacities but they need to up-grade their degree and keenness in dealing with identified challenges and problems for good habitation in urban areas like squatter settlements. Such craving would have been properly executed through intensified application of social responsibility approach whereby all parties would have been able to fulfill their obligation for the best anticipated results in dealing with squatter settlements. Therefore, results led the researcher to accept the posited assumption that, "There are problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City"

After discussion of identified challenges and problems in prevention and control of squatter settlements, the subsequent section furnishes discussion on initiatives in prevention and control of squatter settlements in the study area.

## **9.5 Current initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city**

### **9.5.1 Identified initiatives in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city**

In continued undertakings to determine prevention and control of squatter settlements, the researcher examined efforts by the central government together with local government authorities to that end. It was uncovered that the central government together with local government authorities had plans to improve existing infrastructure in squatter areas and prohibit construction of new houses in squatter areas (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). Conversely, participants reported that government officials had views to let squatters stay in such areas as long as they can pay taxes (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1).

Results from Focus Group Discussions concerning government future plans in dealing with squatter settlements were not different from those obtained from the other data collection methods. For example, all respondents (non-local government leaders) to the said aspect pointed out that development of infrastructure like roads construction was the leading government priority not only to squatter settlements but also to other parts of the country in both urban and rural areas.

Presented results from this study imply squatter settlements upgrading. There are other parts in the world that have been involved with squatter settlements upgrading. For example, in Latin America, slum upgrading embraces interventions by providing water, sanitation, drainage, roads, land plots, public parks, health clinic and income generating activities (Alsayyad, 1993. Similar undertakings were experienced in Kurasini, Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania (Ndezi, 2009).

In Thailand, slum upgrading process takes a highly social responsibility approach compared to many other cases. For example, Baan Makong slum upgrading program involved Savings groups, Civil Society Organizations (CSOs), local government agencies, development institutions, universities, local NGOs and architects (Manoj, 2003; Sanisock, 2009). Moreover, such program supported partners so as to come across solutions for squatter settlements (Hari, 1991; Manoj, 2003; Sanisock, 2009).

Sites and services scheme is another action conceived by the World Bank meant to help developing countries deal with slum problems (Komba, 2008). Such scheme was instituted through the government in Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania by carrying out site upgrades, provide road infrastructure, undertake plot demarcation, provide clean as well as potable, safe water and construct storm water drainage system (*ibid.*). Plots measuring 150 metre squares are regarded as high-density plots and affordable to low income people (*ibid.*).

In addition, demolition of some houses was seen to be a government decision. Reasons for such decision included the following: pave as well as construct street roads so that they will generate accessibility to such settlements; improve waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary and secondary schools; build health facilities; build markets; and construct police stations.

Furnished results from this study exposing government controls under demolition are termed slum clearance by authorities. For example, in Mumbai, India, Arputham and Patel (2010) ascertained that slum clearance policies are top-down, expensive and do not involve squatters. However, such approaches encountered protests from squatters. Arputham and Patel (2010) showed that in Mumbai, squatters refused to have their shacks demolished. Protests were staged whereby squatters, activists and community organizations sought for dialogue with authorities on several issues (*ibid.*). They were against imposition from top, government authorities and instead, they wanted to be involved in decision-making regarding their welfare (*ibid.*). They aired out polarised views whereby one group wanted to stay on sites they occupied by then and upgrade their homes, while the other group demanded for compensation of incomes as well as instil good livelihoods (*ibid.*).

It was further uncovered that the government including local government authorities had to keep such settlements due to some political ends. One leader was mentioned to have argued that people in squatter settlements, like others elsewhere in the country, were important voters in elections. Some respondents recalled that public utility companies for electricity supply and provision of clean potable water were at the forefront in provision of services at all places in urban areas including squatter settlements. Thus, such provision of social services was understood to be recognition

and consideration for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in officially planned as well as registered settlements.

In Latin America, political mobilisation played a major part in keeping up squatter settlements. For instance, Alsayyad's (1993) comparative analysis of informal developments in Latin America and the Middle East reported that claims to the state and being politicized were part of 'squatting culture' in Latin America and Uruguay. In the contrary, in the Middle East, Alsayyad (1993) found a different picture whereby squatters tended to opt for strategies outside politics, for example, depending on a particular context, there was complete political invisibility, while ethnic networks or religious law were key to legalize land ownership.

Further politicization for this study was portrayed. For example, this study found out minimal level of threats from the government against people's decisions of settling permanently in squatter areas. After all, fear from eviction was only mentioned in the focus group discussion of one of the five studied wards, while the rest of the wards never felt that there was such government measure. On the other hand, Mwanza city officials disclosed that they launched participatory survey along planned but un-surveyed plots for residential areas. In due regard, people were required to pay for some survey nominal fee. However, the action failed because people felt that survey charges under such scheme were very high and unaffordable.

The city authority and central government is discouraging people from developing in squatters but the measures are not working. Moreover, they are planning to demolish some houses in order to create space for paving as well as building street roads so that they will create accessibility to the said settlements. Also envisaged cleared spaces are believed necessary so as to facilitate waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary as well as secondary schools; build health facilities; construct markets; and build police stations.

### **9.5.2 Assumption Test**

In accruing advanced data interpretation regarding the sub-research question, "How can social responsibility approach be applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city?" the researcher assessed central government as well as local government initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements; civil society organizations' role in prevention and control of squatter settlements; individuals' role in dealing with prevention as well as control of squatter settlements; and the role of media in prevention as well as control of squatter settlements. Thus, to appropriately interpret the data for the desired task, the researcher premised through the assumption that, "Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city," All test results are furnished in chapter eight of this thesis.

Pursuant to findings sought to advance data interpretation, hypotheses test results led to the following assertions: first, the central government together with the local government authorities had plans to improve existing infrastructure in squatter areas. On the other hand, it was argued that such efforts were among main government priorities not only to squatter settlements but also to other parts of the country, both urban and rural areas. Second, demolition of some houses was seen to be a government decision that aimed at paving and constructing street roads so that they will facilitate accessibility to such settlements; facilitate waste collection including their disposal; provide facelift to social services by building primary as well as secondary schools; build health facilities; put up markets; and construct police stations.

Third, there were polarised views from government authorities and political echelons who vied to keep squatter settlements undisturbed due to some political ends, while others thought of discouraging sprawl of such settlements. For example, it was recalled that political leaders defended that people in squatter settlements, like others in the country, were important voters in elections and thus, they had to continue dwelling in squatter areas. More to the point, it was narrated that utility companies were at the lead in provision of services at all places in urban areas including squatter settlements. Besides, it was argued, in squatters' favour, that such undertakings by utility entities were interpreted to be in recognition as well as thoughtfulness for people living in squatter settlements like those in officially planned as well as registered settlements and thus, it was an insignia of authentication of leaving squatter settlements untouched.

Fourth, there was minimal level of threats from the government against people's decisions of settling permanently in squatter areas. For example, fear from eviction was only mentioned at one of the studied wards, while the rest of respondents from other wards never felt that there was such government decision. In further validation of such demise of threat from government, respondents did not remark on aspects regarding prohibition of building new houses in squatter settlements.

Fifth, Mwanza city officials reported that they launched participatory survey along un-surveyed plots for residential areas. In due regard, people were required to pay for some survey small fee. On the contrary, the exercise failed because people felt that survey charges under the scheme were very high and unaffordable. Sixth, Mwanza city authority including municipal councils and central government is discouraging people from developing in squatter areas but the measures are not working. As already submitted from respondents, local government authority officials disclosed that they were planning to demolish some houses so as to generate space for infrastructure development and social services provision. For example, such spaces were needed by local government authorities so that they can build street roads to

form accessibility to the said settlements that will, in turn, facilitate waste collection together with waste disposal; improve social services provision by constructing new and/or adding buildings for primary as well as secondary schools; build health facilities; put up markets; and construct police stations.

Thus, critical evaluation of presented results exposes that, on one hand, the central government together with local government authorities is in a position to prevent as well as control squatter settlements at various dimensions. On the other hand, they are providing social services to the studied squatter areas. However, in concurrence with other submitted results from this thesis, there are initiatives that show the central government and local authorities, among key players, somehow apply social responsibility in discharge of their duties aimed at some marked level of prevention and control of squatter settlements in the studied areas. Therefore, the researcher accepted the premised assumption that, “Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city” .

Theories were employed in this study so as to properly determine the manner prevention and control of squatter settlements were carried out by identified main actors. To that end, it was imperative to undertake discussion as furnished in the next section.

## **9.6 Discussion Pertaining to Theoretical Stances in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

In essence, this section presents discussion in regard to theoretical stances deemed pertinent on helping to deal with squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Chapter two of this study furnishes four Neo-Marxist classic theories from Sociology that were deemed fit to be applied for demonstrating that their application can be of great assistance in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city. They include the following: Rural-Urban Continuum, Concentric Zone Theory, Anomie Theory and Social Responsibility Theory.

### **9.6.1 Rural-Urban Continuum**

Based on reviewed push and pull-factors presented in the UN-HABITAT (2003: 25) report, this study was able to examine rural-urban migration to Mwanza city by further applying Rural-Urban Continuum Theory to assess aspects such as habits, behaviour and attitudes of migrants. Please recall, McGee (1971: 63) argued that movements of rural people to urban areas create populations, whose values, habits, attitudes together with political, economic and social organization are featured in newly settled areas. Besides, the mentioned socio-cultural aspects differ sharply with existing or found urban society. The stated people’s movement with socio-cultural patterns from rural to urban as carry over, signify Rural-Urban Continuum theory as stated by McGee (1971).

McGee (1971) further espoused that a rapid urban growth rate and a high level of control created a disordered blend of urban and rural land use that resulted in certain environmental as well as social problems. For example, a higher urban population growth than a city development causes a slum problem (see also Yap and Wandeler, 2010 cited in Panu, 2010: 2). Thus, McGee (1971) surmised that such aspects of rural society do not necessarily disappear in the urban environment especially when the number of rural migrants is large.

In regard to Urban-Rural Continuum, results from this study show the manner people settled in squatter areas in Mwanza city have brought about environmental and social problems. For example, many people are settled in unplanned as well as hazardous areas such that there are cases of rock falls/land falls caused by severe weathering notably, heavy rain downpours that lead to people's death and property destruction/loss. Cases to reckon happened in long rains season in April, 2016 whereby heavy rains downpours caused rock falls that demolished a house and one youth died from such accident in Mabatini area, Mwanza city. In the same area during the same season, a kindergarten child was swept away by floods along Mirongo River at Mabatini section.

It was informed from the study through focus group discussions that during rain season frequent malpractices include people discharge their faecal/wastes down habitats that do not have sewage system and storm water drains. Respondents narrated that all wastes are washed down slopes to Lake Victoria and as a result, there is land pollution as well as Lake Victoria pollution. It has to be known that such pollution, especially Lake Victoria, which is the main source of water for inhabitants of Mwanza city, paves the way for water borne disease epidemics, for example, cholera, typhoid, helminthes plus skin diseases. The researcher observed overcrowding in squatter settlements with portrayal of unhygienic conditions (see Figure 6.4). Some participants in focus group discussions mentioned that there are also some diseases due to poor sanitation/waste disposal and poor environments in their settlements.

It was revealed that people migrated from rural areas to Mwanza city due to pull factors that included seeking for good social services like health services that are better than rural areas. They migrated with malpractices that included poor health and sanitation. According to Mwanza City Council (2014), Mwanza city has six hospitals led by Bugando Medical Centre, a zone referral hospital, 12 health centers and 52 Dispensaries (*ibid.*). Several diseases were reported that included malaria, Acute Respiratory Infections (A.R.I) and Urinary Tract Infections (U.T.I) as the most common diseases, which affect majority of people in Mwanza City (*ibid.*). Such diseases could most likely be controlled if proper sanitation environment as well as waste management were undertaken (*ibid.*). The pandemic, Human

Immunodeficiency Virus (HIV) infection among family members was reported and there were cases of *Tuberculosis mycobacterium* (*ibid.*).

In terms of schooling, recapitulating McGee's (1971) theoretical supposition, there is Rural-Urban continuum whereby provision of education services is carried out in rural and urban areas in the country as government initiatives. However, social services delivery like education has variation. As reported by respondents, they migrated to Mwanza city because social services that included provisioned education services were better than in rural areas. Through focus group discussions, respondents argued that they migrated to Mwanza city whereby their children accessed schools that are within smaller walking distance than far reaching schools in rural areas. Also, they argued that quality and standards of education are better off in urban than in rural schools. Thus, such school children are successfully enrolled in higher education levels due to good and required pass marks in their final examination of lower to higher levels. For example, there are easier opportunities or chances for being selected to next education level, from primary school level to secondary education level in urban than rural schools.

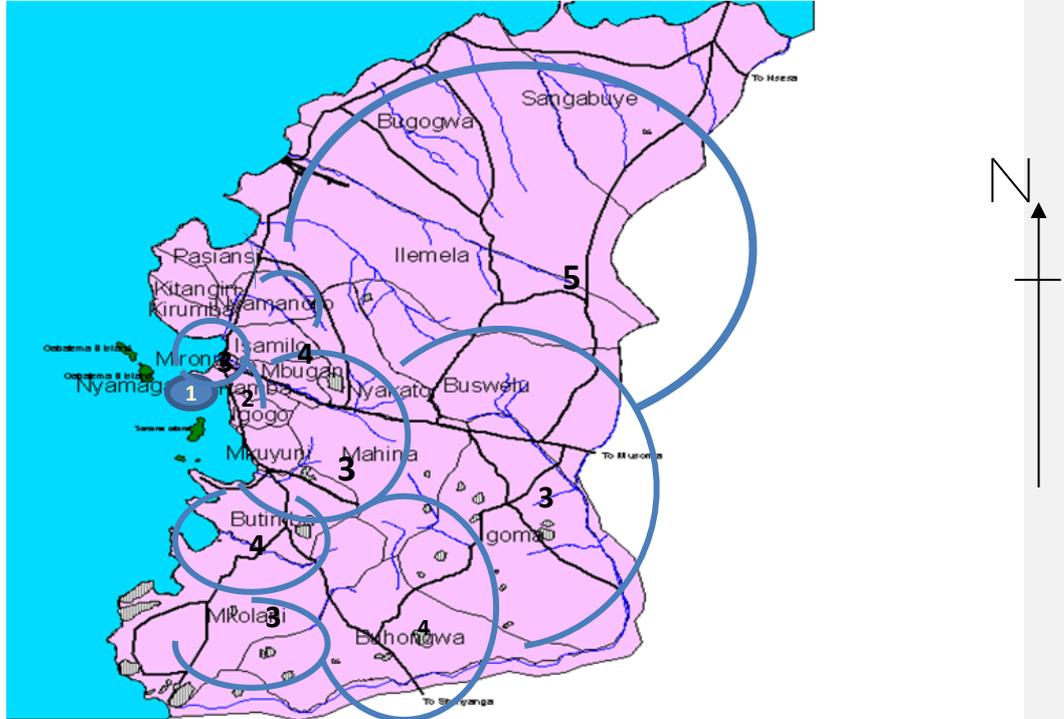
Further problems, as submitted in this thesis for Mwanza city, encompassed environmental degradation due to use of plant materials (fire wood and charcoal) as energy sources for cooking and lighting in urban areas including squatter settlements in the country. Such environmental degradation is contributed by both people in rural areas for their action of tree felling and passing over products as well as habits to urban dwellers that include squatter settlers like those in Mwanza city. Thus, such behaviour patterns like charcoal use and firewood for cooking as energy sources depict a certain level of continuity, from rural to urban areas. It is a hazardous rural-urban continuum that paves the way for environmental degradation.

### **9.6.2 Concentric Zone Theory**

This sub-section presents interpretation of Mwanza city lay out in regard to Concentric Zone Theory as construed by the researcher. Field observations led the researcher postulate Mwanza city as having five concentric zones following Concentric Zone Theory by Burgess as modified by Panu [2010: 9 (please see Figure 9.1)]. Accordingly, the five concentric zones for Mwanza city are considered to be as follows: first, the Central Business District (CBD) for Mwanza city is shown in circle 1 represented by Kenyatta road, Nyerere road, Pamba road and areas along Deluxe street as well as Uhuru road; second, zone of transition between residential and commercial use includes a bit away from Nyerere road, Pamba road as well as Uhuru road areas presented under circle 2; third, a low-class residential area presented in circle 3 includes such areas as Igogo, Mkolani, Mbugani, Nyakato (including MECCO), Buswelu Igoma, Mabatini, Kirumba as well as Nyamanoro; fourth, a middle and high-class residential area presented as circle 4 that includes such areas as Capri Point, Isamilo, Kiseke as well as Butimba; and fifth, a commuter zone,

which includes suburbs as well as remote communities in Mwanza city that encompasses areas like Sangabuye, Bugogwa as well as several areas within Ilemela district presented under circle 5 (please see map with such concentric zones 1 to 5 in Figure 9.1).

**Figure 9.1 Map of Mwanza City Showing Interpreted Concentric Zones**



Source: Field Data (2013/2014).

Thus, the demarcated zones grew out from a small urban settlement to a fully blown city lay out as seen today. The designated concentric zones for the city are defined by the researcher to be composed of the following population segments: first, the Central Business District (CBD) for Mwanza city shown in circle 1 (zone 1) was formerly a small place occupied by many people as residents working in the area that had offices with a few shops and had no factories (Figure 9.1).

As the settlement grew from a small town to a municipality and later on a city, conditions by local government authorities were imposed. They included the following: much more intensified business premises as well as offices; currently, fewer residents stay in the area than it was the case when it was a small town; and small houses that were due for replacement were prone to demolition with orders to construct sky rises for office/business accommodation.

The second demarcated circle is the zone of transition between residential and commercial use, while the third zone is a low-class residential area presented in circle 3 (Figure 9.1). The next zone was designated by the researcher a middle and high-class residential area presented as circle 4 and finally, there is zone 5 denoted

by the researcher a commuter zone, which includes suburbs as well as remote communities in Mwanza city (please see map with such concentric zones 1 to 5 in Figure 9.1). However, the outer zone or ring as designated is having a mix of residential settlements with industrial activities. Formerly, such areas were farms and a few residents who were actually farmers.

### **9.6.3 Anomie Theory**

Featherstone and Deflem's (2003) position pertaining to Merton's social-structures-and-anomie paradigm, helped discussion for this study as a valuable perspective for analysis of deviant behaviour patterns by people living in squatter settlements in Mwanza city. In view of that, the researcher held a proposition that there is a disjunction between cultural goals and institutionalized means for understanding crime as well as deviance in squatter areas of Mwanza city (see Featherstone and Deflem, 2003). Further examination of such deviant behaviours involved assessment of initiatives whether or not various stakeholders were involved in dealing with deviant behaviours based on obligations as captured through the Conceptual Framework (Figure 1.1) presented in chapter one of this thesis.

This study strived to examine behaviour patterns in squatter settlements because the areas are highly populated. With such high population groups, they amass people of various backgrounds that include different cultures, different behaviours, different understanding levels on life ways and many other socio-cultural avenues. The best way to pinpoint such behaviours, deviant or not deviant, was through application of Anomie Theory. Results from the study uncovered the following types of people with deviant behaviour patterns: thugs, robbers, drug addicts, alcoholics, prostitutes and street children. They were echoed through focus group discussions in all studied wards. It was submitted that children are discriminated and abused in streets and at their homes with parents as well as caretakers/caregivers or guardians.

On the other hand, the government is doing its best in instituting law and order to all citizens that include squatters. It is using its law enforcement organs to curb deviant behaviours that also include crimes plus homicide. Other individuals and entities are participating minimally in controlling identified deviant behaviours in the study areas. However, to some extent, an international NGO, Railway Children Africa in collaboration with local partners is striving to control street children who happen to be available and mostly originating from squatter settlements. It implies that all efforts or initiatives to deal with deviant behaviours are not highly executed as expected. They are minimally executed as seen with an increase in street children and other deviant behaviours.

However, some efforts were witnessed in the first quarter of this year (2017) after Dar es Salaam regional authorities started to crack down drug trafficking and drug use. Many people were netted and the fight did not preclude people, regardless of

their affiliation like political status, fame in artistic chores and the like. Such efforts spread throughout the country that included Mwanza region and Mwanza city. In Mwanza city, culprits were netted trying to remove a haul of drugs from a toilet in Igogo area and others were apprehended at Kirumba area. The presented cases show that there have been habits of drug sales and drug abuse in squatter areas.

In the limelight of the presented Conceptual Framework (please see Figure 1.1), there is dire need for all persons, as individuals, civil society organizations that include Faith-Based Organizations, NGOs, media together with the government, to curb prevailing deviant behaviours in Mwanza city that include people living in squatter settlements. However, it was noted that religious leaders were dealing with people's behaviour patterns in their flocks based on their normal routines of spiritual service delivery. Such delivery was done in all places as required but the researcher observed that such efforts are seen as a normal pattern. Thus, curbing deviant behaviours among the flock required concerted efforts by spiritual leaders with their flocks. The reasons are many but the patterns are going unchecked among population groups in urban areas including squatter settlements.

If everyone and every entity plays its part in collaboration with the government, such unwarranted behaviours could be prevented and most likely could be controlled. In another vein, recapitulating Featherstone and Deflem's (2003) position pertaining to Merton's social-structures-and-anomie paradigm, curbing deviant behaviours in Mwanza city including squatter settlements is wanting. For, as already posited by the researcher, non-participatory stance by other key players as sole stakeholders in controlling deviant behaviour patterns in squatter settlements is due to a disjunction between cultural goals and institutionalized means for understanding plus dealing with crime as well as deviance in the studied squatter areas of Mwanza city. Thus, everyone should play his/her part such that surely it can be possible to control and eventually, prevent deviant behaviour patterns in squatters in Mwanza city.

#### **9.6.4 Social Responsibility Approach**

As presented in chapter two of this thesis, it is relevant to provide a general overview about social responsibility approach that was deemed important by the researcher as a pertinent tool or pathway by stakeholders in preventing and controlling squatter settlements as well as curbing bad human behaviours.

Social responsibility is an ethical framework and holds that an entity, whether an organization or an individual, central government, local government, civil society organisations (NGOs, FBOs, CSOs) and so on, has an obligation to act for all life aspects for the benefit of society at large (see Nerone, 1995: 80-81). This study examined whether or not Social Responsibility Approach was applied in control and prevention of squatters in Mwanza city that involved all mentioned stakeholders. Such position was also recapitulated based on the Conceptual Framework presented

in chapter one (Figure 1). Thus, it was envisaged that Social Responsibility Approach is a proper pathway in dealing with squatter problems involving media together with other stakeholders (an organization or an individual, central government, local government, civil society organisation such as NGOs, FBOs, CSOs and so on).

It is proper to surmise in that limelight that everyone must play her/his part so as to achieve advancement of goals of society, in the case of this study, preventing and controlling squatter settlements. In that case, concerned parties include the government (local and central government authorities) individuals, society organizations in form of Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs), Non-governmental Organizations (NGOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs) and the like.

Social Responsibility Approach was deemed fit as well as necessary through media so as to underpin obligations among inhabitants (the squatters), the local government authority (Mwanza City Council through Nyamagana Municipal Council as well as Ilemela Municipal Council), the central government and Civil Society Organizations in regard to impacts (negative or positive) upon the environment (squatter environment). In other words, the study sought to underpin whether or not their actions created equilibrium (benefit to society) or disequilibrium to the environment (no benefit to society) by being irresponsible or responsible in prevention and control of squatters. Such assessment was necessary so that if media plus the other mentioned stakeholders were to be uncovered irresponsible, the study would provide pertinent suggestions among other expected study achievements.

Results from this study unearthed that media did not play their obligation as militated by Social responsibility approach (see Figure 1.1) in the study area. They disservice squatter settlements as required because they did not underpin their obligations among inhabitants (the squatters) such that their actions created disequilibrium (no benefit to society) by being irresponsible. Their major role if they would have played part, willfully, would have facilitated other key players such as civil society organizations (NGOs, FBOs, individuals and the like) together with the government in noble cause of control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Moreover, they would have greatly helped in exposing deviant behaviours for all key players to get into their control and eventual prevention.

For an appropriate examination of Social Responsibility Approach, the researcher analysed information from assumption test presented as follows:

“There are problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City.”

Numerous challenges and problems in squatter settlements of Mwanza city were identified in chapter seven. They ranged from non-provision of right of occupancy for habitation areas to social services provision like roads construction; provision of business areas, particularly markets, construction of police stations to curb deviant behaviours; lack of political will to deal with their problems; and turn away from demolishing or evicting squatters from such areas. On the other hand, respondents provided suggestions to make people stay in such areas whereby the government was seen as failing to deal with them. Accordingly, government and political leaders showed double standards whereby, on one hand, the government wanted to control and prevent squatter settlements and, on the other hand, the same government was sympathetic by leaving them settle in such areas through provision of social services including improvement of infrastructure. As a result, it appeared that there is the urge to prevent as well as control spread out of squatter settlements but there is sympathy to that end whereby the government lets people settle in the said areas as provided in results from this study.

All the same, results demonstrate government efforts in dealing with squatters at varied capacities but they need to up-grade their degree and keenness in dealing with identified challenges and problems for good habitation in urban areas like squatter settlements. Such craving would have been properly executed through intensified application of social responsibility approach whereby all other parties (civil society and individuals) would have been able to fulfill their obligation for the best anticipated results in dealing with squatter settlements. Therefore, results led the researcher to accept the formulated assumption that, “There are problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City”

Another tested assumption was premised as follows “Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city.”

Further evaluation of presented results in chapter eight illustrates that, on one hand, the central government together with local government authorities are in a position to prevent as well as control squatter settlements at various dimensions. On the other hand, the said authorities are providing social services to the studied squatter areas. In addition, in combination with other submitted results from this thesis, there are initiatives that show the central government and local authorities, among key players, somehow apply social responsibility in discharge of their duties that are aimed at some noticeable level of prevention and control of squatter settlements in the studied areas. Therefore, the researcher accepted the premised assumption that, “Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city”

Also, the following prediction was tested: “Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania.”

As already submitted in chapter six of this thesis, the central government and local government authorities (Mwanza City Council, Ilemela Municipal Council and Nyamagana Municipal Council) were at the head in social services delivery in squatter settlements of Mwanza city. However, the central government and local government authorities together with some key players were supposed to take an active role in an elevated realisation of registered achievements in dealing with squatter settlements of Mwanza city. The other parties were minimally involved or they were not involved at all in dealing with squatter settlements. For instance, religious bodies were taking part as their moral obligation in dealing with people’s deviant behaviours in squatter areas. The role of media was a bit invisible and they acted only when events happened while bureaucrats or politicians were on their duties or if there were calamities in squatter settlements, for example, floods. Also, an apparent demise of civil society organisation in the said task was registered. All such bodies were supposed to join forces with the central government and local government authorities in amplifying the appreciated social service delivery in squatter settlements at various capacities.

Thus, it means that the best realisation of sought-after achievements can only be executed through Social Responsibility Approach if such entities’ efforts are combined with central government and local government authorities’ inputs. Therefore, the researcher was led to accept the posited assumption that, “Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania.” Thus, it was in quest for demonstrating validity of employing social responsibility approach by the identified stakeholders including the government (central and local government authorities) with public entities.

In any case, results demonstrate key players’ efforts in dealing with squatters at diverse capacities but they need to up-grade their degree and zeal in dealing with identified challenges as well as problems for good habitation in urban areas like squatter settlements. Such aspiration was minimally executed through application of social responsibility approach whereby they played their obligation.

Further critical evaluation of presented results exposes that the central government, together with local government authorities, are in a position to prevent as well as control squatter settlements at various dimensions. After all, government authorities are providing social services to the studied squatter areas. Thus, together with other submitted results from this thesis, there are initiatives that show the central

government and local government authorities, among key players, somehow apply social responsibility in discharge of their duties aimed at some observable level of prevention and control of squatter settlements in the studied areas. Therefore, it is safe to argue that Social Responsibility Approach is the most pertinent of all pathways that must be applied in prevention and control of squatter settlements. Initiatives so far being expected will bear much achievements if all identified stakeholders play a major role in joining hands with the government and mostly involve media, whose roles to society include dissemination of information, advocacy, education, awareness raising, entertainment and many others.

The next part furnishes discussion in regard to the main hypotheses test results for this study that was borne out of consideration from the main research question for this study as formulated in chapter one of this thesis.

### **9.6.5 Assumption Test**

In casting the net wide, the researcher strived to test the following assumption postulated in chapter one:

“Social responsibility is useful for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania.”

Recall, the researcher expected that participation by the central government (public sector) in terms of proper legal framework pertaining to settlements/resettlements in urban areas, Mwanza city council's concerted efforts in urban planning together with the private sector in regard to community, Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), Faith-Based Organisations (FBOs), Community-Based Organizations (CBOs) as well as business people will help in control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Such desired achievements can be realized through pertinent strategies/action plans, meetings and decision-making for creating commensurate urban settlements thereby controlling and preventing squatters in terms of provision of social services. Social responsibility approach is an independent variable that can facilitate prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza in linkage with dependent variables mediated by public and private sectors' joint efforts together with instituting proper strategic plans, action plans, meetings plus ensuring that there would be joint implementation of selected action plans/strategies.

Results obtained from this study together with those from hypotheses tests revealed that there were initiatives in control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. It has to be recalled that such settlements were formed as a result of push and pull factors but some initiatives to discourage their formation as well as sprawl were registered. Initiatives include the following: the government has directives that require people already residing in squatters not to start with new house

constructions in unplanned areas. Those already settled in such areas had their houses registered so that in the event the government got plans to develop the areas by requiring demolishing some houses or structures to give way for the space(s), the registered houses/structures are right to be compensated. That is not the case for those who happened to build new houses after the said directives banning such developments.

Another initiative to discourage proliferation of squatters, involves the government through its Ministry of Lands and Development of Human Settlements that has directed all local government authorities (municipal councils and city councils) to contract private survey entities who shall undertake cadastral surveys in squatter areas as an action to authenticate them with pertinent planned social amenities. Furthermore, the government has created good habitation areas in peri-urban locations by carrying out land surveys and thereby creating building all necessary infrastructures, for example, paved roads; provision of play grounds; creation of spaces for development of health facilities as well as schools; and creation of spaces for other social amenities. Other aspects that involve control and prevention of squatters include curbing of deviant behaviours that mushroom, especially in overcrowded areas like squatter settlements. The initiatives include fight against sale of drugs and drug abuse that are dealt with in all areas including squatters. The said actions also include the fight against prostitution also manifest in urban areas. In addition, deviant behaviours, registered in squatter areas include formation of street children who get lose but are helped in rehabilitation by all stakeholders. A case to that end was through an international NGO, Africa Children Railway, in collaboration with local NGOs in Mwanza city that are involved in street children as well as teenage rehabilitation.

Presented initiatives executed through the government and other stakeholders lead to discern that, to a great extent, Social Responsibility Approach is useful for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector (other stakeholders) in Tanzania. Results from the study justify that existing legal framework together with local government authorities (Mwanza City Council and the two Municipal Councils, Ilemela and Nyamagana) have instituted strategies for the good cause.

Thus, it is safe to put forward that the premised, 'Social Responsibility Approach is useful for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania,' is accepted. In due regard, it is evident that strides being carried out so far point to achievements of the desired goal of safer habitation in urban areas for control and eventual prevention of squatters.

## CHAPTER TEN

### SUMMARY OF RESULTS, CONCLUSION AND RECOMMENDATIONS

#### 10 Introduction

The main task of this study, through social responsibility approach, sought to examine obligations among inhabitants (the squatters), the local government authorities (Mwanza City Council, Nyamagana Municipal Council as well as Ilemela Municipal Council), the central government and civil society organizations in regard to impacts (negative or positive) upon the environment (squatter environment), specifically in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlement. In addition, the study required to underscore whether or not their actions created equilibrium [benefit(s) to society] or disequilibrium to the environment by being irresponsible or responsible.

The thesis begins by providing a general overview about squatters by tracing origin of squatters in the world, Africa and Tanzania. Then, the study presents literature review related to the study by using the following four pertinent Neo-Marxist Classic Theories from Sociology: Rural Urban Continuum, Concentric Zone Theory, Anomie Theory and Social Responsibility Theory. Also, the chapter on literature review provides empirical evidence from other proponents related to the topic. Furthermore, the thesis provides pertinent research methodology as chapter three, while five chapters (four to eight) that follow provide results that pave the way for chapter nine that furnishes discussion.

In due regard, several avenues were used and facilitated to furnish results from chapter four to chapter eight of this thesis. The alleyways included determination of respondents' demographic characteristics in regard to their gender; age groups; education levels; religious affiliations; ethnic groups; marital status; house ownership or rent; and employment status submitted in chapter four. Determination of demographic features was performed due to the fact that demographers including other social scientists (Hossain, 2001) embrace that most socio-economic characteristics like marital status, migration and social services (schools, health facilities, housing as well as transport) depend on demographic features. Accordingly, this study used demographic features to get the real status by comparing them with provided social services in squatter areas of Mwanza city.

In addition, this study sought to identify features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city that are furnished in chapter five of this thesis and they were compared with features from other parts around the world. Chapter one of this thesis furnishes the world view pertaining to the research problem and submitted definition connoting for squatter settlements plus their features around the world. Thus, this study aspired to determine features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city in properly understanding them by discerning definition of the term squatter' so

as to proceed with determination of the main mission, examination of whether or not responsible parties employed social responsibility approach as a pertinent pathway in prevention and control of squatter settlements of Mwanza city.

Likewise, the researcher examined whether or not key players applied social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in the study area. Results for the parameters are furnished in chapter six of this thesis. The key players include the central government and local government authorities. The researcher visualized that data for the said aspect will help to discern the manner key parties undertake measures that enhance prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city.

Additional key players comprise the private sector represented by civil organizations like Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs), Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), business persons and individuals. All were determined if they worked together with the government (central and local government authorities) in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city at various capacities. Besides, at the centre it was considered necessary to examine the role of media in working together with the other key players as highlighted through social responsibility approach. The media represent an agency extremely important in communication and dissemination of issues concerning society in all spheres of life for socio-economic development. Therefore, the role of media was analysed so as to identify their contribution towards prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city.

Further research undertakings for this thesis sought to uncover problems and challenges in prevention and control of squatter settlements of Mwanza city by various key players. The study examined the said aspects through the following key players: the central government, local government authorities (studied municipal councils) and the private sector. Chapter seven of this thesis provides results that uncover the manner key players dealt with resolving problems and challenges they encountered in dealing with squatter settlements.

The other research endeavor involved analysis of efforts to prevent and control the increase in squatter settlements in Mwanza city by applying social responsibility approach. In so doing, the researcher assessed efforts from the main actors, the central government and local government authorities including other players. Results are submitted in chapter eight of this thesis.

Thus, presented results from this study from chapters four to eight paved the way for discussion in chapter nine that involved incorporation of assumption test result and conceptual framework already submitted in chapter one of this work. In addition, the discussion is tailored towards aspects that revolved around theoretical grounding and

empirical works as submitted in chapter two of this thesis. Then presentation of discussion of this work facilitated submission of this chapter, which is the final chapter of this thesis illuminated through summary, conclusion, with implications and finally, recommendations. The latter highlights important alleys towards future prospects in prevention and control of Mwanza city squatter settlements and likely for other places.

## **10.1 Summary of Results**

As already reported, results from this study from chapters four to eight facilitated presentation of chapter nine in form of discussion that involved incorporation of hypotheses test results and conceptual framework already submitted in chapter one of this work. In addition, the discussion is tailored towards aspects that revolved around theoretical grounding and empirical works as submitted in chapter two of this thesis. The provided discussion in chapter nine helped to present summary of this work submitted in this section.

In due regard, this section presents summary of results under the following aspects: respondents' social characteristics; features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city; problems and challenges in prevention as well as control of squatter settlements and current initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Other aspects presented in this section encompass the manner social responsibility approach was be applied to prevent as well as control settlements. The summary begins with presentation of respondents' demographic characteristics furnished in the following sub-section.

### **10.1.1 Respondents' Social Characteristics**

Essence of determination of demographic features aimed at getting the real status by comparing them with provided social services in squatter areas of Mwanza city. The discussion provided in chapter nine on this aspect facilitated presentation of summary, which is submitted in this sub-section. Thus, it presents summary of results concerning respondents' social characteristics. Such submission helps in understanding the issue of rural-urban migration in a proper socio-demographic perspective. The sub-section is composed of the following parts: respondents' distribution by gender as well as age group; education levels; religious affiliation; ethnic group, marital status; house ownership/house rent; and employment status.

#### **10.1.1.1 Respondents' Distribution by Gender**

In terms of respondents' distribution by gender, results from the study revealed that more females than males migrated to studied squatter areas in Mwanza city. Identified statistics from this study for more female than male migrants were due to the following pushfactors: women joining their spouses, women escaping from discrimination, girls fleeng from FGM and women getting employment in

households. The few males migrated because of wage labour, business undertakings and other means for their survival.

There are variations in regard to gender and age pattern for squatters across the world. For example, in Latin America and the Caribbean, women outnumbered men in the urban population of every country and such situation was similar to the Philippines in the Far East (Gugler, 1989: 348). But at other places, for example, in South Asia, men were recorded to outnumber women by a substantial margin (Gugler, 1989: 348). Southern Africa also presented a similar South Asia pattern of more men than women as highly exhibited in Botswana where men migrated to mines in South Africa (Gugler, 1989: 350). Elsewhere in Sub-Saharan Africa, countries had rather small populations and/or were known as major exporters of male labour, for example, Benin, Burundi, Central African Republic, Chad, Congo, Gabon, Guinea, Malawi, Mozambique, Rwanda and Togo (Gugler, 1989: 50). It implies that such countries had migrant labour with male outnumbered female populations in urban areas due to employment.

Several studies indicated that rural-urban migration has gender-differentiated causes and consequences. For example, Kholsa (2012: 13) argued that female migration was increasing despite restrictions of women's dependent position within the family and society because households were in big need for income and in some places, many employment opportunities were available to women. Moreover, in some towns and cities in Latin America and the Caribbean including parts of South East Asia, rural outmigration was female selective whereby urban sex ratios usually showed more women than men and levels of female headed households were higher in urban than rural areas (Kholsa, 2012: 13). Furthermore, scale and nature of migration into urban areas in Latin America were highly influenced by decisions in rural households about the kind of person to migrate and reasons due to constraints on women's work outside the home by households as well as demand for female labour in urban areas (see Kholsa, 2012: 13).

Several other reasons have been advanced for rural-urban migration patterns. For example, Kholsa (2012: 13) argued that urbanization can provide girls and women employment as well as education opportunities unavailable in rural areas. Employment and education opportunities could offer women great socio-cultural alternatives including economic independence, aspects that can never be realized in rural areas (Kholsa, 2012: 13). Also, women were reported not to have livelihood means in villages like inheritance rights to land enjoyed by men (Kholsa, 2012: 13). For example, in Mali, Nigeria, Vietnam and Tanzania, many young women migrated from rural to urban areas so as to improve their economic alternatives including their socio-cultural rights (Kholsa, 2012: 14) whereby they lived inexpensively and negotiated for their health.

#### **10.1.1.2 Respondents' Distribution by Age**

Respondents' distribution by age was another important demographic feature that was analysed in this study. Findings from this study revealed that more youth aged between 18 and 35 years migrated as well as settled in squatter areas than those 55 and above years old (see Table 4.2; Figure 4.2). Kholsa (2012: 14) quoted the State of the World Population Report by United Nations Population Fund (UNFPA) released in 2006 that revealed young people aged between 15 and 29 years old make up half the total international migration flow, which is a similar trend for rural to urban migration. Moreover, Okhankhuele and Opafunso (2013: 191) revealed that youths aged between 18 and 29 years old migrated in large number in search for social services, particularly education and employment in Nigerian towns as well as cities. A study by Gibson and Gurm (2012) established that 15.5 percent of young adults aged between 15 and 30 years old migrated from rural to nearby towns (Adama, Iteya and Dera) in Ethiopia.

#### **10.1.1.3 Respondents' Education Levels**

This study analyzed respondents' education levels so as to determine that pattern in regard to the most numerous and the least numerous population segments involved in squatting in urban areas. Results from the study revealed that 12 percent of all respondents were illiterates with males represented by 5 percent and females accounted for 7 percent, while those who never completed primary education cycle accounted for 3 percent females and 2 percent males (Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). In addition, more females than males completed primary education level, while 11 percent males and 10 percent females completed secondary education (Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). With regard to tertiary education (college education), only 2 percent males and 1 percent females had college education in the study areas (Table 4.3; Figure 4.3).

Therefore, findings from this study imply that there was higher illiteracy level among female respondents than male respondents in the study area (see Table 4.3; Figure 4.3). Findings from this study do not deviate from those exposed from other parts of the world. For example, a study of squatter settlements in Kore, Addis Ababa, Ethiopia by Bahir (2010: 226) revealed that there was the relatively higher illiteracy level among women than men. Also, such low education level of the urban poor was identified in a study by Lewis (2000, cited in Bahir, 2010: 226) in Puerto Rico as well as Mexico.

#### **10.1.1.4 Religious Affiliations**

This study examined respondents' religious affiliation so as to determine further demographic characteristics of squatter settlers in Mwanza city. However, results from this study report religious denominations at a general pattern rather than segregated religious sects.

It was revealed from this study that only one percent males believed/practiced African traditional religion. Respondents in the study area constituted more Christian believers than Moslems. It has to be noted that such status does not necessarily imply that squatter areas in Mwanza city were constituted by more Christian believers than Moslem believers. It was a chance for having such respondents but did not represent a count like a population census.

#### **10.1.1.5 Distribution of Respondents by their Ethnic Origins**

This study identified several ethnic groups in Mwanza city mostly from neighbouring regions like Mara, Tabora, Kagera and Kigoma. As long as ethnic groups have known places of origin, such variable was useful for determining squatters' places of domicile. Several factors were provided for such migration in Mwanza city and they are presented in the appropriate section of this work.

Pertaining to distribution of ethnicity in studied areas, results from this study revealed that Wasukuma outnumbered those who have settled in squatter areas in Mwanza city. Wasukuma ethnic group are among dominant ethnic groups residing in Mwanza, they are the main inhabitants of Mwanza region and they constitute the largest ethnic group in the country (Nyang'aro, 2004: 7).

Regardless of mixed ethnic groups identified in the study area, all are demarcated with dominant ethnic groups. For example, Isamilo-Nyakabungo and Mabatini wards are heavily populated by ethnic groups from Mara region like Wakurya, Wazanaki, Wanata and others. Such pattern happened because the first settlers from Mara region attracted them to live in the squatters. Likewise, Igogo ward is dominated by people from Tabora region (Wanyamwezi) and Kigoma region (Waha and Wabembe). Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward is dominated by people from Kagera region (Wahaya) followed by Wakerewe and Wakara from Ukerewe district in Mwanza region.

#### **10.1.1.6 Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status**

Respondents' marital status in Mwanza city squatter areas was examined because it is an important demographic characteristic for understanding patterns of squatters. Results from the study revealed that 58 percent (67 men and 73 women) were married, while there were 24 widows and 4 widowers (Table 4.6; Figure 4.6). Also, it was further disclosed from the study that there were few unmarried men and women, respectively (see Table 4.6; Figure 4.6).

The identified marital statuses show that push-pull factors contributed to such varied population segments. For example, some people migrated to urban areas for being married, others, while single, migrated to urban areas for wage employment and others moved into Mwanza squatters so as to carry out petty businesses like sale of second hand clothes, food vending and the like.

#### **10.1.1.7 Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership**

This study obtained information pertaining to house ownership or house rent by people living in squatter settlements in Mwanza city (see Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). Such information was important for many aspects including knowing people living in squatters in terms of affordability/capability to own or rent houses.

It was found out that close to a quarter of respondents, both men and women, stayed in houses they owned (Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). Also, it was indicated from the study that 21 percent men and 36 percent women stayed in rented houses (Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). MECCO ward had more female owned houses than the rest of the wards followed by men from Igogo ward (see Table 4.7; Figure 4.6). Then, more females rented houses from Kirumba ward than the rest of the wards followed by females living in MECCO ward (Table 4.7; Figure 4.7). At another dimension, many people were found living together in rooms that included sharing a single room, especially youngsters and others who were living as dependants. Such decisions were meant to carry out cost-sharing as a way to settle in urban areas with less financial problems. In other cases, people were found renting with house owner-occupiers, while others were solely renting without house owner-occupiers. Therefore, it implies that many people moved from squatter areas because they were constrained by incomes that forced them to look for houses with low rents and living costs that appeared to be ideal options for them to settle there. Similar situations were uncovered before by other scholars in other parts of the country.

The study by Limbumba (2010: 95) at Hannanasifu and Keko Machungwa squatter settlements in Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania revealed that demand for rental accommodation was high such that it paved way for high population densities and encroachment of housing development in a nearby river valley. Rooms were booked in advance even at the time a house was under construction (Limbumba, 2010: 95). On the other hand, house owners added rooms for rent wherever there was space, a pattern that increased further population density in such squatter settlements (Limbumba, 2010: 95).

#### **10.1.1.8 Employment Status**

Employment status was another demographic feature that was analysed to see the manner people settled after migration from rural areas because of employment of various kinds in the studied urban areas. It was revealed that some respondents were employed in the public sector as teachers at both primary (elementary) and secondary schools; health workers (dispensaries, health centres, hospitals that are private as well as public); and others were professional workers together with non-skilled workers at Ilemela as well as Nyamagana Municipal Councils. Others were employed in private sector, for example, fish processing plants, Mwanza Textile Mills, Nyanza Bottling Company, commuter buses in the city, taxi operations, motorcycle operations, tricycle operations, women's hair salons, men's hair salons

and so on. Others were involved in activities such as sale of fish, sale of used clothes as well as shoes, sale of fruits and vegetables, part-time maids (house girls), waste collection, operation of small shops and food vending.

Magigi and Majani (2005: 4) explored communities in squatter settlement upgrading projects at Ibungilo in Mwanza city and Ubungo Darajani in Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania. They (*ibid.*) revealed that major economic and income generation activities carried out in the studied squatter settlements included gardening; business undertakings; garages; hotels/restaurants; animal keeping/poultry keeping and off-farm undertakings (carpentry as well as sale of timber).

Similar situations in squatter settlements like those studied in Mwanza city can be discerned around the world. For example, in Ethiopia, Bahir (2010: 227) reported daily labour earnings together with informal activities in squatters for their livelihoods for majority of sampled households in Kore squatter settlements of Addis Ababa city in Ethiopia.

### **10.1.2 Features and Causes of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City**

The other variables of concern in analysis of squatter settlements in the study area encompassed determination of features and causes of squatter settlements. Then results from the analysed variables were compared with situations around the world in order to get a clear picture. All are provided in this sub-section as a summary.

#### **10.1.2.1 Features of squatter settlements of Mwanza city**

In regard to understanding features of squatter settlements of Mwanza city, this part provides summary on definition of the term squatter; trend analysis of rural to urban migration (migration periods); households' source of energy for cooking; households' source of energy for lighting; and households' access to safe as well as clean water.

The term squatter was said to mean the following: income poverty; bad physical condition of housing; social deprivation; and landless people. Others defined the term under the following features: use of poor, environmental unfriendly sources of energy for cooking as well as lighting, lack of ownership of plots for housing with no right of occupancy, house/room renting with sharing of utilities, lack of sources of clean, potable as well as safe water, lack of proper waste management and lack of public social services like health as well as infrastructure like paved roads.

Similarly to UN-HABITAT (2003: 11) Global Report on Human Settlements provides the following features of squatter settlements: lack of basic services; poor quality housing or illegal as well as inadequate building structures; overcrowding together with high density; unhealthy living conditions as well as hazardous locations; insecure tenure, irregular or informal settlements; poverty as well as social exclusion; and minimum settlement size.

In order to get a clear understanding on the manner Mwanza city has been getting people from rural areas, the study carried out a trend analysis for forty years from 1970 to 2010 (see Table 5.1 and Figure 5.1). Overall, it was revealed that the period between 1986 and 1990 had the most numerous of all people in squatter settlements followed by 1996 and 2000 (see Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Igogo ward received more inhabitants than all wards followed by Isamilo-Nyakabungo ward (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). The earliest of all places to be settled was revealed to be Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward whereby people started moving in from 1970 to 1975 (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). Mabatini ward was next with more people than the rest of the wards (Table 5.2; Figure 5.2). The period between 2006 and 2010 had the least people who moved in the studied wards (see Table 5.2; Figure 5.2).

The reported migration trends were due to pull factors that included the following: first, people settled initially at Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward areas due to close proximity to Kirumba international fish market whereby people are involved in fish business and related businesses in the vicinities. Second, people settled at Mabatini as well as Igogo ward areas due to closeness to Mwanza city centre as well as health facilities (Bugando zonal referral hospital and Sekou Toure regional hospital). In such areas, it is easy for people to access places like health services and get involved in business ventures as well as wage employment. Third, it was easy to access houses and/or room(s) for rent at affordable low rates.

Presented results from this study show the manner typical urban growth processes have been and they are still occurring around the world through time. As presented in history of urban growth in chapter one of this thesis, it was reported that as long as cities grew, people gathered to towns in search for work, wage employment as well as access social services like education including health services (Limbumba, 2012; UN-HABITAT, 1996: 87). It is a situation similarly portrayed with sprawl of Mwanza settlements - squatters of Mwanza city being a case in point provided from results from this study.

The study analyzed households' sources of energy for cooking in the studied squatter areas that included firewood, charcoal, crop residues (like maize cobs), kerosene, livestock dung (cow dung), electricity from the national grid and bottled liquefied gas (see Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). In addition, it was revealed from the studied squatter areas that no household owned solar equipment for use as a source of energy for cooking and it was a similar pattern for biogas from animals (Table 5.3; Figure 5.3). Moreover, the study identified the following sources of energy for lighting: hurricane lamps, candles, wick lamps, electricity from the national grid and solar lamps (Table 5.4; Figure 5.4). Results from the study revealed some households used electricity from the national utility company, Tanzania Electric Supply Company Limited

[(TANESCO) Table 5.4]. A hand full of households used solar lamps and candles for lighting their households (Table 5.4; Figure 5.4).

Disclosed use of sources of energy for cooking as well as lighting houses in squatter settlements in Mwanza city displays poverty level and low level of good utilities in households. An almost comparable situation was found by Hozefa (2011) who assessed factors that posed health risks to urban dwellers in slum areas of Mnazi Mmoja as well as Midizini in Dar es Salaam city. Several aspects that included poor housing condition as well as indoor smoke from cooking together with filthy external surroundings and stagnant water on storm drains due to waste accumulation that led to blockage, narrow as well as inaccessible parts during emergency services (*ibid.*).

In regard to access to clean and safe water, a few respondents had access to public taps and others bought water from street vendors, while very few respondents had taps for clean, safe water at their households. Besides, due to close proximity to Lake Victoria, some respondents fetched water for domestic use from the lake, while other respondents used water drawn from springs/dug up wells (Table 5.5; Figure 5.5). In general, the studied squatter areas showed that majority of people had no access to good supply of clean, safe potable water. Likewise, a study in Dar es Salaam by Mhache and Mauma (2013) found problems in squatter settlements that included, among others, water shortage.

It can be surmised that features of squatter settlements as revealed from the study are in appalling conditions. Such conditions were exhibited in the manner respondents defined the term squatter whereby they revealed to mean income poverty; bad physical condition of housing; social deprivation; and landless people. Moreover, results revealed that many people could not have good utilities as shown by use of sources of energy for cooking and lighting. They are used by poor who cannot access good and well to do sources like electricity, solar power and biogas. That was correspondingly true for accessed clean, safe and potable water.

#### **10.1.2.2 Causes of Squatter Settlements**

Several push-pull factors were identified that prompted people to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas. This study identified the following push factors: first, ethnicity facilitated by early settlers attracted others to join them in such settlements; second, domestic violence/gender discrimination prompted married women to escape from beating and various forms of discrimination from their husbands in the villages, while girls ran away to avoid female genital mutilation (FGM) in villages located in Mara region; and third, insecurity was another issue in that some people, especially elderly ran away from villages because they were accused of being sorcerers such that they were afraid from being killed thereby they had to migrate to urban areas as safe havens.

Fourth, social bonding involved relatives already in towns who called their kin to go to do small trades or others went there to join husbands. Finally, bad weather in that life in villages was challenging with erratic rainy seasons that resulted to poor food crops as well as poor cash crops that led to unproductive farming in rural areas.

Other identified push factors included inadequate or lack of social services in rural areas. Respondents claimed that there are no good social services like hospitals even for simple/small ailments in villages. Also, they argued that there are life hardships in villages due to lack of social services, but urban areas like Mwanza city have referral hospitals with good quality services.

Several pull factors as motivation for people to migrate and stay in Mwanza squatter areas were identified. First, availability associated with easy access to social services, for example, big referral hospitals for treatment, schools, markets and others forced people to move away from rural to urban areas. Second, respondents narrated that they were prompted to stay close to town centre so as to reduce costs by walking on foot to access social services. Third, urban areas facilitated greater possibility of undertaking small businesses for subsistence than rural areas or villages. It was submitted that in towns, there are markets for several commodities whereby people can live by doing small businesses rather than in villages.

Fourth, urban areas offer good habitation areas for people to easily acquire plots in unplanned areas at cheap prices. In addition, houses or rooms for rent can be accessed at low costs and thus, living costs get reduced in urban areas. In defending further their decisions for migrating to urban areas, respondents recounted that there were utility services like electricity and clean as well as safe water that were mostly missing in rural areas. Fifth, there was good infrastructure like roads for passage that eased people's life ways in terms of accessing social services or small business opportunities and/or amenities. Sixth, people migrated to Mwanza in search for employment because it is easier to get small jobs in towns than villages and there are many job opportunities in towns compared to villages. Seventh, urban areas provide for small businesses opportunities for subsistence than rural areas because there were many people with money to buy items compared to rural areas.

Eighth, business policies in towns include every good aspect and forget about people in rural areas. Ninth, some people witnessed from neighbours' success in town after they portrayed developments in rural areas upon return. For example, they made facelifts to their houses, they solved many aspects concerning monetary issues that were not easily managed before moving to urban areas. Tenth, people moved to Mwanza city areas because they believed that there was better life than in rural areas. Finally, they moved to Mwanza city because of availability of security for themselves and properties but security was minimally executed in rural areas. For

example, the elderly considered to bewitch people had their lives threatened by being killed and thus, they fled to urban areas as safe havens.

Concerning definition of the term ‘squatter settlements,’ respondents provided several definitions that are almost similar to those offered elsewhere in the world. For example, some described to mean income poverty, while others referred to bad physical condition of housing. Others referred to an area with immigrants living with lack of legal land tenure; social deprivation; lack of social services; and landless people.

In another avenue, the study determined status of utilities for such people and then compared to aspects that defined their socio-economic level. As a result, sources of energy for cooking included the following: firewood, charcoal, crop residues (like maize cobs), kerosene, livestock dung (cow dung), electricity from the national grid and bottled liquefied gas. Conversely, no household owned solar equipment or biogas from animal by-products for use as source of energy for cooking. Charcoal and crop residues were the most of all utilized sources of energy for cooking in the studied wards. Subsequently, firewood was also used by many households in the studied squatter areas.

The following sources of energy for lighting were delineated: many households used wick lamps followed by hurricane lamps and other households used electricity from the national grid. Very few persons utilised solar lamps for lighting their households. Besides, candles were used by very few households.

Other features disclosed by participants that help to discern people’s socio-economic status encompassed availability or lack of social services. Thus, availability of clean and safe, potable water was disclosed by only very few respondents with access to public taps and very few bought water from street vendors. Also, very few respondents had taps for clean, safe water at their households, while others fetched water for domestic use from Lake Victoria. Very few used water drawn from springs or dug up wells.

Presented results provided good ground for evaluation of formulated assumption in regard to features and causes of squatter settlements. Therefore, obtained results from test implications led to accept the assumption that, “Features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city are brought about by push factors driving people from rural areas and pull factors attracting people in urban areas.”.

### **10.1.3 Key Players’ Initiatives in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements**

Key players’ initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements were assessed so as to measure their obligation through social responsibility

approach. This part submits summary of key players' initiatives in dealing with squatter settlements. Also, the summary is on provided social services in squatter areas; and benefits from provided social services.

### **10.1.3.1 Key Players in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements**

This part presents summary pertaining to key players' initiatives in prevention and control of squatter settlements. It is presented under the following aspects: government initiatives in dealing with squatter settlements; the role of media in dealing with squatter settlements; the role of civil society in dealing with squatter settlements; and the role of religious denominations (organizations/institutions) in dealing with squatter settlements.

#### **10.1.3.1.1 Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

Respondents disclosed that the government had the following future plans in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city: first, to improve existing infrastructure through demolition of some houses so as to give way for construction of roads, storm water drains as well as provision of electricity and similar developments. Next, the government had plans to prohibit construction of new houses in squatter areas by designating registration of all existing houses (Table 6.1; Figure 6.1). The action aims at paying compensation to the right persons in case house demolition may be required for various reasons including development projects. Third, it was reported that the government wanted to let squatters stay in such areas as long as they could pay taxes like property tax; and fourth, respondents mentioned demolition of all houses in squatter areas. The latter was emphasized by respondents from Bugarika-Igogo ward areas who held that after demolition, house owners would be compensated to give way for construction of new good quality house units.

Further findings from Focus Group Discussions confirmed submissions pertaining to government efforts in dealing with squatter settlements. Respondents narrated that Tanzania Electric Supply Company (TANESCO) and Mwanza Urban Water Supply Authority (MWAUWASA) provided their services in urban areas including squatter settlements. Respondents remarked that provision of the said services was testimony by public and thus, the government that there was recognition as well as concern for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in officially planned and registered settlements.

In addition, this study probed about other social services that included provision of clean, safe, potable water, roads construction and waste management. Overall, provision of potable, clean and safe water in squatter areas in Mwanza featured prominently in all wards mentioned by close to half (47.7%) of respondents compared to other kinds of provided social services (Table 6.2; Figure 6.2).

Respondents mentioned about their own initiatives and government efforts in keeping their environments clean. Table 6.2 and Figure 6.2 show that respondents mentioned waste collection in squatter areas as a government initiative for cleaning the environment (see also Figure 6.1). However, there was limited waste collection to inaccessible areas especially those high up in hilly areas. That was revealed at areas like Igogo and Kirumba Kabuhoro that the sloppy hillock landscape together with underlying and/or exposed granite rock boulders/granite bedrocks hampered development of road networks in their areas (see Figure 6.3) such that waste collection was difficult to execute. They had to depend on foot paths that made it difficult to pass with garbage collection bins.

There was poor sanitation in the squatter settlements were observed with shallow dug-up pit latrines and due to bad terrain, steep-sided landscapes as well as hillocks, it was difficult to pave roads and construct drainage. Thus, it was difficult for the local government authorities to develop storm water drains or develop a sewage system in such areas. In addition, waste collection by Mwanza City Council was problematic in squatter areas due to a hard-up to reach landscape and maintain such action (see also Figure 6.3).

Further government efforts in provision of social services to citizens including squatters are justifiable through strategic plans in some utility entities. The researcher was able to get some water supply strategic plans that are in footing by MWAUWASA (2011: 10). Thus, in its strategic plan, MWAUWASA (2011: 21) outlines main objectives for improvement of provision of water services to Mwanza city residents and peri-urban settlements including settlements outside the city bounds.

The central government and local government authorities are key players in facilitation and enhancing regularization/up-grade of such settlements (see also Magigi and Majani, 2005). There are strides by Mwanza City Council through its two municipalities, Nyamagana and Ilemela that provide efforts in facilitation of city dwellers' smooth operation of their activities. Results from this study disclosed the way the local government authorities were interacting with business people in designing and furnishing places for their operations.

Local government leaders reported that they held meetings whenever there was need for activities that included the requirement to institute development ventures. For example, if they wanted to discuss about development activities like construction of roads, health center, schools and police post, they called upon people for meetings including business people as key contributors for settlements' socio-economic development activities.

Respondents reported further that even though such meetings were held, the problem arose when people had to contribute their money. As business people, they normally did not want to contribute money. Thus, all agreements/resolutions from meetings ended in words and not in deeds. As submitted for other entities like civil society organizations and as subsumed in the Conceptual Framework presented in chapter one of this thesis (see Figure 1.1), business people, individually or collectively, have an obligation to take part in control and prevention of squatter settlements. However, this was not the case in the study area. Therefore, there should be some efforts to get them involved as key stakeholders in control and prevention of squatters together with associated deviant behaviour patterns.

In another vein, as its obligation for facilitating the informal sector, which contributes to economy of Mwanza city in terms of issues like employment, among others, Mwanza City Council, in consultation with business persons identified as well as establish markets/working places of informal sector businesses [(see Table 9.1) City Director, 2008: 6]. The spaces are planned for petty traders operating in the informal economy and include squatter settlers (City Director, 2008: 60). Mwanza City Council is targeting to help micro-entrepreneurs access venues for their business operations because they cannot afford to acquire ordinary plots individually from the City Council's land office due to small nature of their businesses (City Director, 2008: 60).

#### **10.1.3.1.2 Role of Media in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

There was no media coverage concerning socio-economic development activities in the studied squatter settlements. It implies that there was no media that took an active part in reporting daily work and/or life ways concerned with squatter settlements in Mwanza. Respondents only informed that news coverage was on problems or events that occurred in such areas. For instance, if someone was raped, killed or caught with illegal properties like illicit liquor (locally known as *gongo*) or drugs (mostly marijuana or cannabis) or when calamities like a flood, a disease outbreak happened in the area such as cholera, then there was media coverage for the area. Respondents informed further that media coverage was done when politicians and government leaders went to squatter areas, like in other areas in the country, for some activities. For example, by the time TASAF phase three project was launched on dealing with assistance of households in abject poverty, the event had media coverage.

In focus group discussions, participants were concerned that media are very important tools in exposing as well as educating people on life aspects. It was further argued that media must be actively as well as deliberately involved in coverage of activities as well as events without being alerted. Respondents argued that media must thecal attention to the importance of investigative journalism that should include coverage of all areas, rural and urban, planned and unplanned urban areas. In due regard, results from this study illustrate that media people have a great role to

play in society on aspects concerning development activities, environment as well as social life ways at all times.

#### **10.1.3.1.3 Role of Civil Society in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

This part presents results on the manner non-governmental organizations (NGOs) and/or civil societies take part in dealing with squatter problems in Mwanza City. It also includes business people's share in dealing with squatter problems in Mwanza city. This is in line with the Social Responsibility Approach and Conceptual Framework in chapter one that underlined for such entities in dealing with squatter problems.

The part is presented under the following aspects: types of civil society organizations/entities involved with squatter problems in Mwanza city; civil society areas of concentration in dealing with squatter problems in Mwanza city; civil society contribution/help in improving squatter settlements; local government leaders' interaction with civil society entities; and the manner squatter areas have benefitted from civil society entities' contribution in dealing with squatter settlements; Others include local government leaders' interaction with business persons and frequencies in that end; aspects making interactions with business people in squatter settlements; business people's contribution for socio-economic development in squatter settlements; local leaders' involvement of business people in resolving problems in squatter settlements; and international agencies' involvement with squatter problems.

It was found out that there was no civil society organization or individuals like business persons particularly dealing with control and prevention of squatter settlements in the study area. They never deal with prevention and control of squatters. However, they are involved in activities recently launched by the central government and local government authorities like cleaning the environment, an aspect that is mandatory to all citizens in urban areas. Local leaders approach them for participation in dealing with daily problems but they never really take part.

The conceptual framework presented in chapter one of this thesis under social responsibility approach calls for stakeholders that include civil society organizations and individuals to play their part on society matters. In due regard, such matters that were the hallmark of this study encompass control as well as prevention of squatters in urban areas that include Mwanza city. Thus, non-participation of civil society entities and individuals to that end is not good for improvement of life ways in urban areas as presented by squatters.

During focus group discussions, respondents argued that NGOs including civil society organizations form a very important team of key players in development undertakings at all spheres. It was further remarked that such entities must be

vigorously as well as willfully involved in development activities including events happening in societies as their moral commitments. They are required to be actively involved in all social-economic aspects of their areas at diverse capacities. A pattern that is mandatory for everyone in society. Respondents argued that the said entities must give emphasis on importance of voluntary spirit to all people at all areas, rural and urban, planned and unplanned urban areas. In due regard, results from this study show that NGOs and civil society organizations have a big role to play including a major moral compulsion for society on aspects concerning development activities, environment as well as social life ways at all times.

#### **10.1.3.1.4 Benefits from Government Social Services**

This part presents summary of results on the manner people's life ways had changed regarding social services provision by the government. Such results aimed at getting people's opinions as an indirect measure in order to review whether or not the government used social responsibility approach as an effective and pertinent pathway in preventing as well as controlling squatter settlements.

Respondents reported that inhabitants liked the areas as prominent places among government favours for people to reside in squatter settlements and others reported that their children were going to public schools constructed in their vicinities (Table 6.3; Figure 6.4). Also newly constructed primary schools and later on, ward secondary schools in the country were also constructed in squatter areas. Such government actions made inhabitants from squatter settlements happy for their children's easy access to schools within their proximities

In addition, participants reported that as long as they were residing in the same areas, they enjoyed formation as well as operation of savings and credit cooperative societies (SACCOS). It was further revealed in all wards that people enjoyed living in squatter settlement areas. In addition, people are able to access loans from their own community entities such as SACCOS and VICOBA that do not require collateral for qualifying to be advanced money. Such schemes help them to operate their small vending businesses. Furthermore, the government is providing social services like construction of feeder roads, provision of utilities like clean and potable water as well as electricity from the public electricity entity, TANESCO.

It has to be evoked that this study sought to determine the manner social responsibility approach was an effective pathway in preventing and controlling squatter settlements and bad human behaviours in Mwanza city. In so doing, formulated hypotheses in chapter one of this thesis were tested. Their test results are summarized in the subsequent paragraph.

Results from this thesis display some achievements in prevention and control of squatter settlements in the study area. However, there were some key players

supposed to take an active role in high level realisation of the desired achievements to that end. They were minimally involved or were involved in a hidden way or were not involved at all. For example, religious bodies were taking part as their moral duty in dealing with people's behaviours in squatter areas. The role of media was a bit invisible or masked and happened only with events due to bureaucrats or politicians' involvement in their discharge of their duties or if there occurred calamities in squatter settlements. An alleged demise of civil society organisation in the said task was registered. All parties were supposed to join the central government and local government authorities in amplifying the appreciated social service delivery in squatter settlements at various capacities. It means that the best realisation of required achievements can only be executed through social responsibility approach if such entities' efforts are coalesced with central government and local government authorities' inputs. Therefore, the researcher was convinced to accept the posited assumption that, "Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania"

#### **10.1.4 Problems and Challenges in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

Based on results from this study, this part presents summary on problems and challenges in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements under the following facets: government measures to curb unscrupulous house construction in unplanned (illegal) areas; and challenges in provision of social services to squatter settlements.

##### **10.1.4.1 Unscrupulous House Construction in Unplanned Areas**

This study sought to elicit reasons for government's failure to curb/prohibit house construction in unplanned/illegal areas. Results from the study gleaned out the following reasons: there was population explosion; and there were no specially designated as well as planned areas for human habitation. Results from this study further got remarks from some respondents who said that the government does not care at all about people with the lowest incomes. They argued that the government failed to deal as well as resolve poor people's habitation problems in unplanned areas at an early/infancy stage before squatter settlements exploded up to an uncontrollable level/stage. After all, it was disclosed that people settled in squatter areas because they did not have financial capability to acquire planned and/or surveyed pieces of land.

Furthermore, respondents recounted that if at all it happened that there were actions for survey of plots by local authorities for people to enjoy right of occupancy, they could not afford prescribed survey fee and if they tried to agree to such conditions, there were bureaucratic hitches. Thus, the whole idea of plot acquisition in planned or unplanned settlements was untenable by squatters. Still, they informed that the government was mixing politics and implementation together with the fact that

leaders were afraid from being blamed by citizens because such leaders did not defend them on matters directed by the government like house demolition to give way for development of infrastructure. They said that politicians defended sprawl of unplanned settlements, especially during election campaigns for local government leaders or general elections for president, councilors and members of parliament. Respondents communicated that politicians and bureaucrats always said that they should not disturb squatter settlements because they harboured potential election voters from such areas.

Submissions from this study do not deviate much from previous reports from other scholars' findings. For example, it was reported before that people settled in squatter areas because planned as well as surveyed areas for human occupation were difficult to acquire due to huge expenses, bureaucratic blockages together with corruption on plot allocation to ordinary citizens (see Komba, 2008). There was no support from local government authority leaders especially at gross roots level (Komba, 2008). In addition, surveys for plots for human habitation were delayed, but such measures were expensive thereby making it difficult for low income earners to afford for such services. Such case in point was raised before by Komba (2008) who reported that affordability and low incomes forced people to settle in unplanned or squatter settlements by accessing cheap plots. Such position was observed in Mwanza city squatters by Komba (2008). Others rented in cheap places in close proximity to areas they wanted to work for wage earning or undertake petty businesses as submitted by Limbumba (2010) at Hannanasifu and Keko Machungwa squatters in Dar es Salaam city. Besides, it was disclosed that local government authorities are powerless with no authority over matters concerning land allocation at all avenues. Moreover, respondents recalled that the government tried to evict people from unplanned settlements without proper procedures such that there was chaos because people had no alternative areas for resettlement. The exercise failed and they argued that the government should prepare proper procedures to that end.

It was revealed further that in controlling and preventing squatter settlements, Mwanza city officials launched participatory survey along planned but un-surveyed plots for residential areas. In such areas, people were required to pay for some survey nominal fee. However, it was found out that such implementation failed because people felt that survey charges under such scheme were very high and unaffordable. People never took part into such exercise of surveying and thus, authentication of such areas that included squatters failed.

As already discerned from results from this study, Mwanza city authority, together with the central government, is discouraging people from developing in squatters but the envisaged activities are not working. Mwanza city is planning to demolish some houses in order to create space for undertaking the following: pave and build street roads so that they will produce accessibility to such settlements; facilitate waste

collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building schools (primary as well as secondary schools); build health facilities; construct markets; and build police stations. However, all such planned activities have not been implemented.

#### **10.1.4.2 Challenges in Provision of Social Services to Squatter Settlements**

This part presents summary regarding challenges in provision of social services so as to gauge whether or not Social Responsibility Approach was applied by different stakeholders. As already presented (see, for example, Figure 1) in the Conceptual Framework in chapter one, stakeholders include the government (central government as well as local government authorities), individuals and entities like Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs) and Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs).

There were difficulties in getting title deeds to people's built up plots in unplanned areas and featured prominently in most study sites (Table 8.2; Figure 8.2). It implies that people need to get rights of occupancy for their built-up plots in unplanned settlements. It has to be recalled that the same problem was raised before concerning challenges of legally accessing people to rights of occupancy including squatters in Mwanza city (see Komba, 2008). Yet, the same problem was seen featuring among difficulties for squatters who reported that affordability and low incomes forced people to settle in unplanned or squatter settlements by accessing cheap plots (Komba, 2008). Other people resorted to rent houses because they cannot build houses and those places are cheap. For example, Limbumba (2010) disclosed about the said facts at Hannanasifu and Keko Machungwa squatters in Dar es Salaam city.

Longing for roads was disclosed by all respondents though with variation for priority over other wants based on terrain, especially for those who dwell in non-hilly areas like some parts in Nyakabungo and Kirumba-Kabuhoro who wanted roads construction (see Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). The implication from such variation of want for roads can be due to nature of landscape in Mwanza squatter areas whereby many areas are steep slopes (or highly hilly) such that it is difficult for road construction (see Figure 6.4). Therefore, those who demanded for roads were not from high up rocky areas and thus, it could be easier to create some paved roads in low lying areas than high up sloppy areas full of granite rock boulders/granite bedrocks.

Improvement of markets was suggested by respondents with a high need for such measure recounted by respondents from Igogo ward (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). Such need was also echoed by respondents from Isamilo-Nyakabungo and Kirumba-Kabuhoro wards, while it was minimally reported by respondents from MECCO ward (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). Mwanza City Council in consultation with business persons, identified as well as set to establish markets of informal sector businesses [(see Table 9.1) City Director, 2008: 6]. Thus, Mwanza City Council is targeting to

help people of all walks of life from various places including squatter settlements to access venues for their business operations because they cannot afford to acquire ordinary as individuals for plots from the City Council's land office due to small nature of their businesses (City Director, 2008: 60).

Respondents in focus group discussions provided some suggestions for the government in provision of social services in their areas that included the following: people needed construction of police stations in their areas; construction of vocational training institutes in their areas; and set aside places for play grounds for children's sports as well as their development. They also suggested construction of health facilities, improvement of roads, strengthen security for days and nights in order to deal with theft/robbery and construction of permanent markets in their areas. All were reported at every ward though with differences in terms of emphasis, depending on priority according to location.

Similar patterns for squatter settlements were evident in Nigeria, for example, it was found out that squatter areas had no police stations/posts (Onyekachi, 2014: 423). Thus, in order to deal with such problems in Nigeria, people organized their own security groups and planned one of the other social infrastructures (Onyekachi, 2014: 423).

Provision of social services by the government is a mandatory obligation. But, in practice, it is very difficult to execute to expected quality and standards, especially in unplanned settlements like squatters in urban areas that also include such areas in Mwanza city. For example, Komba (2008) in his study of Mwanza city revealed that the impact of urbanization was due to issues of failure of urban government authorities to control urban growth thereby resulting to unplanned settlements and lack of basic infrastructures in most areas. Komba (2008) reported several challenges that are very big for local government authorities to provide land for development of settlements for the urban poor. Komba (2008) argued that challenges were coupled up with long procedures including standards one has to adhere to when he/she desired to have a house (settlement) in urban areas. Such situation meant that majority of people in urban areas who are poor (see also Magigi and Majani, 2005; Komba, 2008) cannot afford pieces of land for house construction. Komba (2008) revealed further that there were problems in addressing settlement development in Tanzania. The major problem identified by Komba (2008) was lack of knowledge of urban poor on procedures and standards one has to follow on acquiring land together with other legal building documents when constructing houses in urban areas. Thus, such pattern made urban poor victims of demolishes and became poor of the poorer in cities like Mwanza (see also Komba, 2008).

In identifying problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in preventing and controlling increase in squatter settlements in Mwanza city, the

researcher formulated the following testable prediction: “There are problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City” The researcher’s sentiment was that data from this study will illustrate that through appropriate key players’ partaking that included the central government, local government authorities as well as the private sector, prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city had limited if not very few manageable challenges and problems.

Respondents in studied squatter settlements revealed the said bodies’ discharge level exposed some limited or negligible accomplishments. Identified challenges and problems, to a certain extent, expose partial government’s failure in discharge of its duties. Numerous challenges and problems were identified that ranged from non-provision of right of occupancy for habitation areas to social services provision like roads construction, provision of business areas, particularly markets, construction of police stations to curb deviant behaviours, lack of political will to deal with their problems and turn away from demolishing or evicting squatters from such areas. On the other hand, respondents provided suggestions to make people stay in such areas whereby the government was seen as failing to deal with them. Accordingly, all bodies showed double standards whereby, on one hand, the government wanted to control and prevent squatter settlements but, on the other hand, the government was sympathetic on leaving them settle in such areas through provision of social services including improvement of infrastructure. As a result, it appeared that there is the urge to prevent as well as control spread out of squatter settlements but there is sympathy to that end whereby the government is like leaving people settle in the said areas as provided in results from this study. All the same, results demonstrate key players’ efforts in dealing with squatters at varied capacities but they need to up-grade their degree and keenness in dealing with identified challenges and problems for good habitation in urban areas like squatter settlements. Such craving has to be appropriately executed through intensified application of social responsibility approach whereby all parties would be able to fulfill their obligation for the best anticipated results in dealing with squatter settlements. Therefore, results led the researcher to accept the assumption that that, “There are problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City”

#### **10.1.5 Current Initiatives in Dealing with Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City**

In continued undertakings to determine prevention and control of squatter settlements, the researcher examined efforts by the central government together with local government authorities to that end. Results led to provide summary furnished in this sub-section. It was uncovered that the central government together with local government authorities had plans to improve existing infrastructure in squatter areas and prohibit construction of new houses in squatter areas (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1).

Conversely, participants reported that government officials viewed to let squatters stay in such areas as long as they pay taxes (Table 8.1; Figure 8.1).

Results from Focus Group discussions concerning government future plans in dealing with squatter settlements were not different from those obtained from the other data collection methods. For example, all respondents (non-local government leaders) to the said aspect pointed out that development of infrastructure was the leading government priority not only to squatter settlements but also to other parts of the country in both urban and rural areas. The aspiration implies squatter settlements' upgrade whereby such undertakings were experienced in Kurasini, Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania (Ndezi, 2009).

Presented results from this study imply squatter settlements upgrading also pursued in other countries around the world. For example, in Latin America, slum upgrading involves interventions by providing water, sanitation, drainage, roads, land plots, public parks, health clinic and income generating activities (Alsayyad, 1993). In Thailand, slum upgrading process takes a highly social responsibility approach compared to many other cases. For example, Baan Makong slum upgrading program involved savings groups, Civil Society Organizations (CSOs), local government agencies, development organizations, universities, local NGOs and architects (Manoj, 2003; Sanisock, 2009). Besides, such programme supported partners so as to come across solutions for squatter settlements (Hari, 1991; Manoj, 2003; Sanisock, 2009).

Sites and services scheme is another move conceived by the World Bank meant to help developing countries deal with slum problems (Komba, 2008). The scheme was instituted through the government in Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania by carrying out site upgrades, provide road infrastructure, undertake plot demarcation, provide clean as well as potable, safe water and construct storm water drainage system (*ibid.*).

Demolition of some houses was seen to be a government action due to the following reasons: pave as well as construct street roads so that they will generate accessibility to such settlements; improve waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary and secondary schools; construct health facilities; build markets; and construct police stations. Results exposing government controls through demolition are termed slum clearance by authorities. For example, in Mumbai, India, Arputham and Patel (2010) ascertained that slum clearance policies are top-down, expensive and do not involve squatters. However, such approaches encountered protests from squatters. Arputham and Patel (2010) showed that in Mumbai, squatters refused to have their sheds demolished. Protests were staged whereby squatters, activists and community organizations sought for dialogue with authorities on several issues (*ibid.*). All were against imposition from top, government authorities and instead, they wanted to be involved in decision-making

regarding their welfare (*ibid.*). However, they aired out polarised opinions whereby one group wanted to stay on sites they occupied by then and upgrade their homes, while the other group demanded for compensation of incomes as well as livelihoods (*ibid.*).

It was further uncovered in this study that the government and local government authorities had to keep such settlements due to some political ends. One leader argued that people in squatter settlements, like others elsewhere in the country, were important voters in elections and thus, they should not be evicted from their habitation (squatter) areas. In another extension, some respondents recalled that public utility companies for electricity supply and provision of clean potable water were at the forefront in provision of services at all places in urban areas including squatter settlements. Thus, such provision of social services was understood to be recognition and thoughtfulness for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in officially planned as well as registered settlements.

Almost in a comparable situation in Latin America, political mobilisation played a major part in keeping up squatter settlements. For instance, Alsayyad's (1993) study in Latin America and the Middle East reported that claims to the state and being politicized were part of 'squattening culture' in Latin America and Uruguay. In the contrary, in the Middle East, Alsayyad (1993) found a different picture whereby squatters tended to opt to strategies outside politics, for example, depending on a particular context, there was complete political invisibility, while ethnic networks or religious law were key features to legalize land ownership.

Further politicization for this study was portrayed at minimal level of threats from the government against people's decisions of settling permanently in squatter areas. After all, fear from eviction was only mentioned at one of the five studied wards, while the rest of the wards never felt that there was such government measure. On the other hand, Mwanza city officials disclosed that they launched participatory survey along planned but un-surveyed plots for residential areas. In such move, people were required to pay for some survey small fee. However, such action failed because people felt that survey charges under such scheme were very high and unaffordable.

The city authority and central government is discouraging people from developing in squatters but the measures are not working. Moreover, they are planning to demolish some houses in order to create space for paving as well as building street roads so that they will create accessibility to the said settlements. Also envisioned cleared spaces are considered necessary so as to facilitate waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary as well as secondary schools; build health facilities; construct markets; and build police stations.

Furthermore, to appropriately interpret the data, the researcher premised through the assumption that, “Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city,”

In regard to findings sought to advance data interpretation, hypotheses test results led to the following contentions: first, the central government together with the local government authorities had plans to improve existing infrastructure in squatter areas. Moreover, it was argued that such efforts were among main government priorities not only to squatter settlements but also to other parts of the country, both urban and rural areas. Second, demolition of some houses was seen to be a government decision that aimed at paving and constructing street roads so that they will facilitate accessibility to such settlements; facilitate waste collection including their disposal; provide facelift to social services by building primary as well as secondary schools; build health facilities; build markets; and construct police stations.

Third, government authorities and political echelons vied to keep squatter settlements undisturbed due to some political ends, while others thought of discouraging sprawl of such settlements. Moreover, it was narrated that utility companies were at the forefront in provision of services at all places in urban areas including squatter settlements. Besides, it was argued that such undertakings by utility entities were interpreted to be in recognition as well as consideration for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in officially planned as well as registered settlements. Thus, it was an authentication of leaving squatter settlements untouched. Fourth, there was minimal level of threats from the government against people’s decisions of settling permanently in squatter areas. For example, fear from eviction was only mentioned at one of the studied wards, while the rest of respondents from other wards never felt that there was such government decision. In further validation of such demise of threat from government, respondents did not remark on aspects regarding prohibition of building new houses in squatter settlements.

Fifth, Mwanza city officials reported that they launched participatory survey along un-surveyed plots for residential areas. People were required to pay for some nominal survey fee. Quite the reverse, implementation failed because people felt that survey charges under the scheme were very high and unaffordable. Sixth, Mwanza city authority including municipal councils and central government is discouraging people from developing in squatter areas but the measures are not working. At another dimension, local government authority officials disclosed that they were planning to demolish some houses so as to generate space for infrastructure development and social services provision.

Thus, critical evaluation of presented results illustrates that, on one hand, the central government together with local government authorities is in a position to prevent as

well as control squatter settlements at various dimensions. On the other hand, the said authorities are providing social services to the studied squatter areas. However, in conjunction with other submitted results from this thesis, there are initiatives that demonstrate the central government and local authorities, among key players, somehow apply social responsibility approach in discharge of their duties aimed at some marked level of prevention and control of squatter settlements in the studied areas. Therefore, the researcher accepted the premised assumption that, “Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city”

### **10.1.6 Theoretical Stances in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

This part presents summary in regard to theoretical stances deemed pertinent on helping to deal with squatter settlements in Mwanza city. In this study, four Neo-Marxist classic theories from Sociology were considered fit whereby their application was thought to be of great assistance in analysis concerning squatter settlements in Mwanza city. They include the following: Rural-Urban Continuum, Concentric Zone Theory, Anomie Theory and Social Responsibility Theory.

#### **10.1.6.1 Rural-Urban Continuum**

This study examined rural-urban migration to Mwanza city by further applying Rural-Urban Continuum Theory to assess aspects such as habits, behaviour and attitudes of migrants. In regard to Urban-Rural Continuum, results from this study showed the manner people settled in squatter areas in Mwanza city brought about environmental and social problems. For example, many people are settled in unplanned as well as hazardous areas such that there are cases of rock falls/land falls caused by severe weathering notably, heavy rain downpours that lead to people’s death and property destruction/loss.

Focus group discussions disclosed that during rain seasons, frequent malpractices include people discharge their faecal/wastes down to habitats that do not have sewage system and storm water drains. Respondents reported that all wastes are washed down slopes to Lake Victoria and as a result, there is land pollution as well as Lake Victoria pollution. Such pollution paves the way for water borne disease epidemics, for example, cholera, typhoid, helminthes infections plus skin diseases. The researcher observed overcrowding in squatter settlements (see Figure 6.4). Such pattern adds to socio-environmental stress including identified environmental pollution.

It was revealed that people migrated from rural areas to Mwanza city due to pull factors that included seeking for good social services like health services that are better than rural areas. They also migrated with malpractices to proper health and sanitation practices. Several diseases were reported that included malaria, Acute Respiratory Infections (A.R.I) and Urinary Tract Infections (U.T.I) as the most

common diseases, which affect majority of people in Mwanza City (*ibid.*). Such diseases could most likely be controlled if proper sanitation environment as well as waste management were undertaken (*ibid.*). The pandemic, Human Immunodeficiency Virus (HIV) infection among family members was reported and there were cases of *Tuberculosis mycobacterium* (*ibid.*).

In terms of schooling, recapitulating McGee's (1971) theoretical supposition, there is Rural-Urban continuum whereby provision of education services is carried out in rural and urban areas in the country as government initiatives. However, social services delivery like education has variation. As disclosed by respondents, they migrated to Mwanza city because social services that included provisioned education services were better than in rural areas.

Further problems included environmental degradation due to use of plant materials (fire wood and charcoal) as energy sources for cooking and lighting in urban areas including squatter settlements in the country. Such environmental degradation is contributed by both people in rural areas for their action of tree felling and passing over products as well as habits to urban dwellers that include squatter settlers like those in Mwanza city. Thus, such behaviour patterns like charcoal use and firewood for cooking as energy sources depict a certain level of continuity, from rural to urban areas. It is a hazardous rural-urban continuum that paves the way for environmental degradation.

#### **10.1.6.2 Concentric Zone Theory**

This part presents summary on interpretation of Mwanza city lay out in regard to Concentric Zone Theory as construed by the researcher. Field observations led the researcher postulate Mwanza city as having five concentric zones following Concentric Zone Theory postulated by Burgess as modified by Panu [2010: 9 (please see Figure 9.1)]. Accordingly, the five concentric zones for Mwanza city are submitted as follows: first, the Central Business District (CBD) for Mwanza city is shown in circle 1 represented by Kenyatta road, Nyerere road, Pamba road and areas along Deluxe street as well as Uhuru road; second, zone of transition between residential and commercial use includes a bit away from Nyerere road, Pamba road as well as Uhuru road areas presented under circle 2; third, a low-class residential area presented in circle 3 includes such areas as Igogo, Mkolani, Mbugani, Nyakato (including MECCO), Buswelu Igoma, Mabatini, Kirumba as well as Nyamanoro; fourth, a middle and high-class residential area presented as circle 4 that includes such areas as Capri Point, Isamilo, Kiseke as well as Butimba; and fifth, a commuter zone, which includes suburbs as well as remote communities in Mwanza city that encompasses areas like Sangabuye, Bugogwa as well as several areas within Ilemela district presented under circle 5 (please see map with such concentric zones 1 to 5 in Figure 9.1).

In casting the net wide, designated concentric zones for Mwanza city are defined by the researcher to be composed of the following population segments: first, the Central Business District (CBD) for Mwanza city shown in circle 1 (zone 1) was formerly a small place occupied by many people as residents working in the area that had offices with a few shops and had no factories (Figure 9.1). As the settlement grew from a small town to a municipality and later on a city, the following conditions by local government authority ensued: much more intensified business premises as well as offices; currently, fewer residents stay in the area than it was the case when it was a small town; and small houses that were due for replacement were prone to demolition with orders to construct sky rises for office/business accommodation.

The second demarcated circle is the zone of transition between residential and commercial use, while the third zone is a low-class residential area presented in circle 3 (Figure 9.1). The next zone includes a middle and high-class residential area presented as circle 4 and finally, there is zone 5, which includes suburbs as well as remote communities in Mwanza city (please see map with such concentric zones 1 to 5 in Figure 9.1). However, the outer zone or ring has a mix of residential settlements with industrial activities. Formerly, such areas were with farms and a few residents who were farmers.

#### **10.1.6.3 Anomie Theory**

Featherstone and Deflem's (2003) position pertaining to Merton's social-structures-and-anomie paradigm helped for analysis of deviant behaviour patterns by people living in squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Thus, the researcher held a proposition that there is a disjunction between cultural goals and institutionalized means for understanding crime as well as deviance in squatter areas of Mwanza city (see Featherstone and Deflem, 2003). Further examination of such deviant behaviours involved assessment of initiatives whether or not various stakeholders were involved in dealing with deviant behaviours based on obligations as captured through the Conceptual Framework (Figure 1.1) presented in chapter one of this thesis.

The following deviant behaviours practiced by people in Mwanza city, particularly squatter areas, were exposed: robbery, drug addiction, alcoholism, prostitution and street children. They were disclosed through focus group discussions in all studied wards. Also, they recounted that children are discriminated as well as abused in streets and their homes with parents plus caretakers and/or caregivers or guardians. On the other hand, it was revealed that the government is doing its best in instituting law and order to all citizens that include squatters. It is using its law enforcing organs to control deviant behaviours that also include crimes plus homicide. Other individuals and entities are participating minimally in curbing identified deviant behaviours in the study areas. However, to some extent, Railway Children Africa in

collaboration with local partners are striving to control street children who happen to be available and mostly originating from squatter settlements.

On the other hand, some efforts were witnessed in the first quarter of this year (2017) after Dar es Salaam regional authorities started to crack down drug trafficking and drug use. Many people were netted and the fight did not preclude people, regardless of their affiliation like political status, fame in businesses or artistic chores and the like. In Mwanza city, culprits were netted trying to remove a haul of drugs from a toilet in Igogo area and others were apprehended at Kirumba area. The presented cases show that there have been habits of drug sales and drug abuse in squatter areas but they were taken into custody by law enforcers.

#### **10.1.6.4 Social Responsibility Approach**

As presented in chapter two, Social Responsibility Approach was believed important by the researcher as a pertinent pathway by stakeholders in preventing and controlling squatter settlements as well as curbing bad human behaviours.

This study examined whether or not Social Responsibility Approach was applied in control and prevention of squatters in Mwanza city that involved all mentioned stakeholders. Such position was also recapitulated based on the Conceptual Framework presented in chapter one of this thesis (Figure 1). For an appropriate examination of Social Responsibility Approach, the researcher analysed information from tested assumptions. Subsequent paragraphs provide summary of assumption test result.

Several challenges and problems in squatter settlements of Mwanza city were identified in chapter seven. They ranged from non-provision of right of occupancy for habitation areas to social services provision. Government and political leaders showed double standards whereby they wanted to control and prevent squatter settlements. On the other hand, the same government was sympathetic by leaving them settle in such areas through provision of social services including improvement of infrastructure. In due regard, it appeared that there is the urge to prevent and control spread out of squatter settlements but there is empathy whereby the government lets people settle in the said areas as provided in results from this study.

In spite of everything, results exhibit government efforts in dealing with squatters at varied capacities but they need to up-grade their scale and dedication in dealing with identified challenges and problems for good habitation in urban areas like squatter settlements. Such desire would have been properly executed through intensified application of social responsibility approach whereby all other parties (civil society and individuals) would have been able to fulfill their responsibility for the best expected results in dealing with squatter settlements. Therefore, results led the researcher to accept the assumption that, "There are problems and challenges in

using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City”

Further evaluation of presented results in chapter eight illustrates that the central government and local government authorities are in a position to prevent as well as control squatter settlements at diverse scopes. The said authorities are providing social services to the studied squatter areas. In addition, there are initiatives that show the central government and local authorities, among key players, somehow apply social responsibility in discharge of their duties that are aimed at some noticeable level of prevention and control of squatter settlements in the studied areas. Therefore, the researcher accepted the prediction that, “Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city”

Chapter six of this thesis reports that the central government and local government authorities (Mwanza City Council, Ilemela Municipal Council and Nyamagana Municipal Council) were at the lead in social services delivery in squatter settlements of Mwanza city. Nevertheless, the central government and local government authorities together with other key players were supposed to take an active role in an elevated realisation of registered achievements in dealing with squatter settlements of Mwanza city. Results from this study uncovered that other parties were minimally involved or they were not involved at all in dealing with squatter settlements. For example, religious bodies were taking part as their moral obligation in dealing with people’s deviant behaviours in squatter areas. The role of media was a bit invisible and they acted only when events happened while bureaucrats or politicians were on their duties or if there were calamities in squatter settlements such as floods. Also, an evident demise of civil society organisations in the said task was registered. All were supposed to join forces with the central government and local government authorities in strengthening the appreciated social service delivery in squatter settlements at various capacities.

In due regard, the best realisation of sought-after achievements can only be performed through Social Responsibility Approach if such key players’ efforts are combined with central government and local government authorities’ inputs. Therefore, the researcher accepted the posited assumption that, “Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania.” Thus, it was in quest for demonstrating validity of employing social responsibility approach by the identified stakeholders including the government (central and local government authorities) with public entities.

At any rate, results exhibit key players’ efforts in dealing with squatters at varied capacities but they need to improve their degree and enthusiasm in dealing with

identified challenges and problems for good habitation in urban areas like squatter settlements. Such aspiration was minimally executed through application of social responsibility approach whereby they played their obligation.

Therefore, further crucial evaluation of presented results portrays that the central government and local government authorities are in a position to prevent as well as control squatter settlements at various dimensions. In any case, government authorities are providing social services to the studied squatter areas. Thus, together with other submitted results from this thesis, there are initiatives that show that the central government and local government authorities, among key players, apply, in some way, social responsibility in their duties that depict some noticeable level of prevention and control of squatter settlements in the studied areas. Therefore, it is safe and sound to argue that Social Responsibility Approach is the most pertinent of all pathways that must be applied in prevention and control of squatter settlements. Initiatives so far being expected will bear much achievements if all identified stakeholders will play a major role in joining hands with the government and must involve media, whose roles to society include dissemination of information, advocacy, education, awareness raising, entertainment and many others.

#### **10.1.6.5 Assumption test**

The researcher carried out the following assumption test postulated in chapter one: “Social responsibility is useful for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania.”

Assumption test revealed that there were initiatives in control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. It has to be recalled that such settlements were formed as a result of push and pull factors but some initiatives to discourage their formation as well as sprawl were registered. Initiatives include the following: the government has directives that require people already residing in squatters not to start with new house constructions in unplanned areas. Those already settled in such areas had their houses registered so that in the event the government got plans to develop the areas by requiring demolishing some houses or structures to give way for the space(s), the registered houses/structures are right to be compensated. That is not the case for those who happened to build new houses after the said directives banning such developments.

Another initiative to discourage proliferation of squatters involves the government through its Ministry of Lands and Development of Human Settlements that has directed all local government authorities (municipal councils and city councils) to contract private survey entities who shall undertake cadastral surveys in squatter areas as a move to authenticate them with pertinent planned social amenities. Moreover, the government has created good habitation areas in peri-urban locations by carrying out land surveys thereby creating all necessary infrastructures, for

example, paved roads; provision of play grounds; creation of spaces for development of health facilities as well as schools; and creation of spaces for other social facilities. Other aspects that involve control and prevention of squatters include curbing of deviant behaviours that mushroom, especially in overcrowded areas like squatter settlements. The initiatives include fight against sale of drugs and drug abuse that are dealt with in all areas including squatters. The endeavours also include the fight against prostitution manifest in urban areas too. In addition, deviant behaviours, registered in squatter areas, include formation of street children who get lost but are helped in rehabilitation by all stakeholders. A case to that end was through an international Africa Children Railway, in collaboration with local NGOs in Mwanza city, are involved in street children as well as teenage rehabilitation.

Presented initiatives executed through the government and other stakeholders lead to discern that, to a great extent, Social Responsibility Approach is useful for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector (other stakeholders) in Tanzania. Results from the study justify that existing legal framework together with local government authorities (Mwanza City Council and the two Municipal Councils, Ilemela and Nyamagana) have instituted strategies for the good cause.

Thus, it is safe to accept the postulated assumption that , ‘Social responsibility is useful for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania,’. In due regard, It is apparent that strides being carried out so far point to achievement of the desired goal of safer habitation in urban areas for control and eventual prevention of squatters.

## **10.2 Conclusion and Implications from Results**

Conclusion and implications from results from this study are furnished in this section. The section provides conclusion under the following aspects: respondents’ social characteristics; features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city; problems and challenges in prevention as well as control of squatter settlements; current initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza city; the manner social responsibility approach can be applied to prevent as well as control settlements; and aspects pertaining to pertinent theoretical stances in helping to deal with prevention as well as control of squatter settlements.

### **10.2.1 Respondents’ Social Characteristics**

This sub-section presents conclusion and implications from results from this study concerning respondents’ social characteristics. The sub-section is composed of the following parts: respondents’ distribution by gender as well as age group; education levels; religious affiliation; ethnic group, marital status; house ownership/house rent; and employment status.

### **10.2.1.1 Respondents' Distribution by Gender**

In terms of respondents' distribution by gender, results from this study revealed that more females than males migrated to studied squatter areas in Mwanza city. Such counts of more female than male migrants were due to the following push factors: women joining their spouses, women escaping from discrimination and women getting employment in households. On the other hand, it was revealed from this study that the few males migrated to Mwanza city squatter areas due to the following pull factors: wage labour, business undertakings and other means for their survival.

However, there are variations in regard to gender and age pattern for squatter across the world, for example, in Latin America and the Caribbean, women outnumbered men in the urban population of every country and it was similar to the Philippines. At other places, for example, in South Asia and Southern Africa (Botswana), men were recorded to outnumber women by a substantial margin. In Botswana, men migrated to mines in South Africa. Elsewhere in Sub-Saharan Africa, countries had rather small populations and/or were major exporters of male labour, for example, Benin, Burundi, Central African Republic, Chad, Congo, Gabon, Guinea, Malawi, Mozambique, Rwanda, and Togo. Thus, it implies that such countries had migrant labour with male outnumbered female populations in urban areas due to employment.

Several studies indicated that rural-urban migration has gender-differentiated causes and consequences. For example, it was argued that female migration was increasing despite restrictions of women's dependent position within the family and society because households were in big need for income and in some places, many employment opportunities were available to women. Moreover, in some towns and cities in Latin America and the Caribbean including parts of South East Asia, rural outmigration was female selective whereby urban sex ratios usually showed more women than men and levels of female headed households were higher in urban than rural areas. Besides, scale and nature of migration into urban areas in Latin America were highly influenced by decisions in rural households about the kind of person to migrate and reasons due to constraints on women's work outside the home by households as well as demand for female labour in urban areas.

Several other reasons have been advanced for rural-urban migration patterns that include the following: urbanization can provide girls and women employment as well as education opportunities unavailable in rural areas. Also, women were reported not to have livelihood means in villages like inheritance rights to land enjoyed by men. For example, in Mali, Nigeria, Vietnam and Tanzania, many young women migrated from rural to urban areas so as to improve their economic alternatives including their socio-cultural rights such that they lived inexpensively and negotiated for their health.

### **10.2.1.2 Respondents' Distribution by Age**

Pertaining to respondents' distribution by age, it was revealed that more youth aged between 18 and 35 years migrated as well as settled in squatter areas than those 55 and above years old. Similarly, it was revealed that youth aged between 18 and 29 years old migrated in large number in search for social services, particularly education and employment in Nigerian towns as well as cities. Another example was shown that 15.5 percent of young adults aged between 15 and 30 years old migrated from rural to nearby towns (Adama, Iteya and Dera) in Ethiopia. The implication is that in many places around the world, more youth than older age individuals migrate from rural to urban areas and settled there, especially in unplanned or squatter settlements.

### **10.2.1.3 Respondents' Education Levels**

This study strived to analyze respondents' education levels so as to determine that pattern in regard to the most numerous and the least numerous population segments involved in squatting in urban areas. It was revealed that 12 percent of all respondents were illiterates with males represented by 5 percent and females accounted for 7 percent, while those who never completed primary education cycle accounted for 3 percent females and 2 percent males. In addition, more females than males completed primary education level, while very few males and females completed secondary education. With regard to tertiary education (college education), only 2 percent males and 1 percent females had college education in the studied squatter areas.

In due regard, it implies that there was a higher illiteracy level among female respondents than male respondents in the studied squatter area. Results from this study do not deviate from those exposed from other parts from the world. For example, such results are similar to those obtained from a study of migrants to squatter settlements in Kore, Addis Ababa, Ethiopia whereby it was revealed that there was relatively higher illiteracy level among women than men. Furthermore, such low education level of the urban poor was identified in another study in Puerto Rico and Mexico.

### **10.2.1.4 Respondents' Religious Affiliations**

This study examined respondents' religious affiliation so as to determine further demographic characteristics of squatter settlers in Mwanza city. However, results from this study displayed religious denominations at a general pattern rather than segregated religious sects.

It was revealed from this study that only one percent males believed/practiced African traditional religion. Respondents in the study area constituted more Christian believers than Moslems. However, it has to be noted that such status does not necessarily imply that squatter areas in Mwanza city were constituted by more

Christian believers than Moslem believers. It was a chance for having such respondents but did not represent a count like a population census.

#### **10.2.1.5 Distribution of Respondents by their Ethnic Origins**

This study identified several ethnic groups in Mwanza city mostly from neighbouring regions like Mara, Tabora, Kagera and Kigoma. As long as ethnic groups have known places of origin, such variable was useful for determining squatters' places of domicile. Several reasons were provided for such migration in Mwanza city. The reasons are presented in the appropriate section.

Pertaining to distribution based on ethnic affiliation in studied squatter areas, results from this study revealed that Wasukuma outnumbered those who have settled in squatter areas in Mwanza city. Wasukuma ethnic group are among dominant ethnic groups residing in Mwanza, they are the main inhabitants of Mwanza region and they constitute the largest ethnic group in the country.

Regardless of mixed ethnic groups identified in the study area, all studied squatter areas are demarcated with more numerous people of particular ethnic groups. For example, Isamilo-Nyakabungo and Mabatini wards are heavily populated by ethnic groups from Mara region like Wakurya, Wazanaki, Wanata and so forth. Such pattern happened because the first settlers from Mara region attracted them to live in the said squatters. Likewise, Igogo ward is dominated by people from Tabora region (Wanyamwezi) and Kigoma region (Waha and Wabembe). Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward is dominated by people from Kagera region (Wahaya) followed by Wakerewe and Wakara from Ukerewe district in Mwanza region.

It has to be noted that the said demarcated areas with dominant ethnic groups do not live in seclusion from other ethnic groups. Most people in the whole country do not observe divisions based on ethnicity because even before independence, to date, forbearers headed by the first president, Mwalimu Julius Kambarage Nyerere, observed mix of ethnic groups plus mixed religions that paved the way for independence and real unity. People in the country enjoy mixture of ethnic groups in rural as well as urban areas. It is unlike other countries and/or squatter areas like those reported in Kibera, Nairobi city, Kenya whereby demarcation based on ethnicity is clear cut.

#### **10.2.1.6 Respondents' Distribution by Marital Status**

Respondents' marital status in Mwanza city squatter areas was examined because it is an important demographic characteristic for understanding patterns of squatters to that regard. It was disclosed that over half of respondents were married, while there were few widows and widowers. Also, it was further disclosed from the study that there were few unmarried men and women, respectively.

The identified marital statuses imply that push-pull factors contributed to such varied population segments. For example, some people migrated to urban area for being married, while others who were single migrated to urban areas for wage employment and others moved into Mwanza squatters so as to carry out petty businesses like sale of second hand clothes, food vending and the like.

#### **10.2.1.7 Respondents' Distribution by House Ownership**

This study obtained information pertaining to house ownership or house rent by people living in squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Such information was important for many aspects including knowing people living in squatters in terms of affordability/capability to own or rent rooms/houses.

It was disclosed that close to a quarter of respondents, both men and women, stayed in houses they owned. Also, it was indicated from the study that almost a quarter of men and a bit over one-third of women stayed in rented houses. MECCO ward had more female owned houses than the rest of the wards followed by men from Igogo ward. Then, more females rented houses from Kirumba ward than the rest of the wards followed by females living in MECCO ward.

At another dimension, many people were found living together in rooms that included sharing a single room, especially youngsters and others who were living as dependants. Such measures were meant to carry out cost-sharing as a way to settle in urban areas with less financial problems. In other cases, people were found renting with house owner-occupiers, while others were solely renting without house owner-occupiers. Therefore, it implies that many people moved from squatter areas because they were constrained by incomes that forced them to look for houses with low rents and living costs that appeared to be ideal options for them to settle there.

Similar situations were uncovered before by other authors in other parts of the country. For example, it was revealed in another study that at Hannanasifu and Keko Machungwa squatter settlements in Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania demand for rental accommodation was high such that it paved way for high population densities and encroachment of housing development in a nearby river valley. It was further disclosed that rooms were booked in advance even at the time a house was under construction. On the other hand, house owners added rooms for rent wherever there was space, a pattern that increased further population density in such squatter settlements.

#### **10.2.1.8 Employment Status**

Job seeking was one of pull factors encouraging people to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas. It is a similar factor and trend found elsewhere around the world. Several examples have been furnished from several places like in Far East, Asia and Africa (Ethiopia and so forth).

Regarding employment in the studied squatter areas, it was revealed that some respondents were employed in the public sector as teachers at both primary (elementary) and secondary schools; health workers (dispensaries, health centres, hospitals that are private as well as public); and others were professional workers together with non-skilled workers at Ilemela as well as Nyamagana Municipal Councils. Others were employed in private sector, for example, fish processing plants, Mwanza Textile Mills, Nyanza Bottling Company, commuter buses in the city, taxi operations, motorcycle operations, tricycle operations, women's hair salons, men's hair salons and so on. Other respondents reported that they were involved in activities like fish sales, sale of used clothes as well as shoes, sale of fruits and vegetables, part-time maids (house girls), waste collectors, operators of small shops and food vending.

Magigi and Majani (2005: 4) revealed that major economic and income generation activities carried out in the studied squatter settlements included gardening; business undertakings; garages; hotels/restaurants; animal keeping/poultry keeping, off-farm undertakings (carpentry as well as sale of timber). Similar situations in squatter settlements like those studied in Mwanza city can be discerned around the world. For example, in Ethiopia, Bahir (2010: 227) reported daily labour earnings together with informal activities in squatters for their livelihoods for majority of sampled households in Kore squatter settlements of Addis Ababa city in Ethiopia.

It implies that people are pulled to live in squatter settlements and they get involved in many activities at diverse capacities. Some are employed as professionals in public and private sectors, while others are in the informal sector carrying out various activities, skilled and unskilled including small businesses.

### **10.2.2 Features and Causes of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City**

Features and causes of squatter settlements in the study area were important so as to see the pattern and compare with other parts in the country and around the world so as to continue in understanding measures or initiatives in dealing with squatter settlements in consideration with their features and causes to that end. Thus, this subsection provides conclusion on features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city.

#### **10.2.2.1 Features of squatter settlements of Mwanza city**

In regard to understanding features of squatter settlements of Mwanza city, this part provides conclusion on definition of the term squatter; trend analysis of rural to urban migration (migration periods); households' source of energy for cooking; households' source of energy for lighting; and households' access to safe as well as clean water.

Responses in regard to the term squatter meant the following: income poverty; bad physical condition of housing; social deprivation; and landless people. The presented understanding of the term was further extracted and led to connote the following characteristics: use of poor, environmental unfriendly sources of energy for cooking as well as lighting, lack of ownership of plots for housing with no right of occupancy, house/room renting with sharing of utilities, lack of sources of clean, potable as well as safe water, lack of proper waste management and lack of public social services like health as well as infrastructure like paved roads.

Thus, results from this study are similar to those submitted in UN-HABITAT (2003: 11) Global Report on Human Settlements that endow with the following characteristics of squatter settlements: lack of basic services; poor quality housing or illegal as well as inadequate building structures; and overcrowding together with high density. Other characteristics include unhealthy living conditions as well as hazardous locations; insecure tenure, irregular or informal settlements; poverty as well as social exclusion; and minimum settlement size.

In order to get a clear understanding on the manner Mwanza city has been getting people from rural areas, the study carried out a trend analysis for forty years from 1970 to 2010. On the whole, the period between 1986 and 1990 had the most numerous of all people in squatter settlements followed by 1996 and 2000. Igogo ward received more inhabitants than all wards followed by people at Isamilo-Nyakabungo ward. The earliest of all places to be settled was revealed to be Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward whereby people started moving in from 1970 to 1975. Mabatini ward was next with more people than the rest of the wards. Then period between 2006 and 2010 had the least people who moved in the studied wards.

The reported migration trends were due to pull factors that attracted people to initially settle at Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward areas due to close proximity to Kirumba international fish market whereby people are involved in fish business and related businesses within the vicinities. Second, people settled at Mabatini as well as Igogo ward areas due to proximity to Mwanza city centre as well as health facilities (Bugando zonal referral hospital and Sekou Toure regional hospital). In such areas, it is easy for people to access places like health services and business ventures as well as wage employment. Third, it was easy to access houses and/or room(s) for rent at affordable low rates.

Presented results from this study show the manner typical urban growth processes have been and still they are occurring around the world through time. As presented in history of urban growth in chapter one of this thesis, it was reported that as long as cities grew, people gathered to towns in search for work, wage employment as well as access social services like education including health services (see Limbumba, 2012; UN-HABITAT, 1996: 87). It is a situation similarly portrayed with

growth/spread of Mwanza settlements - squatters of Mwanza city being a case in point provided from results from this study.

The study uncovered the following households' sources of energy for cooking in the studied squatter areas: firewood, charcoal, crop residues (like maize cobs), kerosene, livestock dung (cow dung), electricity from the national grid and bottled liquefied gas. In addition, it was revealed from the studied squatter areas that no household owned solar equipment for use as a source of energy for cooking and it was a similar pattern for biogas from animals. In addition, the study identified the following sources of energy for lighting: hurricane lamps, candles, wick lamps, electricity from the national grid and solar lamps. Results from the study revealed some households used electricity from the national utility company, Tanzania Electric Supply Company Limited. Very few households used solar lamps and candles for lighting their households.

Disclosed use of sources of energy for cooking as well as lighting houses in squatter settlements in Mwanza city displays poverty level and low level of good utilities in households. An almost similar situation was disclosed by Hozefa (2011) who assessed factors that posed health risks to urban dwellers in slum areas of Mnazi Mmoja as well as Midizini in Dar es Salaam city. Several aspects were uncovered that included poor housing condition as well as indoor smoke from cooking together with filthy external surroundings and stagnant water on storm drains due to waste accumulation that led to blockage, narrow as well as inaccessible parts during emergency services (*ibid.*).

In regard to access to clean and safe water, it was uncovered that few respondents had access to public taps and others bought water from street vendors, while very few respondents had taps for clean, safe water at their households. Besides, due to close proximity to Lake Victoria, some respondents from Kirumba-Kabuhoro ward fetched water for domestic use from the lake. Some respondents from MECCO ward reported that they used water drawn from springs/dug up wells.

In general, the studied squatter areas imply that majority of people have no access to good supply of clean, safe potable water. A similar situation was revealed in Dar es Salaam by Mhache and Mauma (2013) who found problems in squatter settlements that included, among others, water shortage. It was argued that identified problems in Dar es Salaam squatter settlements had root causes on social, economic and political dimensions (*ibid.*).

#### **10.2.2.2 Causes of Squatter Settlements**

This study identified push-pull factors that prompted people to migrate to Mwanza city squatter areas. Identified push factors included the following: ethnicity facilitated by first settlers attracted others to join them in such settlements; domestic

violence/gender discrimination prompted married women to escape from beating and various forms of discrimination from their husbands in the villages, while girls ran away to avoid female genital mutilation (FGM) in villages located in Mara region; and insecurity whereby some people, especially the elderly ran away from villages because they were accused of being sorcerers such that they were afraid from being killed. Therefore, the only option for them was to migrate to urban areas as safe havens.

Other push factors included social bonding that involved relatives already in towns called their kin to go to do small trades or others went there to join husbands; bad weather in villages was due to erratic rainy seasons resulted to poor food crops as well as poor cash crops that led to unproductive farming in rural areas; and inadequate or lack of social services in rural areas. It was claimed that there are no good social services like hospitals even for simple/small ailments in villages and that there are life hardships in villages due to lack of social services, but urban areas like Mwanza city have referral hospitals with good quality services.

Several pull factors as motivation for people to migrate and stay in Mwanza squatter areas included availability associated with easy access to social services. For example, big referral hospitals for treatment, schools, markets and so forth forced people to move away from rural to urban areas. In addition, people were prompted to stay close to town centre so as to reduce costs by walking on foot to access social services; urban areas facilitate greater possibility of undertaking small businesses for subsistence than rural areas or villages; and urban areas offer good habitation areas for people to easily acquire plots at cheap prices. Others included the following: houses or rooms for rent can be accessed at low costs thereby living costs get reduced in urban areas; there were utility services like electricity and clean as well as safe water that were mostly missing in rural areas; and there was good infrastructure like roads for passage that eased people's life ways in terms of accessing social services or small business opportunities and/or amenities. Moreover, people migrated to Mwanza in search for employment because it is easier to get small jobs in towns than villages; business policies in towns include every good aspect and forget about people in rural areas; some people witnessed from neighbours' success in town after they exhibited developments in rural areas upon their return; people moved to Mwanza city areas because they believed that there was better life than in rural areas; and finally, they moved to Mwanza city because of availability of security for themselves including properties but security was minimally executed in rural areas.

Regarding definition of the term 'squatter settlements,' respondents provided several definitions that are almost comparable to those offered elsewhere in the world. For example, some meant income poverty, while others referred to bad physical condition of housing. Others referred to an area of immigrants living with lack of legal land tenure; social deprivation; lack of social services; and landless people.

In another vein, the study determined status of utilities for such people and then compared to aspects that defined their socio-economic level. As a result, sources of energy for cooking included firewood, charcoal, crop residues (like maize cobs), kerosene, livestock dung (cow dung), electricity from the national grid and bottled liquefied gas. On the other hand, no household owned solar equipment or biogas from animal by-products for use as source of energy for cooking. Charcoal and crop residues were the most of all utilized sources of energy for cooking in the studied wards. Subsequently, firewood was also used by many households in the studied squatter areas.

Sources of energy for lighting were uncovered whereby many households used wick lamps followed by hurricane lamps and other households used electricity from the national grid. Very few persons utilised solar lamps for lighting their households. Also, candles were used by very few households.

Additional features disclosed by participants that help to discern people's socio-economic status included availability or lack of social services. Availability of clean and safe, potable water was disclosed by only very few respondents with access to public taps and very few bought water from street vendors. Also, very few respondents had taps for clean, safe water at their households, while others fetched water for domestic use from Lake Victoria and very few used water drawn from springs or dug up wells.

Results offered good basis for evaluation of formulated assumption in regard to features and causes of squatter settlements. Therefore, obtained results led to accept the assumption that, "Features and causes of squatter settlements in Mwanza city are brought about by push factors driving people from rural areas and pull factors attracting people in urban areas." .

In sum, features and causes of squatter settlements as revealed from the study portray people living in appalling conditions. Even though such people escaped from low living standards from villages and migrated to urban areas that happen to be squatter settlements, they portray poverty at all dimensions in their livelihoods. Such revelation was exhibited in the manner respondents defined the term squatter whereby they revealed to mean income poverty; bad physical condition of housing; social deprivation; and landless people. After all, results revealed that many people could not have good utilities as shown by use of sources of energy for cooking and lighting that are used by poor who cannot access good and well to do sources like electricity, solar power and biogas. That was similarly true for accessed clean, safe and potable water.

### **10.2.3 Key Players' Initiatives in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements**

Conclusion on key players' initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements are furnished in this part of the thesis. Also, the conclusion is on provided social services in squatter areas and benefits from provided social services.

#### **10.2.3.1 Key Players in Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements**

This part presents conclusion pertaining to key players' initiatives in prevention and control of squatter settlements. It is further presented under the following aspects: government initiatives in dealing with squatter settlements; the role of media in dealing with squatter settlements; the role of civil society in dealing with squatter settlements; and the role of religious denominations (organizations/institutions) in dealing with squatter settlements.

#### **10.2.3.2 Government Initiatives in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

Respondents disclosed that the government had the following future plans in dealing with squatter settlements in Mwanza city: to improve existing infrastructure in squatter areas; and to prohibit construction of new houses in squatter areas by designating registration of all existing houses. The latter measure aims at paying compensation to the right persons in case house demolition may be required for various reasons including development projects. Besides, it was reported that the government wanted to let squatters stay in such areas as long as they could pay taxes like property tax; and respondents mentioned demolition of all houses in squatter areas. The latter was emphasized by respondents from Bugarika-Igogo ward areas who held that after demolition, house owners would be compensated to give way for construction of new good quality house units.

Further findings from Focus Group Discussions confirmed submissions pertaining to government efforts in dealing with squatter settlements. They reported about public utility companies involved in provision of social services to their areas. For example, Tanzania Electric Supply Company (TANESCO) and Mwanza Urban Water Supply Authority (MWAUWASA) provided their services in urban areas including squatter settlements. Respondents remarked that provision of the said services was testimony by public and thus, the government that there was recognition as well as consideration for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in officially planned and registered settlements.

In addition, this study probed further about priority in provision of other social services. Such services included provision of clean, safe, potable water, roads construction and waste management. By and large, priority was identified in provision of potable, clean and safe water in squatter areas in Mwanza featured prominently in all wards.

Respondents mentioned about their own initiatives and government efforts in keeping their environments clean. Table 6.2 and Figure 6.2 show that respondents mentioned waste collection in squatter areas as a government initiative for cleaning the environment (see also Figure 6.1). However, there was limited waste collection to inaccessible areas especially those high up in hilly areas. That was revealed at areas like Igogo and Kirumba Kabuhoro that the sloppy landscape together with underlying and/or exposed granite rock boulders/granite bedrocks hindered development of road networks in their areas (see Figure 6.3) such that waste collection was difficult to execute. They had to depend on foot paths that made it difficult to pass with garbage collection bins.

Likewise, findings from this study revealed poor sanitation in the squatter settlements. The settlements were observed with shallow dug-up pit latrines and due to bad terrain, steep-sided landscapes as well as hillocks, it was difficult to pave roads and construct drainage. Thus, it was difficult for the local government authorities to develop storm water drains or develop a sewage system in such areas. In addition, waste collection by Mwanza City Council was problematic in squatter areas due to a hard-up to reach landscape and maintain such activities (see also Figure 6.3).

Additionally, further government efforts in provision of social services to citizens including squatters are justifiable through strategic plans in some utility entities. This study was able to get water supply strategic plans that are in footing by MWAUWASA (2011: 10). Thus, in its strategic plan, MWAUWASA (2011: 21) outlines main objectives for improvement of provision of water services to Mwanza city residents and peri-urban settlements including settlements outside the city bounds.

The central government and local government authorities are key players in making possible and enhancing regularization/up-grade of such settlements (see also Magigi and Majani, 2005). There are efforts by Mwanza City Council in facilitation of city dwellers' smooth operation of their activities. Results from this study disclosed the way the local government authorities were interacting with business people in designing and furnishing places for their operations.

Through focus group discussions, local government leaders reported that they held meetings whenever there was need for activities that included the requirement to institute development ventures. For example, if they wanted to discuss about development activities like construction of roads, health center, schools and police post, they called upon people for meetings including business people as key contributors for settlements' socio-economic development activities.

Respondents reported further that even though such meetings were held, the problem was when it arose that people had to contribute their money. As business people, they normally did not want to contribute money. Thus, all agreements/resolutions from meetings ended in words and not in implementation.

As submitted for other entities like civil society organization and subsumed in the Conceptual Framework presented in chapter one (see Figure 1.1), business people, individually or collectively, have an obligation to take part in control and prevention of squatter settlements. However, it was not the case in the study area. Therefore, there should be some efforts to get them involved as key stakeholders in control and prevention of squatters together with associated deviant behaviour patterns.

In another vein, as its obligation for facilitating the informal sector, Mwanza City Council, in consultation with business persons themselves identified as well as established markets/working places of informal sector businesses [(see Table 9.1) City Director, 2008: 6]. The spaces are planned for petty traders operating in the informal economy and include squatter settlers (City Director, 2008: 60).

#### **10.2.3.3 Role of Media in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

It was uncovered that there was no media coverage concerning socio-economic development activities in the squatter settlements. It implies that there was no media that took an active part in reporting daily work and/or life ways concerned with squatter settlements in Mwanza. Respondents only submitted that news coverage was on problems or events that occurred in such areas. For instance, if someone was raped, killed or caught with illegal properties like illicit liquor (locally known as *gongo*) or drugs (mostly marijuana or cannabis) or when calamities like a flood and a disease outbreak in the area such as cholera, then there was media coverage for the area.

Respondents informed further that media coverage was done when politicians and government leaders went to squatter areas, like in other areas in the country, for some activities. For example, by the time TASAFA Phase Three project was launched on dealing with assistance of households in abject poverty, the event had media coverage.

In focus group discussions, participants were concerned that media are very important tools in exposing as well as educating people on life aspects. It was further argued that media have to be actively involved in coverage of activities and events without being alerted. Respondents argued that media must call attention to the importance of investigative journalism that should include coverage of all areas, rural and urban, planned and unplanned urban areas. In due regard, results from this study show that media people have a great role to play in society on aspects concerning development activities, environment as well as social life ways at all times.

#### **10.2.3.4 Role of Civil Society in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

This part presents conclusion on the manner non-governmental organizations (NGOs) and/or civil society take part in dealing with squatter problems in Mwanza City. It also includes business people's share in dealing with squatter problems in Mwanza city. This is in line with the presented Social Responsibility Approach and presented Conceptual Framework in Chapter One that underscored for such entities in dealing with squatter problems.

There was no civil society organization specifically dealing with control and prevention of squatter settlements in the study area. However, they are involved in activities recently launched by the central government and local government authorities like cleaning the environment, an aspect that is mandatory to all citizens in urban areas. Local leaders approach them for participation in dealing with daily problems but they never really take part. But such undertakings are hindered by terrain, steep hilly areas, such that it is difficult to pave roads that can easily facilitate passage for undertakings like garbage collection by using vehicles and other provisioning of social services.

The Conceptual Framework presented in Chapter One of this thesis under Social Responsibility Approach calls for stakeholders that include civil society organizations to play their part on society matters. In due regard, such issues that were the hallmark of this study encompass control as well as prevention of squatters in urban areas that include Mwanza city. Thus, non-participation of civil society entities to that end is not good for improvement of life ways in urban areas as presented by squatters.

During focus group discussions, respondents argued that NGOs including civil society organizations form a very important team of key players in development undertakings at all avenues/dimensions. It was further reported that such entities have to be actively as well as willfully involved in development activities including events happening in societies as their moral obligations. Respondents argued that the said entities must give emphasis to the importance of voluntary spirits to all people at all areas, rural and urban, planned and unplanned urban areas. In due regard, results from this study show that NGOs and civil society organizations have a big role to play including a major moral obligation for society on aspects concerning development activities, environment as well as social life ways at all times.

#### **10.2.3.5 Benefits from Government Social Services**

This part presents conclusion on the manner people's life ways had changed regarding social services provision by the government. Such results aimed at getting people's opinions as an indirect measure in order to recapitulate whether or not the

government used or never used Social Responsibility Approach as an effective and pertinent pathway in preventing as well as controlling squatter settlements.

A bit over one-third of respondents reported that they liked the areas as prominent places among government favours for people to reside in squatter settlements followed by over a quarter who reported that their children were going to public schools constructed in their vicinities (Table 6.3; Figure 6.4). Also newly constructed primary schools and later on, ward secondary schools in the country were also built in squatter areas. Such government actions made inhabitants from squatter settlements happy for their children's easy access to schools within their proximities. Similar sentiments were echoed in focus group discussions.

The implication from such pattern is that school children start continuing getting proper psycho-social care early in their growth spurt from their homes to outside environments, the school environments. Further growth spurt through adolescence and teenage can be observed to be with good manners/behaviour patterns for those who were well nurtured from childhood to adulthood. Thus, society members can witness grown up persons with good behaviours.

In addition, participants reported that as long as they were residing in the same areas, they enjoyed formation as well as operation of savings and credit cooperative societies (SACCOS). Formation of SACCOS is enhanced by the government through many avenues that include legislation, for example, Cooperative Societies Act of 2013. The Cooperative Societies Act facilitates registration of SACCOS. In addition, registered SACCOS benefit from government services from ward, district and regional to national levels. The registered SACCOS enjoy periodic training programmes, government audits and pieces of advice for their sustainability from Cooperative professionals from district level to regional level. At national level, such registered SACCOS benefit from much more aspects that are often channeled through region and district authorities. Besides, SACCOS and VICOBA (Village Community Banks) helped them to access loans in an easier manner than banks that have cumbersome conditions such as collateral and other forms of hard to acquire securities, especially immovable assets. Such schemes help them to operate their small vending activities.

Additionally, the government is providing social services like construction of feeder roads, provision of utilities like clean and potable water as well as electricity from the public electricity entity, TANESCO. Recount, respondents disclosed that provisioned social services mostly undertaken in urban areas including squatter settlements were among pull factors that attracted people to migrate to Mwanza city areas.

Results from this thesis demonstrate some achievements in prevention and control of squatter settlements in the study area. However, there were some key players supposed to take an active role in high level realisation of the desired achievements to that end. The said parties were modestly involved or were not involved at all. For instance, religious bodies were taking part as their moral obligation in dealing with people's behaviours in squatter areas. The role of media was a bit invisible or masked and they played their part only when there was bureaucrats or politicians' involvement in their discharge of their duties or if there were calamities in squatter settlements. Moreover, an assumed demise of civil society organisation in the said task was registered. All parties were supposed to join the central government and local government authorities in intensifying the appreciated social service delivery in squatter settlements at various capacities. It means that the best realisation of obligatory achievements can only be executed through social responsibility approach if such entities' efforts are coalesced with central government and local government authorities' inputs. Therefore, the researcher accepted the posited assumption that, "Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania"

#### **10.2.4 Problems and Challenges in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

Conclusion on problems and challenges in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements is provided in this part. The part is presented under the following aspects: government measures to curb unscrupulous house construction in unplanned (illegal) areas; and challenges in provision of social services to squatter settlements.

##### **10.2.4.1 Unscrupulous house construction in unplanned areas**

Results from the study gleaned out the following reasons: there was population explosion singled out from Igogo as well as Mabatini focus group discussions; and those in Kirumba and MECCO remarked seriously that there were no specially designated as well as planned areas for human habitation. Results from this study further got remarks from some respondents who said that the government does not care at all about people with the lowest incomes. They argued that the government failed to deal as well as resolve the human habitation problem in unplanned areas at an early/infancy stage before squatter settlements exploded to an uncontrollable level/stage. In addition, findings from the study disclosed that people settled in squatter areas because they did not have financial capability to acquire planned and/or surveyed pieces of land.

Also, respondents recounted that if at all it happened that there were undertakings for survey of plots by local government authorities for people to enjoy right of occupancy of such plots, they could not afford prescribed survey fee and if at all they tried to agree to such conditions, there were bureaucratic hitches. Thus, the whole idea of plot acquisition in planned or unplanned settlements was untenable by squatters. Respondents further informed that the government was mixing politics and

implementation together with the fact that leaders were afraid from being blamed by citizens because such leaders did not defend them on matters directed by the government like house demolition to give way for development of infrastructure. They said that politicians defended sprawl of unplanned settlements, especially during election campaigns for local government leaders or general elections for president, councilors and members of parliament. Respondents recounted that politicians and bureaucrats always said that they should not disturb squatter settlements because they looked for potential election voters from such areas.

Submissions from this study do not deviate much from previous reports from other scholars' findings. For example, it was reported before that people settled in squatter areas because planned as well as surveyed areas for human occupation were difficult to acquire due to huge expenses, bureaucratic blockages together with corruption on plot allocation to ordinary citizens (see Komba, 2008). There was no support from local government authority leaders especially at gross roots level (Komba, 2008). In addition, they reported that surveys for plots for human habitation were delayed, but such activities were expensive thereby making it difficult for low income earners to afford for such services. Such aspect was raised before by Komba (2008) who reported that affordability and low incomes forced people to settle in unplanned or squatter settlements by accessing cheap plots. Such position was observed in Mwanza city squatters by Komba (2008). Others rented in such cheap places in close proximity to areas they wanted to work for wage earning or undertake petty businesses as submitted by Limbumba (2010) at Hannanasifu and Keko Machungwa squatters in Dar es Salaam city. In addition, it was disclosed that local government authorities are powerless with no authority over matters concerning land allocation at all avenues. Additionally, respondents recalled that the government tried to evict people from unplanned settlements without proper procedures such that there was chaos because people had no alternative areas for resettlement. The exercise failed and they argued that the government should prepare proper procedures to that end.

In controlling and preventing squatter settlements, Mwanza city officials launched participatory survey along planned but un-surveyed plots for residential areas. In such areas, people were required to pay for some survey nominal fee. But it was found out that such exercise failed because people felt that survey charges under the scheme were very high and unaffordable. People never took part into the exercise of surveying and thus, authentication of such areas that included squatters failed.

Mwanza city authority and central government is discouraging people from developing in squatters but the envisioned measures are not working. Mwanza city is planning to demolish some houses in order to create space for undertaking the following: pave and build street roads so that they will create accessibility to such settlements; facilitate waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building schools (primary as well as secondary schools);

construct health facilities; build markets; and build police stations. However, all such planned measures have not been implemented.

#### **10.2.4.2 Challenges in Provision of Social Services to Squatter Settlements**

This part presents conclusion regarding challenges in provision of social services so as to gauge whether or not Social Responsibility Approach was applied by different stakeholders. As already presented (see, for example, Figure 1) in the Conceptual Framework in chapter one, stakeholders include the government (central government as well as local government authorities), individuals and entities like Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs) and Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs).

There were difficulties in getting title deeds to people's built up plots in unplanned areas and that aspect featured prominently in most study sites. It implies that people need to get rights of occupancy for their built-up plots in unplanned settlements. It has to be recalled that the same problem was raised before concerning challenges of legally accessing people to rights of occupancy including squatters in Mwanza city (see Komba, 2008). Yet, the same problem was seen featuring among difficulties for squatters who reported that affordability and low incomes forced people to settle in unplanned or squatter settlements by accessing cheap plots (Komba, 2008). Other people resorted to rent houses because they cannot build houses and those places are cheap. For example, Limbumba (2010) disclosed about the said facts at Hannanasifu and Keko Machungwa squatters in Dar es Salaam city.

Need for roads was disclosed by all respondents though with variation for priority over other wants based on terrain, especially for those who dwell in non-hilly areas like some parts in Nyakabungo and Kirumba-Kabuhoro who wanted roads construction (see Table 8.1; Figure 8.1). The implication from such variation of need for roads can be due to nature of landscape in Mwanza squatter areas whereby many areas are steep slopes (or highly hilly) and thus, it is difficult for road construction (see Figure 6.4). Therefore, those who demanded for roads were not from high up rocky areas and thus, it could be easier to create some paved roads in low lying areas than high up sloppy areas full of granite rock boulders/granite bedrocks.

Improvement of markets was suggested by respondents with a high need for such measure recounted by respondents from Igogo ward. The need was also echoed by respondents from Isamilo-Nyakabungo and Kirumba-Kabuhoro wards, while it was modestly reported by respondents from MECCO ward. Recall, Mwanza City Council in consultation with business persons, identified as well as established markets of informal sector businesses. Thus, Mwanza City Council is targeting to help people of all walks of life from various places including squatter settlements to access venues for their business operations because they cannot afford to acquire ordinary plots

from the City Council's land office due to small nature of their businesses (City Director, 2008: 60).

Respondents in focus group discussions provided the following suggestions for the government in regard to provision of social services in their areas: people needed construction of police stations in their areas; construction of vocational training institutes in their areas and reserve places for play grounds for children's sports as well as their development. They also suggested construction of health facilities, improvement of roads, strengthen security for days and nights in order to deal with theft/robbery and construction of permanent markets in their areas.

In due regard, identified challenges and problems in the study areas, to a certain extent, portray partial government's failure in discharge of its duties. They ranged from non-provision of right of occupancy for habitation areas to social services provision like roads construction, provision of business areas, particularly markets, construction of police stations to curb deviant behaviours, lack of political will to deal with their problems and averting from demolishing or evicting squatters from their areas. On the other hand, respondents spoke out that the government's decision to leave people stay in such areas was seen as failure to prevent and control their stay in the said settlements. On one hand, all entities showed double standards whereby the government wanted to control and prevent squatter settlements. On the other hand, the government was sympathetic on leaving them settle in such areas through provision of social services including improvement of infrastructure. Accordingly, it appeared that there is the urge to prevent as well as control spread out of squatter settlements but there is sympathy to that end such that the government is leaving people settle in the said areas.

Even so, results demonstrate key players' efforts in dealing with squatters at various capacities but they need to improve their degree and dedication in dealing with identified challenges and problems for good habitation in urban areas like squatter settlements. Such desire has to be properly implemented through intensified application of social responsibility approach whereby all parties would fulfill their obligation for the best anticipated results in dealing with squatter settlements. Therefore, results led the researcher to accept the prediction, "There are problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City"

#### **10.2.5 Current Initiatives in Dealing with Prevention and Control of Squatter Settlements in Mwanza City**

This study uncovered central government and local government authorities' initiatives in dealing with prevention and control of squatter settlements. Conclusions for the said aspects are furnished in this sub-section. It was exposed that the central government together with local government authorities had plans to improve existing

infrastructure in squatter areas and prohibit construction of new houses in squatter areas. On the other hand, it was reported that government officials had views to let squatters stay in such areas given that they pay taxes.

Concerning government future plans in dealing with squatter settlements, all respondents (non-local government leaders) pointed out that development of infrastructure was the leading government priority not only to squatter settlements but also to other parts of the country in both urban and rural areas. Such desire implies squatter settlements' upgrade whereby such undertakings were experienced in Kurasini, Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania.

Similarly, elsewhere around the world such measures are undertaken by governments. For instance, in Latin America, slum upgrading involves provision of water, sanitation, drainage, roads, land plots, public parks, health clinic and income generating activities. In Thailand, slum upgrading process takes a highly social responsibility approach compared to many other cases. For example, Baan Makong slum upgrading program involved Savings groups, Civil Society Organizations (CSOs), local government agencies, development organizations, universities, local NGOs as well as architects. The program supported partners so as to come upon solutions for squatter settlements.

Another measure conceived by the World Bank meant to help developing countries deal with slum problems involved sites and services scheme. The scheme was introduced through the government in Dar es Salaam city, Tanzania by carrying out site upgrades, provide road infrastructure, undertake plot demarcation, provide clean as well as potable, safe water and construct storm water drainage system. Besides, demolition of some houses was seen to be a government decision due to the following reasons: pave as well as construct street roads so that they will generate accessibility to such settlements; improve waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary and secondary schools; construct health facilities; build markets; and construct police stations.

Government controls like house demolition are termed slum clearance by authorities. For example, in Mumbai, India, slum clearance policies are top-down, expensive and do not involve squatters. However, such approaches encountered protests from squatters whereby in Mumbai, squatters refused to have their sheds demolished. Protests were staged by squatters, activists and community organizations who sought for dialogue with authorities on numerous issues. All were against imposition from top, government authorities. Instead, they wanted to be involved in decision-making regarding their welfare. But they had polarised opinions whereby one group wanted to stay on sites they occupied by then and upgrade their homes, while the other group claimed for compensation of incomes including livelihoods.

It was further uncovered that the government and local government authorities had to keep such settlements due to some political ends. One leader argued that people in squatter settlements, including others in the country, were important voters in elections. Some respondents recounted that public utility companies for electricity supply and provision of clean potable water were at the front position in provision of services at all places in urban areas including squatter settlements. Thus, such move was understood to be recognition and consideration for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in officially planned as well as registered settlements.

Almost in a similar situation in Latin America, political mobilisation played the main part in keeping up squatter settlements. For example, claims to the state and being politicized were part of 'squatting culture' in Latin America and Uruguay. In the contrary, in the Middle East, it is a different pattern whereby squatters have a propensity to opt to strategies outside politics, for example, depending on a particular context, there was complete political invisibility, while ethnic networks or religious law were among key features to legalize land ownership.

Further politicization in the study area was portrayed at negligible level of threats from the government against people's decisions of settling permanently in squatter areas. In any case, fear from eviction was only mentioned at one of the five studied wards, while the rest of the wards never felt that there was such government determination. On the other hand, Mwanza city officials disclosed that they launched participatory survey along planned but un-surveyed plots for residential areas. In due regard, people were required to pay for some survey nominal fee. However, the exercise failed because people felt that survey charges were very high and unaffordable.

The city authority and central government is discouraging people from developing in squatters but the willpower is not working. Likewise, they are planning to demolish some houses in order to create space for paving and build street roads so that they will create accessibility to the settlements. Also envisioned cleared spaces are deemed necessary so as to facilitate waste collection including their disposal; improve social services provision by building primary as well as secondary schools; build health facilities; construct markets; and build police stations.

Furthermore, to appropriately interpret the data, the researcher premised through the prediction that, "Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city,"

In regard to findings sought to advance data interpretation, assumption test results led to the following contentions: first, the central government together with the local government authorities had plans to improve existing infrastructure in squatter areas.

Moreover, it was argued that such efforts were among main government priorities not only to squatter settlements but also to other parts of the country, both urban and rural areas. Second, demolition of some houses was seen to be a government decision that aimed at paving and constructing street roads so that they will facilitate accessibility to such settlements; facilitate waste collection including their disposal; provide facelift to social services by building primary as well as secondary schools; constructing health facilities; building markets; and constructing police stations.

Third, government authorities and political echelons strived to keep squatter settlements undisturbed due to some political ends, while others thought of discouraging sprawl of such settlements. Moreover, it was narrated that utility companies were at the forefront in provision of services at all places in urban areas including squatter settlements. Besides, it was argued that such undertakings by utility entities were interpreted to be in recognition and consideration for people living in squatter settlements like those dwelling in officially planned as well as registered settlements. Thus, it was an authentication of leaving squatter settlements untouched. Fourth, there was minimal level of threats from the government against people's decisions of settling permanently in squatter areas. For example, fear from eviction was only mentioned at one of the studied wards, while the rest of respondents from other wards never felt that there was such government decision. In further validation of such demise of threat from government, respondents did not remark on aspects regarding prohibition of building new houses in squatter settlements.

Fifth, Mwanza city officials reported that they launched participatory survey along un-surveyed plots for residential areas. People were required to pay for some survey small fee. Quite the reverse, the exercise failed because people felt that survey charges under the scheme were very high and unaffordable. Sixth, Mwanza city authority including municipal councils and central government is discouraging people from developing in squatter areas but the measures are not working. At another dimension, local government authority officials disclosed that they were planning to demolish some houses so as to generate space for infrastructure development and social services provision.

On one hand, critical evaluation via assumption test results demonstrate that the central government and local government authorities are in a position to prevent as well as control squatter settlements at diverse dimensions. On the other hand, the government authorities are providing social services to the studied squatter areas. However, in combination with other submitted results from this thesis, it can be discerned that there are initiatives that show the central government and local authorities, among key players, in one way or another, apply social responsibility in discharge of their duties aimed at some discernible level of prevention and control of squatter settlements in the studied areas. Therefore, the researcher accepted the

premised assumption that, “Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city”

### **10.2.6 Theoretical Stances in Dealing with Squatter Settlements**

This part presents conclusion in regard to theoretical stances deemed pertinent on helping to deal with squatter settlements in Mwanza city. In this study, four Neo-Marxist classic theories from Sociology were considered fit whereby their application was thought to be of great assistance in analysis of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. They include the following: Rural-Urban Continuum, Concentric Zone Theory, Anomie Theory and Social Responsibility Theory.

#### **10.2.6.1 Rural-Urban Continuum**

This study examined rural-urban migration to Mwanza city by further applying Rural-Urban Continuum Theory to assess aspects such as habits, behaviour and attitudes of migrants.

In regard to Urban-Rural Continuum, results from this study revealed the manner people settled in squatter areas in Mwanza city have brought about environmental and social problems. Many people are settled in unplanned as well as hazardous areas such that there are cases of rock falls/land falls caused by severe weathering notably, heavy rain downpours that lead to people’s death and property destruction/loss. For example, during long rains season in April, 2016, heavy rains downpours caused rock falls that demolished a house and one youth died from such accident in Mabatini area, Mwanza city. In the same area during the same season, a child was swept away by floods along Mirongo River at Mabatini section.

Focus group discussions disclosed that during rain seasons, frequent malpractices include people discharge their faecal/wastes down habitats that do not have sewage system and storm water drains. Respondents reported that all wastes are washed down slopes to Lake Victoria. As a result, there is land pollution as well as Lake Victoria pollution. Such pollution, especially Lake Victoria, which is the main source of water for inhabitants of Mwanza city, paves the way for water borne disease epidemics, for example, cholera, typhoid, helminthes infections plus skin diseases. Some participants in focus group discussions mentioned that there are also some diseases due to poor sanitation/waste disposal and poor environments in their settlements.

It was revealed that people migrated from rural areas to Mwanza city due to pull factors that included seeking for good social services like health services that are better than rural areas. However, they also migrated with malpractices to proper health and sanitation practices. Several diseases were reported that included malaria, Acute Respiratory Infections (A.R.I) and Urinary Tract Infections (U.T.I) are the

most common diseases, which affect majority of people in Mwanza City. Such diseases could most likely be controlled if proper sanitation environment as well as waste management were undertaken. The pandemic, Human Immunodeficiency Virus (HIV) infection among family members was reported and there were cases of *Tuberculosis mycobacterium*.

In terms of schooling, there is Rural-Urban Continuum whereby provision of education services is carried out in rural and urban areas in the country as government initiatives. But, social services delivery like education has variation. As disclosed by respondents, they migrated to Mwanza city because social services that included provisioned education services were better than in rural areas. Through focus group discussion, respondents argued that they migrated to Mwanza city whereby their children accessed schools that are within smaller walking distance than far reaching schools in rural areas. Also, they held that quality and standards of education are better off in urban than in rural schools. Thus, such school children are successfully enrolled in higher education levels due to good and required pass marks in their final examination of lower to higher levels. For example, there are easier opportunities or chances for being selected to next education level, from primary school level to secondary education level in urban than rural schools.

Further problems included environmental degradation due to use of plant materials (fire wood and charcoal) as energy sources for cooking and lighting in urban areas including squatter settlements in the country. Environmental degradation is contributed by both people in rural areas for their action of tree felling and passing over products as well as habits to urban dwellers that include squatter settlers like those in Mwanza city. Thus, such behaviour patterns like charcoal use and firewood for cooking as energy sources depict a certain level of continuity, from rural to urban areas. It is a hazardous rural-urban continuum that paves the way for environmental degradation.

#### **10.2.6.2 Concentric Zone Theory**

This part presents conclusion on interpretation of Mwanza city lay out in regard to Concentric Zone Theory as construed by the researcher. Field observations led the researcher assume Mwanza city as having five concentric zones following Concentric Zone Theory by Burgess as modified by Panu [2010: 9 (please see Figure 9.1)]: first, the Central Business District (CBD) for Mwanza city is shown in circle 1 represented by Kenyatta road, Nyerere road, Pamba road and areas along Deluxe street as well as Uhuru road; second, zone of transition between residential and commercial use includes a bit away from Nyerere road, Pamba road as well as Uhuru road areas presented under circle 2; third, a low class residential area presented in circle 3 includes such areas as Igogo, Mkolani, Mbugani, Nyakato (including MECCO), Buswelu Igoma, Mabatini, Kirumba as well as Nyamanoro; fourth, a middle and high class residential area presented as circle 4 that includes such areas

as Capri Point, Isamilo, Kiseke as well as Butimba; and fifth, a commuter zone, which includes suburbs as well as remote communities in Mwanza city that encompasses areas like Sangabuye, Bugogwa as well as several areas within Ilemela district presented under circle 5 (please see map with such concentric zones 1 to 5 in Figure 9.1).

Designated concentric zones for Mwanza city are interpreted by the researcher to be composed of the following population groups: first, the Central Business District (CBD) for Mwanza city shown in circle 1 (zone 1) was formerly a small place occupied by many people as residents working in the area that had offices with a few shops and had no factories (Figure 9.1). As the settlement grew from a small town to a municipality and later on grew to a city, conditions by local government authority were imposed. Such conditions included the following: much more intensified business premises as well as offices; currently, fewer residents stay in the area than it was the case when it was a small town; and small houses that were due for replacement were liable for demolition with orders to construct sky rises for office/business accommodation.

The second demarcated circle is the zone of transition between residential and commercial use, while the third zone is a low-class residential area presented in circle 3 (Figure 9.1). The next zone encompasses a middle- and high-class residential area presented as circle 4 and finally, there is zone 5, which includes suburbs as well as remote communities in Mwanza city (please see map with such concentric zones 1 to 5 in Figure 9.1). Nevertheless, the outer zone or ring has a mix of residential settlements with industrial activities. Before, the areas were farms and a few residents who were farmers.

### **10.2.6.3 Anomie Theory**

Featherstone and Deflem's (2003) position pertaining to Merton's social-structures-and-anomie paradigm assisted for analysis of deviant behaviour patterns by people living in squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Further examination of such deviant behaviours involved assessment of initiatives whether or not various stakeholders were involved in dealing with deviant behaviours based on obligations as captured through the Conceptual Framework (Figure 1.1) presented in chapter one of this thesis.

Results from this study exposed the following people with deviant behaviours in Mwanza city, particularly squatter areas: thugs, robbers, drug addicts, alcoholics, prostitutes and street children. They were disclosed through focus group discussions in all studied wards that children are discriminated as well as abused in streets and their homes with parents plus caretakers and/or caregivers or guardians.

Moreover, it was revealed that the government is doing its best in instituting law and order to all citizens that include squatters. It is using its law enforcing organs to curb deviant behaviours that also include crimes and homicide. Other individuals and entities are participating minimally in curbing identified deviant behaviours in the study areas. However, to some extent, Railway Children Africa in collaboration with local partners are working to control street children who happen to be available and mostly originating from squatter settlements. It implies that all efforts to deal with deviant behaviours are not highly executed as expected by many stakeholders. They are minimally executed as seen with an increase in street children and other deviant behaviours.

Some efforts were witnessed in the first quarter of the year (2017) after Dar es Salaam regional authorities started to crack down on drug trafficking and drug use. Many people were netted and the fight did not discriminate people, regardless of their affiliation like political status, fame in artistic chores and the like. For example, at some cases in Mwanza city, culprits were netted trying to remove a haul of drugs from a toilet in Igogo area and others were apprehended at Kirumba area.

In regard to the presented Conceptual Framework (please see Figure 1.1), there is big need for all persons, as individuals, civil society organizations that include Faith-Based Organizations, NGOs, media together with the government, to curb prevailing deviant behaviours in Mwanza city that include people living in squatter settlements. However, it was noted that religious leaders were dealing with people's behaviours in their flocks based on their normal routines of spiritual service delivery. Such services were offered in all places as required but the researcher observed that such efforts are seen as normal pattern. Thus, curbing deviant behaviours among the flock required concerted efforts by spiritual leaders with their flocks. The reasons are many but the patterns are going unchecked among population groups in urban areas including squatter settlements.

If everyone and every entity play part in collaboration with the government, such unwarranted/unruly behaviours could be prevented and most likely could be controlled. In another vein, recapitulating Featherstone and Deflem's (2003) position pertaining to Merton's social-structures-and-anomie paradigm, curbing deviant behaviours in Mwanza city including squatter settlements is wanting. For, as already posited by the researcher, non-participatory stance by other key players as sole stakeholders in controlling deviant behaviours in squatter settlements is due to a disjunction between cultural goals and institutionalized means for understanding plus dealing with crime as well as deviance in the studied squatter areas of Mwanza city. Thus, everyone should play his/her part such that surely it can be possible to control and eventually, prevent deviant behaviours in squatters in Mwanza city.

#### **10.2.6.4 Social Responsibility Approach**

This study examined whether or not Social Responsibility Approach was applied in control and prevention of squatters in Mwanza city that involved all mentioned stakeholders. That position was also recapitulated based on the Conceptual Framework presented in chapter one (Figure 1.1). Thus, it was envisaged that Social Responsibility Approach is a proper pathway in dealing with squatter problems involving media together with other stakeholders (an organization or an individual, central government, local government, civil society organisation such as NGOs, FBOs, CSOs and so on).

Therefore, it is proper to surmise in that limelight that everyone must play her/his part so as to achieve advancement of goals of society, in the case of this study, preventing and controlling squatter settlements. Concerned parties include the government (local and central government authorities), individuals as well as society organizations in form of Faith-Based Organizations (FBOs), Non-governmental Organizations (NGOs), Civil Society Organizations (CSOs) and the like.

Social Responsibility Approach was deemed fit and necessary through media so as to underpin obligations among inhabitants (the squatters), the local government authority (Mwanza City Council through Nyamagana Municipal Council as well as Ilemela Municipal Council), the central government and Civil Society Organizations in regard to impacts (negative or positive) upon the environment (squatter environment). In other words, the study sought to underpin whether or not their actions created equilibrium (benefit to society) or disequilibrium to the environment (no benefit to society) by being irresponsible or responsible in prevention and control of squatters. The stated assessment was necessary so that if media plus the other mentioned stakeholders were to be uncovered irresponsible, the study would provide pertinent suggestions among other expected study achievements.

Results from this study revealed that media did not play their obligation as militated by Social Responsibility Approach (see Figure 1.1) in the study area. Their major role if they would have played part, willfully, would have facilitated other key players such as civil society organizations (NGOs, FBOs, individuals and the like) together with the government in noble cause of control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. Besides, they would have greatly helped in uncovering deviant behaviours for all key players to get into their control and eventual prevention.

Besides, this study examined whether or not Social Responsibility Approach was applied in control and prevention of squatters in Mwanza city that involved all mentioned stakeholders. Such position was also recapitulated based on the Conceptual Framework presented in chapter one of this thesis (Figure 1.1). For an

appropriate assessment of Social Responsibility Approach, the researcher analysed information from tested assumption.

At least, results exhibit government efforts in dealing with squatters at diverse capacities but they need to up-grade their scale and dedication in dealing with identified challenges and problems for good habitation in urban areas like squatter settlements. The craving would have been properly executed through intensified application of social responsibility approach whereby all other parties (civil society and individuals) would have been able to fulfill their responsibility for the best anticipated results in dealing with squatter settlements. Therefore, results led the researcher to accept the prediction that, “There are problems and challenges in using social responsibility approach in prevention and control of squatter settlements in Mwanza City”

Further evaluation of presented results in chapter eight illustrates that the central government and local government authorities are in a position to prevent as well as control squatter settlements at diverse scopes. They are providing social services to the studied squatter areas. In addition, there are initiatives that portray the central government and local government authorities, among key players, somehow apply social responsibility approach in discharge of their duties that are aimed at some conspicuous level of prevention and control of squatter settlements in the studied areas. Therefore, the researcher accepted the assumption that, “Current initiatives involving key players using social responsibility approach are applied in preventing and controlling the increase in squatters in Mwanza city”

Chapter six of this thesis expounds that the central government and local government authorities (Mwanza City Council, Ilemela Municipal Council and Nyamagana Municipal Council) were at the lead in social services delivery in squatter settlements of Mwanza city. Nonetheless, the central government and local government authorities together with other key players were supposed to take a further active role in an elevated realisation of registered achievements in dealing with squatter settlements of Mwanza city. Other parties were minimally involved or they were not involved at all in dealing with squatter settlements. For example, religious entities were taking part as their moral obligation in dealing with people’s deviant behaviours in squatter areas. The role of media was a bit invisible such that they acted only when events happened while bureaucrats or politicians were on their duties or if there were disasters in squatter settlements such as floods. Also, an obvious demise of civil society organisations in the said task was recorded. In due regard, the best realisation of sought-after achievements can only be performed through Social Responsibility Approach if such key players’ endeavours are combined with central government and local government authorities’ efforts. Therefore, the researcher accepted the posited prediction, “Social responsibility is effective for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts

between the government and private sector in Tanzania” Thus, it was in pursuit of demonstrating validity of employing social responsibility approach by the identified stakeholders including the government (central and local government authorities) with public entities.

At any rate, results demonstrate key players’ efforts in dealing with squatters at varied capacities but they need to improve their degree and enthusiasm in dealing with identified challenges and problems for good habitation in urban areas like squatter settlements. Such aspiration was minimally executed through application of social responsibility approach whereby they played their obligation.

As a result, the central government and local government authorities are in a position to prevent as well as control squatter settlements at diverse capacities. There are initiatives that illustrate that the central government and local government authorities, among key players, somehow apply social responsibility approach in their duties that depict some degree of prevention and control of squatter settlements in the studied areas. Therefore, it is safe and resonant to argue that Social Responsibility Approach is the most pertinent of all pathways that must be applied in prevention and control of squatter settlements. Expected endeavours will lead to much achievements if all identified stakeholders play a major role in joining hands with the government and mostly must involve media, whose roles to society include dissemination of information, advocacy, education, awareness raising, entertainment and many others.

#### **10.2.6.5 Assumption test**

The researcher carried out the following assumption test postulated in Chapter One: “Social responsibility is useful for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania.”

Results from this study together with those from assumption test revealed that there were initiatives in control and prevention of squatter settlements in Mwanza city. It has to be recalled that such settlements were formed as a result of push and pull factors but some initiatives to discourage their formation as well as sprawl were registered. Initiatives include the following: the government has directives that require people already residing in squatters not to start with new house constructions in unplanned areas. Those already settled in such areas had their houses registered so that in the event the government got plans to develop the areas by requiring demolishing some houses or structures to give way for the space(s), the registered houses/structures are right to be compensated. That is not the case for those who happened to build new houses after the said directives banning such developments.

Another initiative to discourage proliferation of squatters, involves the government through its machinery notably, Ministry of Lands and Development of Human

Settlements that has directed all local government authorities (municipal councils and city councils) to contract private survey entities who shall undertake cadastral surveys in squatter areas as a measure to authenticate them with pertinent planned social amenities. In addition, the government has created good habitation areas in peri-urban locations by carrying out land surveys and thereby creating all necessary infrastructures, for example, paved roads; provision of play grounds; creation of spaces for development of health facilities as well as schools; and creation of spaces for other social services. Other aspects that involve control and prevention of squatters include curbing of deviant behaviours that mushroom, especially in overcrowded areas like squatter settlements. The initiatives include fight against sale of drugs and drug abuse that are dealt with in all in the country areas including squatters. Other measures also include the fight against prostitution manifest in urban areas. In addition, deviant behaviours, registered in squatter areas, include formation of street children who get lose but are helped in rehabilitation by all stakeholders. A case to that end was through an international Africa Children Railway, in collaboration with local NGOs in Mwanza city, are involved in street children as well as teenage rehabilitation.

Identified initiatives executed through the government and other stakeholders lead to discern that, to a great extent, Social Responsibility Approach is useful for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector (other stakeholders) in Tanzania. Results from the study justify that existing legal framework together with local government authorities (Mwanza City Council and the two Municipal Councils, Ilemela and Nyamagana) have instituted strategies for the good cause.

Therefore, it is safe to accept the postulated prediction that , “Social responsibility is useful for control and prevention of squatters in urban areas through joint efforts between the government and private sector in Tanzania,” It is evident that efforts being carried out so far point to achievement of the desired goal of safer habitation in urban areas for control and eventual prevention of squatters.

### **10.3 Recommendations**

Recommendations are submitted for action by all key players. They are presented in the limelight (attention) of Social Responsibility Approach that was the hallmark of this study. It is suggested that media should be at the forefront in coverage for all squatter people’s life ways at diverse dimensions. Such coverage should be educative with the gist to control and prevent squatter settlements not only in Mwanza city but also in all urban areas of Tanzania. Such measures will be stimulants in regard to their obligation of creating equilibrium for benefits to societies in the country. In due regard, as watch dogs, they will enhance/facilitate many people or stakeholders as key players in taking part for many society issues/aspects that are wanting through noble cause like control and prevention of squatter settlements in urban areas such as those in Mwanza city. Stakeholders to that effect include the government,

individuals, NGOs, FBOs and many other entities. In addition, it is suggested that the pathway will facilitate or enhance in uncovering deviant behaviours that should be dealt with through concerted efforts by the mentioned key players that include the government.

Furthermore, cultural goals and institutionalized means for understanding crime as well as deviance in squatter areas of Mwanza city can easily be discerned by media to call upon all key players in institutionalization with positive motives. Rural areas are also prone with discrimination of one sex against the other such as wife beating, girl circumcision and the like. All were said to be push factors for girls and young women including those married to migrate to urban areas that happened to be squatters like those studied in Mwanza city. Then they also end up with deviant behaviours including drug addiction, alcohol abuse, children discrimination, prostitution, street children plus behaving as thugs, robbers and many others. Further uncovering of such deviant behaviours would lead to positive involvement that would pave the way for application of pertinent initiatives by various stakeholders, at diverse capacities, in dealing with deviant behaviours based on obligations as captured through the analysis applied through Conceptual Framework (Figure 1.1) presented in chapter one of this thesis. All these should be underscored in both rural and urban areas.

Moreover, the presented concentric ring theory (see Figure 9.1) for Mwanza city is a result of non-observance of city master plan. In due regard, it is suggested that there should be a major review of the city master plan so that habitation would be well planned, would cater for all social services and would be harmonious without breeding deviant behaviours as observed mostly in squatter settlements in urban areas in the country.

Moreover, it is proposed that the government should institute proper approaches in dealing with people settled in unplanned/un-surveyed areas once they start encroaching them before they increase or escalate beyond control as time goes on. Then the government should educate them and stay to its planned settlements with reviews from time to time so that people should not be caught unaware once they encroach/invoke unplanned areas for settlements.

For social services provisioning utility entities, it is suggested that they should be in serious observance of government plans, strategies, initiatives and the like that are geared for good habitation. They should offer their services according to urban master plans not only for Mwanza city but also in all urban areas of Tanzania.

Many respondents gave reasons for urban migration due to non-availability of social services in rural areas. It means that other social services like healthcare, school, markets infrastructure, police offices and many others should be properly carried out

by adhering to codes of conduct for customer care and value for good habitation. In due regard, it is suggested that such social services should be properly instituted in the country by involving all people as a participatory measure enshrined through the applied analytical pathway by this study, Social Responsibility Approach, that signaled positive outcomes in solving socio-cultural problems. All these are necessary not only in urban areas but also in rural areas. If the latter are also well provisioned, then rural-urban migration could be scaled down if not controlled as well as prevented.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Adepoju, Aderanti (2008). *Migration in Sub-Saharan Africa: Current African Issues* 37. Uppsala: Nordiska Afrikainstitutet.
- Adepoju, Aderanti (2001). Regional Organizations and Intra-regional Migration in Sub-Saharan Africa: Challenges and Prospects. *International Migration* 39, (6), 43-59.
- Alsayyad, Nezar (1993). Squatting and Culture: A Comparative Analysis of Informal Developments in Latin America and the Middle East. *Habitat Intl.* 17, (1), 33-44.
- Arrputham and Patel (2010). Recent Development Plans for the Airport Slums in Mumbai. *Environment and Urbanization Journal* (22), 2.
- Arimah, B. (2010). The Face of Urban Poverty: Explaining the Prevalence of Slums in Developing Countries. *Working Paper* 2010/30. UNU-WIDER.
- Arimah, B. (2001). *Slums as Expression of Social Exclusion: Explaining the Prevalence of Slums in African Countries*. Nairobi: UN-HABITAT
- Babbie, E (2010). *The Practice of Social Research*. 12<sup>th</sup> Ed. Wadsworth, Cengage Learning.
- Bahir, Asmamaw Legass (2010). Human induced disaster and the socioeconomic capitals of squatter settlers: the case of the Kore community in Addis Ababa, Ethiopia. *Journal of Sustainable Development in Africa*, 12, (6), 217 – 232.
- Bashir, M., Afzal, M. and Azeem, M (2008). Reliability and Validity of Qualitative and Operational Research Paradigm. *Pak. J. Stat. Oper. Res.* IV (1) 35-45
- Bergel, Egon Ernest (1955). *Urban Sociology*. New York: McGraw-Hill Company, Inc.
- Bello, Mustapha Oyewole (2009). Squatter Settlement, Accessibility of Land and the Urban Poor. *FIG Working Week*.
- Bowden, A., Fox-Rushby, J., Nyandieka, L. and Wanjau, J. (2002). Methods for Pre-testing and Piloting Survey questions: Illustrations from the KENQOL Survey of Health-related Quality of Life. *Health Policy and Planning*, 17 (3), 322-330.

- Burra, Marco (2004). Land Use Planning and Governance in Dar es Salaam: A Case Study from Tanzania. In Karen Tranberg Hansen and Mariken Vaa (eds) *Reconsidering Informality: Perspectives from Urban Africa*, pp 139 – 143. Nordiska Afrikainstitutet.
- Brown, Nina (2011). Robert Park and Ernest Burgess: Urban Ecology Studies, 1925, *Occasional Paper*, Santa Barbara, California, U.S.A
- City Director (2008) Mwanza City Profile.
- Cohen, L., Manion, L. and Morrison, K. (2000). *Research Methods in Education*. 5<sup>th</sup> Ed. London: Routledge Falmer
- Cochran, J. (1977). *Sampling Techniques*, New York: Macmillan publishing Company.
- Creswell, J (2003). *Research Design: Qualitative, Quantitative and Mixed Methods Approaches*. 2<sup>nd</sup> Ed. SAGE Publications, Thousand Oaks.
- Curran, Sara R. and Saguy, Abigail C. (2001). Migration and Cultural Change: A Role for Gender and Social Networks? *Journal of International Women's Studies*, 2(3), 54-77.
- Featherstone, Richard and Deflem, Mathieu (2003). Anomie and Strain: Context and Consequences of Merton's Two Theories. *Sociological Inquiry*, 73(4), 471-489.
- Grajeda, Erika, D. and Ward, M. Peter (2012). Inheritance and Succession in Informal Settlements of Latin American Cities: A Mexican Case Study. *Latin American Research Review*, 47, 139-162.
- Gibson, A. Mhairi and Gurmu, Eshetu (2012). Rural to Urban Migration Is an Unforeseen Impact of Development Intervention in Ethiopia. *Plus, ONE* 7(11) e48708. doi: 10.1371/Journal.pone.0048708.
- Gugler, Josef (1989). Women Stay on the Farm No More: Changing Patterns of Rural-Urban Migration in Sub-Saharan Africa. *Journal of Modern African Studies*, 27, (2), 347-352.
- Guria, Narendranath and Tiwari, Vijay Kumar (2013). Migration and Living Conditions in Urban Slums: A Case Study of Bilaspur City (Chhattisgarh). *Journal of Research Strategy, Kanpur, UP*. (III), 1- 18.
- Ishtiaque, Asif (2013). The Influence of Factors of Migration on the Migration Status of Rural-Urban Migrants in Dhaka, Bangladesh. *Journal of Studies and Research in Human Geography*, 7.2, 45–52.

- Jackson, S. (2009). *Research Methods and Statistics: A Critical Thinking Approach*. 3<sup>rd</sup> Ed. Wadsworth: Cengage Learning
- Hossain, M. (2001). Rural-Urban migration in Bangladesh: A micro level study. Paper presented in a poster session on International migration at the *Brazil international Union for the Scientific Study of Population Conference*, 2001 [www.iussp.org](http://www.iussp.org) Brazil site accessed on 2<sup>nd</sup> January, 2018.
- Hozefa, Mufaddal (2011). "Pollution Risk Accumulation from Households in Dar-es-Salaam. Master of Science Thesis," Lund University
- Huchzermeyer, Marie (2003). Housing rights in South Africa: invasions, evictions, the media and the courts in the cases of Grootboom, Alexandra and Bredell. *Urban Forum* 14(1), 8-107.
- Kanogo, Tabitha (1987). *Squatters and the Roots of Mau Mau 1905-1963*. London: James Currey Ltd.
- Kanyinga, Karuti (2000). Re-distribution from above: The Politics of Land Rights and Squatting in Coastal Kenya. *Research Report* 115, Nordiska Afrikainstitutet Uppsala, Sweden.
- Kironde, J. M. Lusugga (2000). Understanding land markets in African urban areas: the case of Dar es Salaam, Tanzania. *Habitat International* (24), 151-165.
- Kironde, J.M. Lusugga (1995). Access to land by the urban poor in Tanzania: some findings from Dar es Salaam. *Environment and Urbanization*, 7, (1), 77-96.
- Komba, M. P. (2008). Rigid Planning Standards and Procedures: Planning for Development of Spontaneous Settlements in Tanzania: A Case of Mabatini, Mwanza. *Ardhi and Settlement Development Organization (ARISEDO) Report*.
- Kothari, C. (2004). *Research Methodology: Methods and Techniques*. 2<sup>nd</sup> Ed. Delhi: New Age International Publishers.
- Ishtiaque, Asif (2013). The Influence of Factors of Migration on the Migration Status of Rural-Urban Migrants in Dhaka, Bangladesh. *Human Geographies*. 7.2, 45–52
- Khosla, Prabha (2012). Young Women: life choices and livelihoods in poor urban areas, *Action Aid Report*, Johannesburg: International Secretariat

- Lee, E. (1966). A Theory of Migration, *Demography*, 2, (1), 47-57.
- Limbumba, Tatu Mtwangi (2012). "Exploring Social-Cultural Explanations for Residential Location Choices: The Case of an African City – Dar es Salaam," Ph. D. Thesis, Royal Institute of Technology, Stockholm, Sweden.
- Lugalla, J. P. (1997). Economic Reforms and Health Conditions of the Urban Poor in Tanzania. *African Studies Quarterly* 1, (2), 19-37.
- Mabogunje, A. (1970). System Approach Theory of Rural-Urban migration. *Geographical Analysis*, 2(1), 1-18.
- Mabogunje, Akin L. and Robert W. Kates (2004). "Sustainable Development in Ijebu-Ode, Nigeria: The Role of Social Capital, Participation, and Science and Technology." CID Working Paper No. 102, Cambridge, MA: Sustainable Development Program, Center for International Development, Harvard University.
- Magigi, Wakuru and Majani, B. B. K. (2005). Planning Standards for Urban Land Use Planning for Effective Land Management in Tanzania: An Analytical Framework for Its Adoptability in Infrastructure Provisioning in Informal Settlements. *FIG Report*, Cairo, Egypt.
- Manjunatha, S. and Kote, A. B. (2012). Urbanization and Its Impacts on Suburbs of Bangalore City. *International Journal of Current Research Review* 4 (21), 31-42.
- Manotham, Panu (2010). "Bangkok Urban Dynamics and its Housing Market." Master of Science Thesis Number 54, LTH and Built Architecture, Stockholm, Sweden.
- Marwa A. Khalifa (2011). Redefining slums in Egypt: Unplanned versus unsafe areas. *Habitat International* 35, 40-49.
- Maxwell, J. (1992). *Understanding and Validity in Qualitative Research*. *Harvard Educational Review*, Fall 1992, 62, 3, Research Library Core pg. 279.
- Messah, Omboi Bernard and Gachaba, M. Lucy (2014). Factors leading to squatter problem in Rift Valley Province in Kenya, *Journal of Law and Conflict Resolution*. 6(3), 48-55.
- McGee, T. (1991). *The Emergence of Desakota Regions in Asia: Expanding a Hypothesis*. Hawaii: University of Hawaii Press.

- Mhache, E. P. and Mauma, M. (2013). *Dar es Salaam City Crisis: The Result of Rapid Urbanization*. Dar es Salaam: AERA Kiswahili Researched Products.
- Mills, A. J., Durepos, G. and Wiebe, E. eds (2010). *Encyclopedia of Case Study Research*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
- Mpofu, Busani (2012). Perpetual ‘Outcasts?’ Squatters in peri-urban Bulawayo, Zimbabwe. *Afrika Focus* 25, (2), 45-6
- MWAUWASA (2011). MWAUWASA Business Plan, 2011 TO 2014. Mwanza: MWAUWASA.
- Mwanza City Council (2008) Mwanza City Profile, Mwanza: Mwanza Ciuty Council.
- Napier, Mark (1993). Housing Problem in South Africa: Ideological Perspectives. *Forum*. (2), 20-27.
- National Bureau of Statistics (2012). *Population Census*. Dar es Salaam: Government Printer.
- National Bureau of Statistics and Maro (2005). Tanzania Demographic and Health Survey 2004. *Planning Commission Dar es Salaam and Demographic and Health surveys*, Macro International Inc. 381pp
- Nerone, J. (1995). Social Responsibility Theory, in *Last Rights: Revisiting Four Theories of the Press*, pp 77 – 124. Chicago: University of Illinois, Urbana.
- Neuman, W. L. (2006). *Social Research Methods: Qualitative and Quantitative Approaches*. 6th ed. Boston: Pearson Education Inc.
- Neuwirth, R. (2004). *Shadow Cities: A Billion Squatters, A New Urban World*. London: Routledge.
- Nwankwo, Victoria Chioma (2011). “The Role of the Media in Promoting Human Rights, An Analysis of the BBC Documentary, ‘Chocolate: the Bitter Truth.’” MA Human Rights Practice, Universitet I Tromsø
- Nyang’oro, Julius, E. (2004). Ethnic Structure, Inequality and Governance of the Public Sector in Tanzania, *UNRISD Report*, pp 62.

- Okhankhuele, Omonigho, T. and Opafunso, Olaniyan Z. (2013). Causes and Consequences of Rural-Urban Migration Nigeria: A Case Study of Ogun Waterside Local Government Area of Ogun State, Nigeria. *British Journal of Arts and Social Sciences*, 16 (I), 185 – 194.
- Onyekachi, Adiukwu Fidelis (2014). Prospects and Challenges of Informal Settlements and Urban Upgrading in Abuja. *International Journal of Innovation and Scientific Research* (11), 420 – 426.
- Patel, A., Crooks, A. and Koizumi, N. (2012). “Simulating Spatio-Temporal Dynamics of Slum Formation in Ahmedabad, India.” Sixth Urban Research and Knowledge Symposium pp 1- 27.
- Patton, M (2002). *Qualitative Evaluation Methods*. Beverly Hills: SAGE Publications
- Railway Children Africa (2014). Children on the Streets of Mwanza: Head Count Findings. Special Report.
- Redfield, Robert (1941). *The Folk Culture of Yucatan*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Rivadulla, María José Álvarez (2011). “The evolution and dynamics of land squatting in Montevideo, Uruguay” Paper presented at the International RC21 Conference in 2011
- Şenyapılı, Tansı (2004). Charting the ‘Voyage’ of Squatter Housing in Urban Spatial ‘Quadruped.’ *European Journal of Turkish Studies*, Thematic Issue Number 1 - *Gecekondu*,
- Shaidi, Merina Vincent (2012). “Intimate Partner Violence among Women Living in Informal Settlements: A Case Study of Manzese in Dar es Salaam, Tanzania.” Master of Public Health Dissertation Muhimbili University of Health and Allied Sciences.
- Sorokin, Pitrim; and Carle Clark Zimmerman. (1929). *Principles of Rural and Urban Sociology*. New York: Henry Holt and Company.
- Rodgers, D., Beall, Jo and Kanbur, Ravi (2011). Latin American Urban Development into the 21st Century: Towards a Renewed Perspective on the City. *Working Paper Number 2011/05*. Helsinki, Finland: UNU-WIDER. ISSN 1798-7237, ISBN 978-92-9230-368-6
- Todaro, M. (1969). A model of Labour migration and Urban Un employment in less Developed Countries. *The American Economic Review*, 59(1), 138-148.

- Tönnies, Ferdinand (1963). *Community and Society (Gemeinschaft and Gesellschaft)*. New York: Harper and Row.
- Tönnies, Ferdinand (1955). *Community and Association: (Gemeinschaft and Gesellschaft)*. trans. Charles P. Loomis, London: Routledge and Kegan Paul.
- Tsekpo, Anthony (2010). Outward Migration, Labour Markets and Development in Selected North and West African Countries. *Research Project Making Migration a Development Factor: The Case of North and West Africa*. Working Paper.
- UN-HABITAT (2013). *The State of Planning in Africa: An Overview*. Nairobi: UN-HABITAT.
- UN-HABITAT (2009a). *Planning Sustainable Cities Global Report on Human Settlements, 2009*. London: Earthscan Publications Limited
- UN-HABITAT (2009b). *National Urban Profile Tanzania*. Nairobi: UNON.
- UN-HABITAT (2007). *Enhancing Urban Safety and Security: Global Report on Human Settlements 2007*. London: Earthscan Publications Limited.
- UN-HABITAT (2003). *The Challenge of Slums: Global Report on Human Settlements 2003*. London: Earthscan Publications Limited.
- UN-HABITAT (2002). *Sustainable Urbanization Achieving Agenda 21*. Nairobi: UN-HABITAT
- UN-HABITAT (1996). *An Urbanizing World: Global Report on Human Settlements, 1996*. London: Oxford University Press.
- United Nations Development Programme (2005). *Investing in Development: A Practical Plan to Achieve the Millennium Development Goals. Millennium Project Report to the UN-Secretary General*. London: Earthscan Publications Limited
- United States Department of State (2011). Report on International Religious Freedom–Tanzania, available at: [www.refworld.org/docid/5021057ec.html](http://www.refworld.org/docid/5021057ec.html) accessed on 2<sup>nd</sup> January, 2018.
- Willis, K. D. (2009). *Squatter Settlements*. Royal Holloway, University of London: Elsevier Ltd.
- Wirth, Louis. (1938). Urbanism as a Way of Life. *American Journal of Sociology*. 44, (2), 1-24.

## APPENDICES

### APPENDIX I: INTERVIEW SCHEDULE FOR RESIDENTS IN SQUATTER SETTLEMENTS

#### **Dear respondent,**

This interview is meant to gather relevant information in regard to objectives of research in response to the St. Augustine University of Tanzania's contribution to combating squatter problems in Mwanza city, a problem that affects many of our folks here in Mwanza city. You are kindly requested to fill in your personal details and respond to the questions below as required. Everything you say will be treated confidential. Your cooperation in responding to the questions provided here in is highly appreciated and solicited because your opinions will help to build up better strategies to eradicate squatter problems.

Thanks for your kind cooperation.

#### **Instructions**

Fill in the blanks or tick the appropriate answer.

#### **Nature, magnitude and causes of squatter settlements**

**First, I would like to learn something about your opinions concerning the term squatter itself.**

#### **Location of squatter area**

##### **1. What are major physical features of this area?**

- River bank (vulnerable to floods)
- Dump site (vulnerable to pollution of waste)
- Lake
- Public land
- Hills
- 

##### **2. What do you understand by the term squatter?**

- Social deprivation
- Income poverty
- Physical conditions of housing
- Lack of social services (water, sanitation, over crowdedness)
- Areas adjacent to the city occupied by people of low income.
- Landless people in town
  
- Areas of immigrants from other parts of Tanzania and lack of legal tenure.

- Anything else, that is .....
3. What are Kiswahili terms for squatter settlement?.....
- 

### **History of squatter area**

**Now I am interested to know something about the history of your squatter area.**

4. When did the first immigrants move in? .....
  5. Where did they come from? (1)..... (2) ..... (3) .....
  6. Was the area open land or farm land? .....
  7. What was the size of the community in early years? .....
  8. What is the size of the community now? .....
  9. In your own opinions, was there any major event that attracted people to move in?
    - Ethnic identity
    - Government policy
    - Economic attraction
    - Infrastructure
    - Others? Please state.....
- 

### **Socio-economic and demographic information of squatters**

**I am also interested to know something about composition of people who live in houses and status of the houses they live in.**

10. How many families live in this house?.....
  11. In these families, how many adults of working age are there?.....
  12. Also, in these families, how many children under 18 years old are there?.....
  13. How many toilets do you have in this house?.....
  14. If you have no toilets, how do you cope?.....
  15. Is there any toilet, which is dysfunctional? YES.....NO.....
  16. If YES to question number 15, Why?.....
  17. Do families share toilet facilities? YES.....NO.....
  18. If YES to question 17, what are your opinions on sharing toilets with other families?.....
  19. Are there any conflicts do due sharing of toilets? Name the conflict please.
-

**Please let us talk about water supply in this house.**

20. In this house, where do you get water from?
- (a) Water vendors
  - (b) Draw from boreholes
  - (c) MWAUWASA (government) stand taps outside the house
  - (d) Neighbors
  - (e) In-house water connection
  - (f) Draw from Lake Victoria
  - (g) Other(s), please mention.....
- 

**Also, I would like to know about power supply to this area.**

21. Is this house connected to electricity supplied by TANESCO? YES....  
NO.....
22. If NOT to question number 21, why?.....
23. If NOT to question 21, how do you cope without electricity?.....
24. What is the type or design of the house?
- (a) Swahili type (b) Semi-detached (c) Detached (d) Others.....
- 

**Personal characteristics of residents**

**Please if you do not mind, I would like to know something about your personal characteristics.**

25. Sex.....
26. How old are you?.....
27. What highest education level did you achieve?.....
28. What is your religion?.....
29. What is your ethnic group?.....
30. What is your marital status?
- (a) Single
  - (b) Married
  - (c) Divorced
  - (d) Widow
  - (e) Widower
31. If married, how many wives do you have?
32. How many children do you have?.....
33. How many dependants are living with you?
34. Are you owner or tenant of the house? .....
35. For how long have you lived in this area?.....

36. Do you consider the area to be your home? YES.....  
No.....
37. If not, are you planning to move out? YES..... No.....Please  
give reasons for you answer.....
38. Do you participate in community activities in the area? .....
39. If not, why?..... If yes, give an example of aspects you  
did?.....

---

**Economic situation in the squatter**

**I am also interested to know something about employment. Please let us talk  
about employment opportunities in this area**

40. Do you work outside or within this area?
41. If outside, in which sector?
- Service jobs .....Please mention.....
  - Government employment .....Please mention.....
  - Construction
  - Factory work .....Please mention.....
  - Other(s) .....Please mention.....
42. I would also like to know something about your past employment.  
Who was your former employer?
- Retired government employee
  - Retired person in uniforms (police, army)
  - Former Cooperative Union employee
  - Former MWATEX employee
  - Farmer
  - Fisherman
  - Young rural-urban immigrant
  - Unemployed
  - Other.....
43. If unemployed, why?.....What type of work are you looking  
for?.....
44. In your own opinions, are there any job opportunities in Mwanza city  
you could fall back to?.....
45. If you are a businessman or businesswoman, what type of business do  
you operate in this area?
- Operating corner shop(s).....
  - Small bar
  - Traditional healer.....
  - Vendor.....
  - Stalls in a market .....
  - Repair service (shoes, clothes etc).....

- Tailoring.....
  - Restaurant.....
  - Other.....Please mention.....
46. Number of old people in the area.....
47. Number of unemployed adults?.....
48. What attracts people to this area? 1.....2.....3.....
49. How do you rate economic opportunities in this area? 1. Nil 2.Low 3. High  
What makes you say so?.....
- 

### **Living Costs**

**Please I would like to know something about living costs in this area.**

50. What is your monthly expenditure on water?.....
51. What is your monthly expenditure on food?.....
52. What is your monthly expenditure on school fees?.....
53. What is your monthly expenditure on transport?.....
54. What is your monthly expenditure on house rent?.....
55. What other expenses do you endure per month?.....How much do you spend per month?.....
56. What is your monthly income in general?.....

### **Social responsibility approach to solve squatter problems.**

**Please I would like to know your opinions on how to solve squatter problems in your area**

57. First of all, what does the government tell you about this area?
- It wants to demolish it.
  - It wants to upgrade it.
  - It wants to evict us.
  - It wants to do Urban renewal.
  - Other..... Mention.....
58. What changes have been made by government to this area?
- Installation of water pipes
  - Paving streets
  - Installation of power lines
  - Other.....
59. How have these initiatives changed attitudes and perceptions of non-squatter neighbours?
- Non-squatters do not ignore us
  - They have reduced cost for water connection
  - We socialize together in bars
  - We have formed Savings and Credit Society groups together
  - Members of squatters have strong attachment to the area

- Many children go to school, unlike in the past before the changes
- Squatters no longer fear to mingle with outsiders, children play together with school mates. Children from rich families come to houses in the squatter areas.

60. What would you like to see improved in your area?

- Tenure rights
- Roads
- Schools
- Market
- Water supply
- Electricity supply
- Security
- Other.....

61. In your own opinions, what should be done to prevent and control the increase in squatter settlements in Mwanza city?.....

62. In your own opinions, why do you think Mwanza City Council has failed to prevent and control the increase in squatter settlements in Mwanza city?.....

**Thanks for your co- operation**

## **APPENDIX II: QUESTIONNAIRE FOR COMMUNITY LEADERS**

### **Social Responsibility Approach**

#### **Dear respondent,**

This questionnaire is meant to gather relevant information in regard to objectives of the research in response to the St. Augustine University of Tanzania's contribution to combating squatter problems in Mwanza city, a problem that affects many of our folks here in Mwanza city.

You are kindly requested to fill-in your personal details and respond to the questions below as required. Everything you will report will be treated confidential.

Your cooperation in responding to the questions provided here in is highly appreciated and solicited because your feelings and opinions will help to build up better strategies to eradicate squatter problems.

Thanks in advance for your kind cooperation.

#### **Instruction**

Please fill in the blanks or tick the appropriate answer.

#### **Questionnaire: To be answered by Community leaders**

Please I would like to know, as a community leader, how do you involve Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs), Community-Based Organizations (CBOs), Business People, Media and Community as a whole in solving squatter issues in your area?

#### **A: Collaboration with Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs)**

1. How many NGOs operate in this area? Name them please .....
2. What are major activities of these NGOs? Name them please.....
3. What roles have ever been played by NGOs in solving squatter issues?
4. How are you involved in these NGOs?
5. What benefits does the area get from the NGOs?

#### **B: Collaboration with media**

6. Do you have access to media? YES..... NO.....
7. If Yes to question number 6, what media do you contact when need arises?.....
8. If yes to question number 6, what benefits did you get through the help of media?.... name them please.....
9. Have you contacted media on squatter issues?
10. If yes to question number 9, what were the issues?
11. How did the media help you?

**C: Collaboration with Business People**

12. Do you meet with business people? YES/NO
13. If yes, how often do you meet them?
14. On what issues do you involve business people in your area?
15. What contributions do business people make towards development of the area?
16. Have business people been involved in the prevention and control of squatters?  
YES/NO
17. If yes, how?.....

**D: Collaboration with Religious Group(s)**

18. Do you meet with religious group(s)? YES/NO
19. If yes, on what issues did you discuss last time you met?
20. What contributions have religious groups made towards development of this area?
21. Have religious groups been involved in issues of squatters? YES/NO
22. If Yes, how?.....

**E: Collaboration with International Agency/Agencies**

23. Are there any activities going on in your area by an International Agency/Agencies?
24. If Yes to question number 23, what are the activities?
25. If No to question number 23, what would you like see from the International Agency/Agencies?

**APPENDIX III: FOCUS GROUP DISCUSSION GUIDE**

What is nature, magnitude and causes of squatters in Mwanza?

What are social, economic, cultural and environmental impacts on squatting in Mwanza?

What are efforts by Mwanza City Council/Nyamagana Municipal Council/Ilemela Municipal Council geared towards dealing with squatters in terms of cadastral surveys, cost-sharing for social services (education/health and so on), squatter clearance, provision of housing loans and the like?

What is the role of civil organizations (NGOs, CBOs, and Faith-Based Organizations) in dealing with squatting?

How are people's behaviour patterns such as street children, prostitution, alcoholism, unemployment, child labour and the like dealt with by City/Municipal authorities?

What about civil society organizations' contribution to that end?

What is an individual's role on dealing with identified problems in squatter settlements?

What is the way forward?

**APPENDIX IV: OBSERVATION GUIDE**

Observed the following:

Landscape lay out and physical features (lake shore, hilly slope, and rocky area/surface)

Housing patterns

Waste disposal infrastructure (at household level, toiletry, dumps, garbage disposal and the like)

Availability of infrastructure (road networks, pipes for water, and so forth)

Availability of social services/amenities (schools, health facilities, electricity supply, piped water/wells/bore holes and so forth)

Presence or absence of civil society organizations and their undertakings

Occupations in informal sector (undertakings such small businesses like food vending, salons, carpentry, tailoring, crafts works/artisans, stone/sand quarrying and so on)

Hawkers/hawking/prostitution

Alcoholics/drug addicts and so on

